



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



a39015



01802810



3b

BUHR A



a39015 01802810 3b

DO NOT CIRCULATE

THE
ALPHEUS FELCH HISTORICAL LIBRARY

BEQUEATHED
TO THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

BY THE
HON. ALPHEUS FELCH.

1896.









THE
HISTORY
OF 5-95-74
FRANCE

From the Origin of that Nation
to the Year 1702.

CONTAINING,
Besides all the Material Transactions in
PEACE and WAR,
A Particular Account of the STEPS
taken by their Late Princes, to subvert
their CIVIL LIBERTIES, and to ex-
tirpate the REFORMED RELIGION.

WITH
An Introductory Account of that Country.

THE HISTORY OF FRANCE

— From the Original Manuscript
in the Year 1789.

By
M. de la Harpe, President of the
Academy of the Moral Sciences, &c.
in the Year 1789.

A Frenchman's Account of the
Revolution, from the first
of the Year 1789, to the
first of the Year 1790, &c.

WITH
A Description of the
Revolution, from the first
of the Year 1789, to the
first of the Year 1790, &c.

By
M. de la Harpe, President of the
Academy of the Moral Sciences, &c.
in the Year 1789.

Translated from the
Original Manuscript, &c.

By
M. de la Harpe, President of the
Academy of the Moral Sciences, &c.

Translated from the
Original Manuscript, &c.

at, as well within as without its own
a Compendious History of it from the
ants of Things down to the present time;
properly be esteemed as seasonable, as 'tis
be found useful and instructive. It must
ged to be a very bold Enterprize, and
must have a more than ordinary Stock of
and Integrity, that shall write any tolerable
his Country; not only because of the great
and Multiplicity of intricate Actions
nces that have hapned therein, but also
the too General Partiality of its own Au-

see it, they would by no means either know or own it.

If it be expected the Author should in this Place alledge, that he has throughout acted the Part of a just and true Historian; 'tis more than he or any other in that Case dare affirm for themselves, since there are many Passages in History that occur to us, with all the Plausibility of Truth and Sincerity imaginable, which yet by the Revolutions of Time, and some accidental Turn of Things, come to appear with quite another Face. However he assumes the Freedom to justify his Conduct so far, that he has neither wittingly nor willingly suffered himself to be defiled with a bad Partiality, but endeavoured all he could to procure the truest Informations, and be furnished with the best Materials for this Undertaking, of which (out of the Multitudes that might be produced) we shall only hint at a few Particulars.

Before you come to the Body of the History, you will find it introduced with a particular Account of the ancient Gauls, in respect to their Origin, Customs, Religion, &c. both before and after their being conquered by the Romans, under the Conduct of Julius Cæsar, whose Commentaries have afforded us some light in this matter; but we are more particularly beholden for this, as well as for the Original Customs, Actions and Religion of the Franks, till their final Settlement in Gaul (since from them named France and becoming Christians, to Mezeray's excellent History of that Country before the Reign of K. Clovis, whom they repute to be their first Christian King, and the most Orthodox then in the World. Neither must Hottoman's Franco-Gallia be passed over in Silence by us, since we have found him of some use for the better understanding of this Subject.

I must acknowledg the great Assistance I have received from that excellent Historiographer Mezeray in his Chronological History of France, from Pharamond to the end of the Reign of Henry the Fourth, in the

The Preface.

compiling of this *Work*. But lest it should be thought I had only transcribed or abridged that Piece, I am here to assure that I left nothing else, which I thought might be proper for my Design, unperused upon this Occasion; more particularly I have consulted Froissart very much, who has the Reputation of being the best Historian of the Times he writ of, which comprehends the Reigns of Philip de Valois, John I. Charles V. and part of Charles VI. with their Contemporary Princes, especially those of England, who make a great Figure at this time in Europe, and set up for no less than Kings of France.

Matthieu's *History* of the crafty Lewis XI. I have diligently consulted, as well as the *Memoirs* of the most excellent Philip de Comines, concerning him and his Son Charles VIII. for whose Italian Expedition, as well as for the Transactions of Lewis XII. and Francis I. I am beholden to Guicciardin, but to none so much as to the incomparable Thuanus, for his admirable *History* of France from the Death of Francis I. till near the end of the Reign of Henry IV. The Life of this last Prince has been writ by several Hands, most of which I have inspected; and at particular times, generally afford the best and just

The Preface.

most solid Judgment, and extraordinary Penetration, and at the same time resided a long while as Ambassador in France from that Serene Republick, had a very near Inspection into things, and relates them many times with so peculiar a Turn and Air (tho unhappily much disguised by an ill Translation) that makes them very agreeable, and hardly to be paralleled in Modern History. I shall say nothing of the great Candor and Sincerity of this Noble Venetian, which are so essential to an Historian, that he must be accounted no other than a Romancer without them.

The Minority of the present French King Lewis XIV. and the Regency of his Mother, has been extremely well writ by Rochefocault; and Gualdo Priorato has taken much Pains to write the History of France in Italian, from the Year 1647 to 1654. and the same contains divers uncommon Particularities that are not to be met with any where else. The Life of Cardinal Mazarine, who was Prime Minister, has afforded us some light, as well as other Pieces of those times. But to avoid Partiality as much as in us lay, and the more fully to be informed of the true State of Things, we ever consulted other Cotemporary Historians; as Mariana, the History of Flanders, the admirable Life of Frederic William, the Great Marquess of Brandenburg, written by the Learned Puffendorf, and divers others, besides those of our own Nation; that so we might, if possible, by a due and diligent comparing of them together, be able to moderate that Partiality, which is but too frequently to be met with in most of them in favour of their own Cause and Interests, and thereby sift out Truth, and set all things in their proper Light and true Colours.

I must own that a late Essay, entituled the History of the Reign of Lewis XIV. till the General Peace concluded at Reswick in 1697 (notwithstanding the manifold Flatteries and unaccountable Turns of the
Author

for the Exaltation of his Native Country, to the Diminution of her Neighbours) has afforded some very good Materials. And I must not here forget, that views of late Years the Sufferings and Dispersions of the poor Reformed of France into all Quarters of the World, have been almost as remarkable as that of the Jewish Nation of old; I have continually had Recourse to the History of the Edict of Nantes, and taken care to insert whatever I thought material relating to that distressed People for the better completing of this History, which indeed would have been lame without it; tho with this Caution, That as there are a great many minute things in those Volumes of the Edict, that relate to particular Persons, and which may be conjectured to have arisen sometimes from private Piques and Animosities, wherein the Court had no hand; I have overlooked those as not proper for my Design, tho they may fill up their own Places well enough.

When I first entred upon the Writing of this History, I designed to have brought it down no farther than to the close of the last Century; but several surprising and remarkable things having since occurred, and it having pleased Almighty God to put an end to that Prince's Life, who in the whole Course of it had

end, I have been much beholden to du Haillan's State of the Affairs of France, to Hottoman's Franco-Gallia, to the History of the French Taxes, and to the last Edition of the Present State of France: Since the Publication of which, I have from my own Observations made some Corrections, and added other Improvements to this Work, of which I shall say no more, but desire it may be read with the same innocent and unprejudiced Mind wherewith I have writ it.

The

derable Part of these Beginnings. But for
d *Germans*, we shall briefly take notice
y were, and what they did before this
t. 'Tis certain that according to the most
wledg that can be had of them, they
alled *Celte*; and some will have this Name
on to the Inhabitants of *Britain*, and even
e of *Illyricum* and *Spain*. The Derivation
re, and little or no account can be given of
was at first a Name ascribed to all those
general, but afterwards restrained to the
tioned ones, and then to the *Gauls*, and
o that Part of *Gaul* which borders upon

The Introauktion.

Germany. Tacitus makes the Boundaries of the latter to be the *Rhine* and the *Danube*, all the Northern Ocean, and the Confines of *Sarmatia* and *Dacia*, infomuch that *Denmark*, the great *Peninsula* of *Scandinavia*, *Livonia*, and *Prussia* were comprehended therein: And for the Limits of *Gaul*, 'tis well known they were the two Seas, the *Rhine*, the *Pyrenees*, and the *Alps*.

The antient *Gauls* and *Germans* having no Annals nor written Histories, we have no account of them in the earlier times of the World, but by the Relations given by the *Greeks* and *Romans*, who say very little of them, and especially of the last: And so that Catalogue of two and twenty Kings, which the *Heroius* of *Annius Viterbus* presents us with in *Gaul*, before the *Trojan War*, among whom they reckoned *Dis* or *Samothee* to be the first, *Sarron* the fourth that set up Schools there, and from whom the *Sarronides* a kind of *Druids* took their Name; *Bardus* who was the Author or Incourager at least of Musick and Poetry, from whom Poets were called *Bards*; afterwards *Celtas*, *Galates*, *Belgius*, *Luzdus*, *Allobrox*, *Paris*, *Remus* and others, from whom the People and Cities have been denominated - I say, these are things mostly fabulous, and so uncertai that they are indeed hardly worth mentioning. As much must be said of *Francus*, whom the *Minetbo* of the same *Annius* supposes to be the Son of *Hector* of *Troy*, and brings him into *Gaul* to be the Son in Law and Successor of King *Remus*; as also of the fourteen or fifteen Kings whom he makes to descend from this Marriage, and to reign after this *Francus* from Father to Son successively.

Authors vary in their Opinion concerning the Word *Gaul*; but to mention the most probable, without taking notice of those who ascribe it to *Galates* the Son of *Hercules*, or to the Queen *Galatea*, or to *Gallus* the Son of *Polyphemus* the Giant and the Brother of *Illyrius* and *Britannia*, some deduce it from a *Greek* Word that signifies * Milk, because of the exceeding Whiteness of the *Gauls*; which does not seem to be very disagreeable to Truth, if we consider that the *Druids* made use of this Language, and that their own Name was *Greek*. It may be derived from a *Hebrew* Word that signifies *yellow*, because the Hair of the *Gauls*

Gauls was usually of that Colour, which may be proved from a great many Passages in ancient Authors. Others have recourse to another *Hebrew* Word that signifies a *Flood*, or *Inundation*, from which according to their Sentiments the Word *Gally* was deduced, and from thence that of *Gaul*. They say that *Japhet*, or rather his Son *Gomer*, whom they make to be the Father of the *Gauls*, or *Naah* himself, assumed this Surname in order to preserve the Remembrance of the Deluge. There are those who conjecture with somewhat of Probability, if such may be allowed in matters of this kind, that the *Gauls* were so named from the *Celtick* Word *Wallen*, which to this day in the *German* Language signifies to go, travel, pass from place, &c. and that this Name had been imposed upon them, when they first began to go out of their native Country, and extend their Boundaries; for they sent People not only into the neighboring Countries (as the *Helvetians* did into those Parts that were next them on the other side of the *Point*) but also into remoter Parts. Thus Geographers find remote in *Germany* the *Tourangi*, *Pelci*, *Tellugi*, and *Getui*; in *Spain* beyond the *Hebrus*, the *Celtis* mixed with the *Iberi*; and in *Britain* the *Arævi*, *Parisii*, and *Assæci*, all of them People from *Gaul*, transplanted into those Parts without our knowing either the precise time or manner how they did

Justin says, they drew together three hundred thousand Men. The Lot of the Augurs sent *Sigovesus* to the *Hercinian* Forest on the other side of the *Rhine*; but Fortune being more favourable to the other Brother, he passed the *Alps* with his *Gauls*, among whom the *Senones* and *Mancei* were the more considerable and numerous, and seized upon all the Country that lies between the *Alps*, *Appenine* Hills, the River *Tesis*, and that of *Jesi*, which falls into the Sea a little on this side *Ancona*. There they built *Milan*, *Padua*, *Verona*, *Brescia*, *Como*, and several other fine Cities that are in being to this day; and there they grew so formidable, that nothing could have withstood them, had they managed their Affairs well, and been united in a Body under one Commander: Hence it is that in *High Dutch* they do at this day call *Italy Wallichen*, and in *Danish* *Waland*, that is to say the Country of the *Gauls*.

On the other hand, *Sigovesus* with his Followers, whereof the *Tectosagi* and *Boii* were the chief, opened their way through the *Hercinian* Forest by two or three Battels, and made himself Master of divers Countries, particularly of that since called *Bohemia*, tho they were afterwards expelled from thence by *Maroboduus* King of the *Suevi Marcomanni*. But about three hundred years after their Departure from *Gaul*, when their Numbers were extremely multiplied in the Countries they had conquered, they went out from thence in divers great Bodies under their respective Chiefs, the most illustrious of whom were *Belgius* and *Brennus*, who after they had pierced through *Pannonia* and *Illyricum*, and being not able to agree any longer, separated; and *Belgius* fell upon *Macedon*, while *Brennus* invaded *Greece*. The first in a bloody Battel conquered and slew *Ptolomeus Ceraunus* King of *Macedon*, and in another *Softenes* his Successor. *Brennus* succeeded not so well, for after he had been repulsed at the Pass of *Thermophile*, where he lost above a Fourth of his Number, as he went from thence to lay siege to the rich and famous Temple of *Delphos*, he was there cut in pieces with his Army, more by the Indignation of the Gods (as they will have it) who brought Tempests and Thunder upon them, than by the Valour of their Enemies. Amongst

Amongst the many different Bodies of these *Gauls* that went out to seek their Fortunes, there was one that entred into *Asia*; who having obtained of *Nicomede* King of *Bithynia*, whom he had invited to come to his Assistance, Part of his Country by way of Reward, there fixed and founded his Kingdom, which in *Greek* was called *Galatia* from the Name of their Nation, and in *Latin* *Gallo Græca*, because of the *Greeks* who were the Inhabitants intermixing with them. So that you find there were now three Nations of the *Gauls*, that of *Asia*, that beyond the *Alps* named by the *Romans* *Cisalpine*, and the great and ancient *Gaul*; without saying any thing of *Celtiberia* beyond the *Pyrenees*, nor of the *Scordisci* in *Pannonia*.

It's not compatible with my Design to give an account of all that the *Gauls* did in the several Countries where they settled; 'tis enough to observe in general, that notwithstanding their Valour and foreign Conquests, they were at length forced to submit to the excellent Discipline and Vertue of the *Romans*. But this was not effected till after so many long and bloody Wars, as *Polybius* observes, as are ever mentioned in History, especially with the *Cisalpine Gauls*, who gave the *Romans* so many hot Alarms, that no Citizen of *Rome* was exempted from lifting himself when they

The Introduction.

This War was succeeded with fifteen or twenty more, wherein the *Gauls* having been the first Aggressors, but after divers Losses keeping themselves on the Defensive, they were forced to submit, and accept of Terms of Peace, which they observed for some years till the Arrival of *Hannibal* in *Italy*, who made them take up Arms again; from which they were so far from making any Advantage, that they compleated the Ruin of the Remains of their Forces and Liberty. But *Hannibal* being recalled to *Africa* and worsted, the whole Power of the *Romans* fell upon them, and brought them to a final Subjection. And having compleated this Work, they in process of Time resolved to attack Grand *Gaul* it self, who had sent out Colonies on their side of the *Alps*, or given the *Cisalpine Gauls* Succour in their Wars against the *Romans*. And here we are to observe that *Marseilles* in *Gaul* having been possessed and peopled for some Ages before by a Colony of *Greeks* from *Phocis*, a City in *Ionia*, a Province of the lesser *Asia*; and these having in time grown powerful both by Sea and Land, the neighbouring *Gauls* grew jealous, and resolved to expel them: And after many and long Wars between them, wherein the *Massilians* acquired much Glory, they at last found themselves too weak for their Enemies; and therefore imploring the Assistance of the *Romans*, they laid hold of the Opportunity, and sent several Armies thither one after another, whereof one under *C. Sextus* subdued the *Salii*, and built *Aix*. Having thus got footing, they attacked the *Allobroges*, and notwithstanding the Succours sent them by their Allies, vanquished them also: Then extending their Bounds into *Languedoc*, they subdued all those Nations one after another, settled Garisons in the conquered Places, and led a Colony to *Narbonne*.

Indeed their farther Progress into *Gaul* was a little stopped by the furious Inundation of the *Cimbri* and *Teutones*, a *Celtick* People, as the *French* will have it, on the other side of the *Rhine*, who having joined the *Ambrones* and *Tigurians*, they won two or three great Victories over the *Romans*; but at last being totally defeated by *Marinus*, the *Romans* then wholly subjugated the *Gauls* in those Countries, which we now

that time was no other than a great Body,
of divers States, much of the same nature
in *Germany*, without having any Head
they had their General Assemblies, their
Reglements, in order to preserve an Union,
for their common Defence. But this Tie
was much interrupted, and almost entirely dis-
rupted by perpetual Discords: For as there were divers
Governments amongst them, but all elective
resting almost absolutely upon the People; some
Republicks, whose Subjects called themselves
free, and were governed by a certain number of the bet-
ter sort of People, and might be termed

Arms of the *Romans*; as well by Stratagem and V like Policy, as by Valour. And the only Comfort remain'd to the Vanquished, was to find at last their great Conqueror, after having divested them their Liberty, should also strip *Rome* of hers, that tituled her self the Mistress of the World, and he shewed himself even more unjust towards his Country, than he had been to them.

The *Gauls* having been thus conquered, continued under the *Roman* Empire almost five hundred Years during which time they continually endured the Rigor and Dominion of Strangers, often the Calamities Civil Wars between their Masters, and oftner the Inroads and Ravages caused by the Incursions of the *Germans*. At first their Yoke was not very heavy: *Cæsar* fearing they might attempt to shake it off, did not burden them with Taxes, he only imposed a Million of Gold for them to pay yearly; which was but the least part of what it cost them before, because of their Intestine Feuds and Civil Wars. He left there eight Legions, four in *Belgium*, and as many in the Country of the *Hedui* as believing if he made sure of the *Belgians* who were the most valiant, and the *Hedui* who had most Authority, he could secure all the rest: Besides which he deavoured to keep in the People with his Care the Lords with Presents, and the most mutinous Part with Colonies. And before he left the Country took particular care to reward those who had served him against their Country, left full Liberty to several of the Cities, conferred great Rights and Privileges on many others, increased the Territories. Revenues of some at the Expence of others whom he had a mind to weaken, or who were already so weak that there was no danger of them; and those who were most brave he carried along with him, and particularly ten thousand Horse, who undoubtedly were the Flower of the Nobility. Moreover, the continual Train of his good Fortune was no small help for him to keep them in Subjection; for during the Civil War he had with *Pompey*, *Albinus* his Lieutenant in *Belgium* suppress the *Beauvoisins* that had revolted; and he himself in his Return from *Spain*, forced by a memorable Siege the famous City of *Marseilles* to open her Gates to him, and espouse his Cause. A

After the Death of *Cæsar*, *Decius Brutus* who had the Government of *Gallia Comata*, endeavoured to draw them to stand up for the Liberty of *Rome*, but they having lost their own shewed little Disposition to it. *Octavius*, *Anthony* and *Lepidus* having afterwards assumed a Triumvirate, *Gaul* fell to the share of *Anthony*; but while he was engaged in the *Parthian War*, *Augustus* took it from him, and they were from then forward governed by him during his Reign for fifty three Years together.

This Prince being well fixed in the Empire, he obliged the greatest part of the *Gaulish* Cities to be governed by the *Roman* Laws, leaving the rest to their own municipal ones, and a certain Form of general and particular Assemblies, with their publick Revenues; but this was less to their Advantage and Conveniency than that of their Sovereigns: Each Province was divided into People, and they into Cantons, and the Cantons into lesser Towns, Castles, Burroughs and Villages. The capital Town or City included the People, that of the first People of a Province was called a *Metropolis*, and every *Metropolis* had a superior Court or Jurisdiction; that of the first Province of the three *Gauls*, viz. *Celtica*, *Aquitania* and *Belgica*, had the Honour of Primacy. The lesser Towns had recourse to the City, the City to the *Metropolis*, and the *Metropolis* to the first of all of them. He divided the

were but little fit for War, having no Arms but such as the other furnished them with, and they were forbid to be made any where but in the *Arsenal*.

The *Gauls* in the Reign of *Tiberius* being oppressed with heavy Taxes and Tribute, and withal become burdened with Debts, and the Interest of the same to the Merchants of *Italy*, who were better vers'd in the Mystery of Trade; several Cities rose up in Arms openly, and almost all the rest favoured, or at least wished them good Success. *Lucius Florus* and *Sacrovir* declared themselves the Leaders of these Revolters. *Florus* animated the *Belgians* to it, and particular the People of *Treves*; *Sacrovir* the *Edui*, before whom he set forth in their Assembly, the Continuance of the Tribute they paid in a deep Peace, Excess of Usage, the Cruelty and Pride of the Governors; that they had means and opportunity to break their Chains, they did but consider the Discord between the Legions by reason of the Death of *Germanicus*, who had been poisoned by *Piso*, but the *Odium* would fall upon *Tiberius*; that *Gaul* was as flourishing as *Italy* was poor, and the People of *Rome* degenerate; that the *Romans* had no good Soldiers in their Troops but what were raised in *Gaul*, and that in case they ceased only to furnish them with Men and Money, they should quickly find this Tyrannical Power fall of itself. But though *Florus* was considerably favoured and assisted, yet he was defeated near *Treves*, and slain; which did not discourage *Sacrovir* and the *Edui*, for there was a great number of young Persons in *Autun* the capital City of the Country, because it was the chief School, and it were the Academy of *Gallia Celtica*, where Children of all their Nobles were educated. Now *Sacrovir* armed some Troops of this City, and list all the young Gentlemen, which were as so many Hostages to retain their Parents in his Interest: So of them he armed in the same manner as the *Roman* Legions, others had only Swords and Iron Staves, and thus having drawn a great Body of Men together, he adventured to give Battel to the *Roman* General *Silius*, by whom he was defeated with the Loss of forty thousand Men.

There is nothing memorable of the *Gauls* in the time of *Caligula*, but under that of *Claudius* they obtained the Privilege of being admitted into the Rank of Senators; they rose up in Arms against him in favour of *Vindex*: They made also divers Attempts in the succeeding Emperors times, yet more owing to the Humor of those *Romans*, and others of a mind to imbroil the Empire, than with any hopes and Prospect of recovering their antient Liberty, which seemed to be given quite over for lost. In the Reign of the Emperor *Decius*, about the year 253. there were Civil Wars in *Gaul*, the whereof, *Eutropius* does not tell us, whether they were the Troops of the Empire, or the oppressed

The *Alexandrian Chronicle*, which represents quite otherwise than the Authors of these times, notices that this Emperor died as he was going to fight a War against the *Franks*; and this is the first place that we meet with the Name of that Nation. Other Authors positively affirming that he lost his life in a Battle against the *Goths* and *Scythians*; if there be any Spark of Truth in this Chronicle, we may believe the *Franks* to be *Scythians*, and that they joined upon that occasion to the *Goths*. To this story another may be added, that many of these *Chronicles* make the *Franks* to have lived near the *Rhine*, whence they invade the *Cities* of *Germany*.

and in order to be revenged they went and joined with the *Germans*, who were sworn Enemies to the *Romans*; that having *Genobaud*, *Marcomir* and *Sigisbert* for their Leaders, they entered *Thuringia*, where they remained some time, then adventured to pass the *Rhine*; that in going out of *Pannonia*, they left behind them part of their People, who chose one *Chlodwig* to be their King, in honour of whom they assumed the Name of *Turks*. I cannot say all this Narrative is a Fable, tho it looks much like it; but I must observe, that there are but few old Accounts of *Franks* and Countries, but have some Foundation of Truth in them.

Now to be a little more particular, as to the Opinions entertained concerning the Original of the *Franks*, there is no Body I believe will any more entertain that *Cicero* should make mention of the *Franks* in his ninth Epistle to *Atticus*, under the Name of *Franks*, than that we should meet with them in the first Book of *Strabo*, where we read that the *Uerenqui* *Gennunims* were Neighbours to the *Vindelician* *Norici*. For as to the first the Criticks have fully shewn it appears, that the Word in that Epistle was not *Franks* but *Fringones*, and that it was the proper Name of some *Veterane* Soldiers, and not of any People. And for the other it's manifest enough, that we do not read *Urenqui* or *Brenqui* in *Strabo*, but *Uerenqui* there being two People of this Name, one at the mouth of the *Rhine* and the other in *Vindelicia*.

Some there are who have endeavoured to prove that the *Franks* were no other than the *Gauls* themselves returned from the other side of the *Rhine*; and of those, such as *Bodin*, they will have them understood to be those *Gauls* who went into *Germany* before *Julius Caesar's* time. Others alledge that they be those People of *Gaul*, whom *Julius Caesar* and *Augustus* had left free; but who afterwards in order to shun the insupportable Vexations received from the *Romans* and Governors, withdrew to the *Germans*, who were generous Assertors of Liberty; and there living as dearly as their Lives their Name of *Free*, is *Frank* in the *High-Dutch*, they had from that time forward very much harassed the Oppressors of
Co

country, and made continual Efforts to re-enter it. Another Opinion there is, that these People came out of *Pannonia*, now called *Hungary*; and the same is very ancient, having been followed by many from the very first *Gregory of Tours*. I know not how they take it out; but among Modern Authors, *Latins* would derive them from a Legion of the *Sicambri*. They supposed that they had one in *Pannonia*, and that they had built a City there, the Ruins of which were to be seen near *Buda*, and that there was an Inscription found there, that gave Authority hereunto. It is very true, that in the fourth Book of *Tacitus's Annals*, we find there was in the Reign of *Tiberius* a Host of *Sicambri* in *Masuria*, with *Sabinus Papius* Governor of that Province, that made War upon the King of *Thrace*, and that undoubtedly they consisted of those *Sicambri* whom *Augustus* had transplanted out of *Gaul*. But for the Inscription, they who are used in Antique things, suspect it very much to have been made by some Modern Artists.

We meet with two other Parties who are much more numerous than those already mentioned, and perhaps have more Reason on their side. The first will have the *Franks* to have come from *Scythia* and the Banks of the *Palus Maeotis*, while the other insist that they were originally *Germans*. To support the first Opinion, a Passage is cited out of *Herodotus*

one nor the other, and the last of the two is still
 vogue amongst the *Tartars*, who breed almost all
 of Birds, and carry them upon their Fists. Last
 Passage in *Sidonius Apollinaris*, which seems to favour
 this Opinion, is not to be omitted; for that Poet
 celebrating the Victory which *Murorianus* won from
Clodion in *Artois*, says that the *Franks* or *French*
 celebrated a Wedding there with *Scythian Dances*.

As for those who maintain that *Germany* was
 Native Country of the *Franks*, they cannot agree
 among themselves from what part of it they came.
 Some alledge they were originally of the lower part
Germany, while others endeavour to shew they were
 Strangers, and that they came originally from the
 other side of the *Elbe* as well as the *Saxons*, who
 in the Country of *Holstein*, and the higher part
 the Dutchy of *Sleswick*. Those Authors say, that
Franks were Neighbours to the *Saxons*, and in order
 to prove the same, alledge these two People began
 the same time to shew themselves on the South side
 the *Elbe*; but this they are so far from being able to
 prove, that on the contrary the *Saxons* were not
 in a long time after, tho' their Name be really
 antient, and is to be found in *Ptolomy*. But to en-
 tire it farther, they insist that Piracy was common to
 the Nations: Moreover that in a Panegyrick on
Constantine, it is particularly exprest, that that Em-
 peror rooted out the *Franks*, not only from the Places
 they had invaded, but even the last Ravages of
 barbarity; and lastly, that in *Claudian* we read,
Stilico reduced them in such a manner, that the
 of the *Gauls* might pass the *Elbe*, and go and
 freely on the Mountains of the *Franks*.

————— *Medium ingressa per Albin,*
Gallica Francorum Montes Armenta pererrant

But if you should read *Annemont*, *Aluvum*, for
 as some Criticks do, the Argument is van-
 However because the Author of this is not
 in all these Countries find any People
 comes near that of the *Franks*; they conclude
 they came out of the Isles of *Denn*

well as those upon the Coast of *Friesland* had been disjoined from the Continent by that Inundation of the Sea, which drove the *Cimbri* several Ages before out of their Country. Some there are who would search for their Original as far as *Scandinavia*, that great *Peninsula* that contains the Kingdoms of *Norway* and *Sweden*, which has been termed the Hive of Mankind, and from whence in effect came several Bodies of *Nor-mans*, and some will have the *Goths*, *Huns*, and *Vandals* to proceed from this Country also.

Some there are who think it more probable to affirm they were Natives of the lower *Germany*, where they were first found, and that they were not a single People, but a Confederacy of divers People; and that under the Name of *Franks*, were comprehended the *Ausivarii*, *Salii*, *Bructeri*, *Camavi*, *Catti*, *Cauci*, or *Cayci*, *Sicambri*, *Frisii*, and many others; all which they say united and engaged to stand by one another, either in resisting the *Romans*, who by their Presents and Bribes had much embarrassed the *German* *Liberty*, or in opposing the *Allermains*, who being extremely fierce and potent, at the same time threatened the lower *Germany*, as well as the Provinces of the *Empire*. But there is very little Probability that the *Franks* should be engaged in such a Confederacy, because it appears in all the Authors of those times, to have been an entire Nation; and it was so far from being a Confederacy between the People aforementioned, that on the contrary, they acted so little in concert, that they rarely set great Armies on Foot, but usually made their IncurSIONS with small Bodies only, and part of them many times were in the *Romans* Pay, and made War upon their Countrymen.

But if notwithstanding these Objections, we still may believe it a Confederacy; we conjecture that it was formed only after the IncurSIONS made by the *German*s, mentioned first in History in the Reign of *Caracalla*; for as much as if any such had been made before that time, it's probable they would not have suffered the *German*s to take away the Territories of the *Maisci*, who were on the *French* side of the *Main*, and very well situated. Every one may adhere to what Opinion he pleases, and seek for Authorities

rities to maintain it; but 'tis certain that the antient *Franks* had very near the same Bounds, as the Country lying between the *Ocean*, the *Rhine*, *Main*, and *Elbe*: That most of the Historians of that Age call it *Germany*, by reason of which some Authors have styled the *French* absolutely *Germans*; but afterwards their Limits were straitned by the *Saxons* passing on this side the *Rhine*, where they became almost as Potent as the other; insomuch that *St. Jerom* was not mistaken, when he placed the *French* Nation between the *Saxons* and the *Germans*, and said, that they were not so large as powerful. As to the Name of *French*, whether they assumed the same to themselves, or if it was conferred upon them by others, 'tis derived according to the most received Opinion from a *Dutch* Word, that signifies *Free*, and indicates the Love they had of Liberty. Some others derive it from two other Words in that Language, which being joined together, signify as much as *Free Heroes*. They last have taken notice, from the 7th Book of *Procopius's* History, that the *Goths* having on a time signified their Valour by some Gallant Military Achievement gave to their Chiefs the Glorious Titles of *Heroes*; that in short, if there be any thing that can elevate Men above a Human State, it's Military Virtue is employed for the Service of ones Country. I know there are some others who deduce the Word *Frank* from a Greek One, that signifies *very much environed*, because they dwelt in a Country that was naturally strong and inaccessible; and that others seek after the Etymology of it in a Word that signifies *Fierce*, not in *Attick* or *Greek* Tongue, as some read it in *Sigebert* but in the *Antique* or *Articque*, that is Northern Language, or rather the *Attuatique*, which was that the Country of *T*

But to dwell on the Etymology of the Word *Frank*; it became known as troublesome to *Gaul*, repulsed by *Galer*. Irruption even into *Spain*, himself Emperor in *Britain*; Nations out of a desire of Plunder allowed some Troops of the *Fr*

been a second time expelled out of their
were fixed on the Conlines of the *Saxons*,
that part of his Army should go down
He had some Christian Bands among his
most considerable Commanders of which
Victor, *Cassius*, and *Florentius*. The Em-
desirous at this time to oblige the Army
to Idols, as he had done upon his first En-
Gaul, and his Guards being informed that
Florentius were of the *Theban* Legion, they
d to force them to it; but the other persisting
the Christian Faith, they cut off their Heads
The Persecutors and News of this Mas-

About this time *Galerius* and *Constantius* were *n*
Cesars, and the Administration of *Gaul* being assi-
 ed to the latter, he passed over thither from *Brit*
 and having taken *Bologn*, he proceeded to cha-
 those *German* Nations that had assisted *Carausi*
 Rebellion. And first of all he expelled the *rr*
 from the Isles of the *Rhine* and *Scheld*, and not-
 standing their Ambuscades, Marshes and Woods,
 netrated into their Country, killed a vast Numbe
 them, put others to flight, and taking away a g
 many of them with their Wives and Children
 transplanted them into the Country of the *Neru*
 and *Treves*, that so they might be forced to culti
 those Lands which their Ravages had made wast.
 the mean time *Carausius* having been slain in
 tain by his Companion *Alectus*, who set up the
 Tyranny there, *Maximian* sent *Asclepiodotus* ag
 him; there were a great many Bands of the *Fi*
Alectus his Army, who being defeated and his
 Battel by his Adversary, the *Franks* thereupon afte
 great Slaughter made of them fled to *London*;
 thinking to escape from thence by the *Thames* to
 Continent, but being intercepted by some Ships
 came opportunely thither from *Constantius*, they v
 much slaughtered a second time, and some of the
Constantius upon his Arrival transplanted into the
 ritories of *Amiens* and *Beauvais*, while he plac
 others in the Country of *Langres* and *Autun*.
 these People thus transplanted by him were obligec
 furnish a certain Number of Recruits; and some h
 been of opinion that these Soldiers were called *L*
 which in High *Dutch* signified a Servant. When
Constantine became Emperor, he passing from *Britain*
Gaul, the *Germans* were no sooner informed of
 Arrival, but they came at the Head of their Tro
 to oppose him; but he finding the *Franks* se
 laden with Booty, and not dreaming of his
 proach, fell upon them, and took a great m
 of them Prisoners, of which Number were their
 Kings *Alfarius* and *Ragaisus*, whom he afterwa
 exposed to the wild Beasts at the Amphitheatre
Treves.

Now the Emperor *Constantine* in process of Time leaving the Empire between his three Sons *Constantine*, *Constantius*, and *Constans*; and the first having been slain by the last in *Gaul*, and Discord hereupon increasing between the two surviving Brothers, the *Franks* failed not to take advantage of it. They passed the *Rhine*, and had divers Rencounters with *Constans*, who every where made head against them: However he could not hinder them to winter-quarter in *Gaul*, but his Money effected that which his Sword could not, for he bribed them with it to repass the *Rhine*, and withal to become his Friends and Confederates; which they the more readily agreed to, out of a Jealousy they had of the Neighbourhood of the *Germans*, who made it their business to divide them among themselves. It was indeed a great Master-piece of State to bring this Nation, says *Libanius* the Panegyrist, no longer to breath Fire and Blood, who by their Irruptions continually fatigued the Emperors, and could never be diverted either by Arms or Negotiations; who reputed a Cessation of War to be a kind of Poverty, and of Incursions to be a manifest Detriment to them, but now preferred an unaccustomed Repose before the sweet Liberty of *Mastaces*. However the same Author will have their Compliance to have proceeded in the main out of fear of *Constans*; who also perishing by the Sword, and *Constantius* being now become sole Emperor, the *Franks* besieged and took *Cologne*; against whom *Julian* was sent into *Gaul*, who having recovered that City again out of their hands, he returned to winter at *Sens*, and was there in his turn besieged by the *Franks*, but made such a gallant Defence, that they were forced to quit the Place: And after having performed many other successful Expeditions against them and the *Germans*, he returned to *Paris*, and there applied himself to get Store of Provision together, that he might dislodge the *Franks* out of the Isles of *Coxandria* or *Zealand*, and some others which they had upon the Banks of the *Rhine* and *Waal*, the Navigation of which Rivers were interrupted by them; and soon after he brought the *Saxons* under Subjection, while the *Franks* being now suddenly invaded by the *Saxons* were chased out of the Isle of *Bezan*.

We meet with little that is particularly remarkable concerning the *Franks* in the succeeding Reigns of *Valentinian*, *Valens*, *Gratian*, and *Valentinian II.* during the Empire of which last Prince, we find that as soon as *Maximus* the Tyrant was gone far from the *Rhine*, the *Franks* being headed by their Princes *Genobaud*, *Marcomir*, and *Simnon*, resumed their Arms, and forcing the Frontiers ravaged the best Parts of *Belgium*; but they were defeated in the Forest of *Charbonnerie* by *Quintinus*: Yet having engaged himself too in marshy grounds, he was in his turn defeated them also. If we proceed to the Reigns of *Th* *us I.* *Arcadius* and *Honorius*, then to *Theodosius I.* Younger, we find little of them, only that the famous *Stilico* brought the *Franks* to submit to *Honorius*, and punished *Marcomir* and *Sumon* two of their Kings instead of whom he constituted others. After which the *Britons* having set up one *Constantine* for Emperor, and he going over into *Gaul*, the *Franks* took his part with no good Success.

Gaul was now reduced to a very miserable State, thro' Famine, the Incursions of *Barbarians*, and otherwise. And indeed the fatal Ruin of the Western *Roman* Empire came on apace; and divers Provinces began to shake off the Yoke of the *Roman* Government, in the very Reigns of *Honorius* and *Theodosius II.* and it was about the year 409. that all *Armorica*, as *Zozimus* has it, and some other Provinces of *Gaul*, imitated those of *Britain* in shaking off the Yoke, and setting themselves at Liberty; having expelled the *Roman* Governors, and their Garisons without doubt also, in order to set up a kind of particular Republick. They are the very Words of that Author, whereby it appears this Defection was begun in *Armorica*, and then spread it self through all *Gaul*; and that all the Cities and Provinces stood up for Liberty, but those Places which *Constantine* and the *Barbarians* held still in Fetters. As to the Word *Armorick*, it may for the better Illustration of the Country and Rise of this Defection, merit a more particular *Examen* in this place. It's well known that in the old *Gaulish* Tongue it signified *Maritime*, and that according to the Difference of Times and Authors, it comprehended more

or less of the Country. *Cæsar* in his *Commentaries* says, the *Gauls* generally called those Cities that bordered upon the Ocean by that Name, insomuch that it was common to all of them from *Bayonne* to the Point of lower *Bretagne*, and from thence to the Mouth of the *Rhine*. *Hertius* in his 2d Book calls by this Name all the Cities that are upon the Coast in the farthest part of *Gaul*, that is, I suppose in the lower *Normandy* and *Bretagne*. This last Province has more particularly been named *Armorica*, because 'tis situate almost entirely upon the Sea. *Pliny* assures us that *Aquitain* was likewise so called; and perhaps the *Romans* apprehending the Signification of the Word, rendred it into *Latin*, and made *Aquitania* of it. Now if the *Notitia Imperii* extends the *Tractus Armoricanus* thro the first and second *Aquitain*, *Senonica*, and the second and third *Lyonnois*, 'tis not that it would have to us understand, that all these five Provinces were Maritime, for *Senonica* does not at all come near the Sea; but this long Chain of Garisons was so called, because they consisted of Troops that had been raised in *Armorica*. However 'tis probable that the *Secunda Belgica* and *Germanica Secunda* that bordered upon the Ocean, were also comprehended under the Name of *Armorica*; and 'tis the more to be believed, for otherwise the *Franks*, according to *Zozimus*, could not have joined with the *Armoricans* but with a great deal of difficulty, and by crossing those two great Provinces.

But *Procopius* in his sixth Book of the *Gothick War*, calls the People who formed this League *Arboriques*; these being his Words: "About the Place where the
 " *Rhine* falls into the Ocean, there are a great many
 " Marishes, near which those *Germans* formerly dwelt,
 " whom we now call *Franks*, and who at first were a
 " People of no great Reputation. Near unto them
 " were the *Arboricks*, who before were subject to the
 " *Romans* as well as the rest of *Gaul* and *Spain*; to
 " the East of the *Arboriques* are the *Poringes*, who are
 " originally *Barbarians*, but who formerly settled
 " there by the leave of *Augustus*. Next to the *Poringes*,
 " towards the South, are the *Burgundians*, then
 " the *Sueves* and *Almains*. But to see more particularly
 " what he says of the situation of the *Arboriques*,
 " and

and their making a League with the *Franks*, he adds :
 “ The *Arboriques* then carried Arms for the *Romans* ;
 “ the *GERMANS* had a mind to conquer them, as being
 “ their Neighbours, and because they had all of a
 “ sudden changed their antient Manners (which I
 “ suppose was their Government) continually ravaged
 “ their Territories, and attacked them with all their
 “ Forces : But the *Arboriques* having Courage, and
 “ being still well inclined towards the *Romans*, shewed
 “ themselves in this War to be valiant Men ; inso-
 “ much that the *Franks* being not able to force them,
 “ required they should confederate, and intermarry
 “ with them, to which the other readily consented,
 “ inasmuch as these two Nations were Christians.
 Now if *Procopius* was mistaken, it must be chiefly in
 this last Sentence, since the *Franks* had not yet em-
 braced Christianity ; however they being incorporated
 together, made a very considerable Power. But to
 proceed with our Author : “ In the mean time, says he,
 “ the other *Roman* Soldiers, who were in Garison in
 “ the farther part of *Gaul*, could neither return from
 “ thence into *Italy*, nor give themselves up to their
 “ Enemies the *Arians* (they meant the *Vandals* ;)
 “ they marched towards the Enemy, or the *Franks*
 “ and *Armoricks*, and also took the Place they held
 “ from them. But the *Armoricks* retained the Manners
 “ of their Country, and transmitted the same to their
 “ Posterity, inasmuch that to this time (which was
 “ about a hundred and fifty Years after) they were
 “ not ashamed to use their antient Fashions ; for
 “ when they went to War (in the Service of the
 “ *French*, to whom they were subject in the time of
 “ this Author) it was with the same Number of Men
 “ that they were wont to supply the *Romans* with ;
 “ they made use of the Laws of their Country, and
 “ followed the manner of the *Romans* in their Hunt-
 “ ing, and every thing else.

These Words are full of Obscurities ; and to il-
 lustrate the same we are to take notice, that *Winde-
 lins* a Modern Author, in his Treatise of the *Salick*
Law, would shew that these *Armoriques* were the
 People of *Brabant*, they being so named as a People
 that dwelt among Trees ; seeing there is much Wood
 there

might be called *Armoriques*, and were
the same People as the *Riparoles* or *Ripuarii*,
their own Laws, and for a long time re-
tained the Manners and Customs of the *Romans*.
It must be confessed, that the second Re-
vival of the *Armoricans*, which happened some Years
after, cannot be attributed to these People, but
to the Franks, who, living between the *Loire* and the *Seine*.
When it were, the *Franks* and *Armoricans* being
united together, found themselves in a Con-
frontation with the Fury of the *Barbarians*; the *Franks*,
having been roughly handled by the *Vandals*, when
they crossed the *Rhine*, resuming Courage, and

upon him, which cost him his Life five Years after when the *Romans* put him to Death as a rebellious Subject: However it were, 'tis certain the foresaid League between the *Armoricans* and *Franks* remained so firm and advantageous, that it proved in a great measure the Ruin of the *Roman* Empire in those Parts; *Treves* being once more fallen into their Hands, certain, tho we cannot tell whether it hapned in the War with the *Romans* or no, that they demolish'd all the strong Places which the Empire held upon the *Rhine*, from *Cologne* even to the Sea; and among others they ruined *Cologne*, *Santen*, *Ausburg*, and *Senel* near *Leyden*, which place is still called *Rombon* i. e. the Bourg of the *Romans*, the Fortrefs of *Catopzece*, and divers others: and whether they fixed themselves by way of Accommodation with the *Romans*, or otherwise, in the Countries they possessed, they were not about 415. (*Honorius* and *Theodosius* II. being still Emperors) settled in *Germania Secunda*; and they kept it twelve years after, till the year 428. since 'tis record'd in the Chronicle of *Prosper*, that *Atius* drove them out from thence that very year. In short, 'tis impossible to give an exact account of the Actions of these warlike People in these times, neither can we precisely assign the Limits of the Countries they mastered and settled in; but 'tis highly probable, that they took that Extent of Ground which lies between the *Rhine*, *Meuse*, and *Moselle*, all the Bishopricks of *Cologne* and *Liege*, and even some part of *Treves*; from whence in process of Time they spread themselves over *Gaul*, since from them called *France*, of which more particularly in the Body of the History, and in which we shall make no farther Excursion, but before we close this Introduction, observe a few things concerning the Religion of the antient *Gauls* and *Franks*, which we have not yet touch'd upon.

When the *Romans* made a Conquest of the Provinces of the *Gauls*, they were like the rest of the World involved in the Abyss of Idolatry; and among other false Deities, the *Gauls* worshipp'd *Tentates*, *Mercury*, who it's likely was the same as the *Tut*, *Tutseon* of the *Germans*; *Dis*, from whom they believed themselves to be descended, but perhaps he was

common almost as Monks do. They
Worship of God to all the *Gauls*, and
Nobles Children in Theology, Astrono-
and natural Magick. They comitted
riting, but taught them by Word of
ng their Schools in Caves and Forests:
ended Silence and Secresy to them, and
culcated to them the Belief of the Immor-
ils, and their Transmigration into other
s Doctrine, and their using of *Greek* Cha-
us cause to conjecture that they had it
the Disciples of *Pythagoras*, who hapned

and had the Power of Excommunication; they were entirely exempted from all Charges and Services, but neither obliged to carry Arms, nor to pay any Tax; they chose a Head from out of their own Number, as I may say, a Sovereign Pontiff, who was continued so all his Life time; they attributed a wonderful Virtue to the *Adiffeltrac*, which they feared for and gathered with many Ceremonies, as also *penes Eges*, which they heaped together at certain times of the Moon. They met every year in the Country *Charvres*, and all those who had Controversies to decide went thither; they themselves did not kill Victims, but left that to the Sacrificers, who depended upon their Orders.

We also meet with their Women *Druids*; and *Ponins Mela* observes, that there were certain Priestesses in the Isle of *Sena*, which was upon the Coast of *Corneallia*, at the farther part of lower *Bretagne*, who attended the Oracle of a Deity whom he does not name; they were nine in all, who continued all their lives Virgins. The *Gauls* called them the *Senes*, either from the Island where they dwelt, or from the *Hebrew* *Coene*, which signifies a Priestess. It was believed they were endued with a peculiar Spirit, that they could by the Power of their Charms stir up the Storms and Winds, transform themselves into any sort of Animals they pleased, cure otherwise incurable diseases, penetrate into Futurity, and prophesy; that they made Responses to none but Sailors, only to such as went on purpose to that Island to consult with them.

The *Gauls* had also Deities whom they called *Eges*; they were looked upon to be very well skilled in the Art of foretelling what was to come, by inspecting the Entrails of Victims, particularly human ones: when they were about to consult the Gods upon any important Affair, they sacrificed a Man either to *Tanes*, *Hesus*, or *Taranis*, and made their Predictions according to the manner whereby the Victim when slain, to the way the Blood ran, and Disposition of the Members. It's thought they were these *Eges* and not the *Druids* that brought in this kind of barbarous and superstitious Sacrifices; and that

ports of People intermixing in time, the *Druids* applied themselves thereto also. We read in *Suetonius*; that the Emperor *Claudius* forbade the *Gauls* to perform human Sacrifices, *Augustus* having done so before the *Romans*. *Pliny* goes farther, and affirms that *Augustus* put down the *Druids*; but if he made any law for that purpose, it's to be believed it was not obeyed, since the same Author speaks of them else-where as a People yet in being. We find in *Tacitus* they took upon them to prognosticate things during the War of *Civilis*; and in *Vespasian*, that a Prophet predicted to *Dioclesian* that he should be Emperor. We may also enumerate among the Persons of a great Character, the Poets or Bards, who were much valued amongst the *Gauls*, as well as *Grecians*; they sung in Verse the greatest Secrets of the Divine Science, the Praises of the Gods, and the Glorious Feats of their Heroes. They served as Trumpeters to animate those who went to Battel, by reciting the famed Actions of their Predecessors, and consigning to Posterity those of their own times by their Poems; nevertheless they did not commit them to Writing, only they learnt them by heart, and left them to descend by Tradition from one Age to another.

It would be too tedious for me to enter upon a Description of the manner of receiving and propagating the Christian Religion among the *Gauls*; it's sufficient to say that the Rays of the glorious Gospel were diffused very early in this Country, and that the *Gauls* owing to St. *Epiphanius* were enlightened therewith in the Presence and Preaching of St. *Luke* the Evangelist, according to St. *Isidorus*, by those of the Apostle *Philip*. They said *Epiphanius* and *Theodoret* say the same thing of *Crescent*, the Disciple of St. *Paul*, whose use they believed, as well as *Eusebius*, that the Apostle visited *Galatia*, which is in the second Epistle to *Timothy* signified *Gaul*. The Church of *Vienne* own him their first Pastor, and some are of Opinion that St. *Luke* himself preached the Faith in this Country as he did to *Spain*; for which we have the Authority of *Isidore*, *Athanasius*, *Epiphanius*, *Jerom* and *Chrysostom*. But however this were in reality, the Christian Religion was planted and propagated here, as in the

other Provinces of the *Roman* Empire, by the faithful preaching of it, and the frequent Martyrdom of Professors, wherein we cannot be particular.

Wherefore it remaining only now, that we shew a little account for the Religion of the *Franks* before they became Christians, we are here to observe that they like other Heathen Nations had Multiplicity of Gods; but we do not find that they erected Temples for them, whether it were that being all a wandering People, and traversing from one Country to another, they would not by such Edifices be tied to one Place, or that they believed the Divinity to be Infinite, Sovereign and Free, and so not to be confined within the Compass of a Place. But they fancied there was something Divine in the Obscurity of thick Forests, in the frightful Horrour of Subterranean Caves, in the Depth of the most hidden Pits, in the height of tall Trees and sharp Rocks, where the Birds whose Flights approached the Heavens, the Serpents that shunned the Sight of Men, and hid themselves under the Earth. They made their Prayers in Copse and Bushes, at the Foot of Rocks, upon the Brink of a Fountain or a Pool. It is thought that such great Lovers of Falconry, as they were observed to be, they were easily induced to believe, that there was something of Divinity in those Birds that were proper for it; for since the Corruption of Humankind by Original Sin, Men have been apt to acknowledge no Deity more sensible than their own Fancy.

Sua cuiq; Deus sit dira Cupido.

We have no Authority that they had any other Gods than those things, tho' *Chiflet* supposes, that the Head which was found in *Childeric's* Tomb, was the King's Idol: That which was the more to be observed in their Impiety, was that they offered no Human sacrifices, as the *Saxons* and other Northern Nations did, but only brute Animals. We understand some Passages in the *Salick Law* that they sacrificed Pigs, of which there was a great Number in *Francia*; and we find by other antient Monuments

they consecrated their Meats and Drinks to their Gods. We read in the Life of *St. Gal*, that *Thierry I.* ruined a Temple near *Cologne*, that was very famous for the pretended Cure of several Diseases, by the Priests cutting upon the Wood the Shape of the sick Person, which was a kind of a *Talisman*. It's asserted in Honour of the *Franks*, that they never had that cruel Aversion to Christianity, that other Barbarians shewed, by doing Violence to their Religion, ruining their Churches, or persecuting their Ministers. They were so far from using them after that manner, that King *Childeric* is said to have a very great esteem of *St. Genevieve*. Whether *Clovis* was the first Christian King of the *Franks* (as the succeeding History informs us) cannot positively be affirmed, since we find mention made of *Cararic* and his Sons being of that Faith, and that they became Monks: However 'tis certain, that divers of that Nation embraced Christianity before *Clovis*, the Names of any of whom we shall not here particularize; and therefore conclude with one Observation only, It was the misfortune of the *Franks*, as well as of the *Saxons* here in *Britain*, to become Christians when the Church was declining apace from the antient Purity of Doctrine and Discipline, into that fatal Antichristianism that has since overspread the Face of *Europe*, by reason whereof they could not have a due Relish and just Ideas of the true Faith, till the Glorious Light of the Reformation brake out amongst them; of which, as well as of the other matters belonging to the History of this Country, in due Time and Place.

The Contents of the First VOLUME.

BOOK I.

C HAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Pharamond.</i>	Pag. 1.
2.	<i>The Reign of Clodion the Hairy.</i>	2.
3.	<i>The Reign of Meroveus.</i>	3.
4.	<i>The Reign of Childerick.</i>	4.
5.	<i>The Reign of Clovis, or Lewis.</i>	1.
6.	<i>The Reign of Childebert.</i>	
7.	<i>The Reign of Clotair I.</i>	14.
8.	<i>The Reign of Cherebert.</i>	15.

BOOK II.

C HAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Chilperic.</i>	17.
2.	<i>The Reign of Clotair II.</i>	22.
3.	<i>The Reign of Dagobert I.</i>	31.
4.	<i>The Reign of Clovis II.</i>	34.
5.	<i>The Reign of Clotair III.</i>	3.
6.	<i>The Reign of Childeric II.</i>	...
7.	<i>The Reign of Thierry I.</i>	42.
8.	<i>The Reign of Clovis III.</i>	45.

BOOK III.

C HAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Childebert II.</i>	47.
2.	<i>The Reign of Dagobert II.</i>	48.
3.	<i>The Reign of Chilperic II.</i>	50.
4.	<i>The Reign of Thierry II.</i>	52.
5.	<i>The Reign of Childeric III.</i>	57.
6.	<i>The Reign of Pepin the Little.</i>	59.
7.	<i>The Reign of Charlemain, or Charles I.</i>	63.
8.	<i>The Reign of Lewis I. the Debonnaire.</i>	79.

BOOK IV.

C HAP. 1.	<i>The Reign of Charles II. surnamed the Bald.</i>	88.
2.	<i>The Reign of Lewis II. the Stammerer.</i>	101.
3.	<i>The Reign of Lewis III.</i>	102.
4.	<i>The Reign of Charles III. the Fat.</i>	105.
5.	<i>The</i>	

The Contents.

5. *The Reign of Eudes.* 107.
6. *The Reign of Charles IV. the Simple.* 108.
7. *The Reign of Rodolph.* 112.
8. *The Reign of Lewis IV. Transmarine.* 115.

BOOK V.

- AP. 1. *The Reign of Lotair.* 121.
2. *The Reign of Lewis II. the Slothful.* 125.
3. *The Reign of Hugh Capet.* 127.
4. *The Reign of Robert.* 131.
5. *The Reign of Henry I.* 136.
6. *The Reign of Philip I.* 140.
7. *The Reign of Lewis VI. the Gross.* 146.
8. *The Reign of Lewis VII. the Young.* 152.

BOOK VI.

- AP. 1. *The Reign of Philip II. the Conqueror.* 161.
2. *The Reign of Lewis VII.* 176.
3. *The Reign of Saint Lewis.* 179.
4. *The Reign of Philip III. the Hardy.* 192.
5. *The Reign of Philip IV. the Fair.* 200.
6. *The Reign of Lewis X. surnam'd Hutin.* 217.
7. *The Reign of Philip V. the Long.* 220.
8. *The Reign of Charles IV. the Fair.* 224.

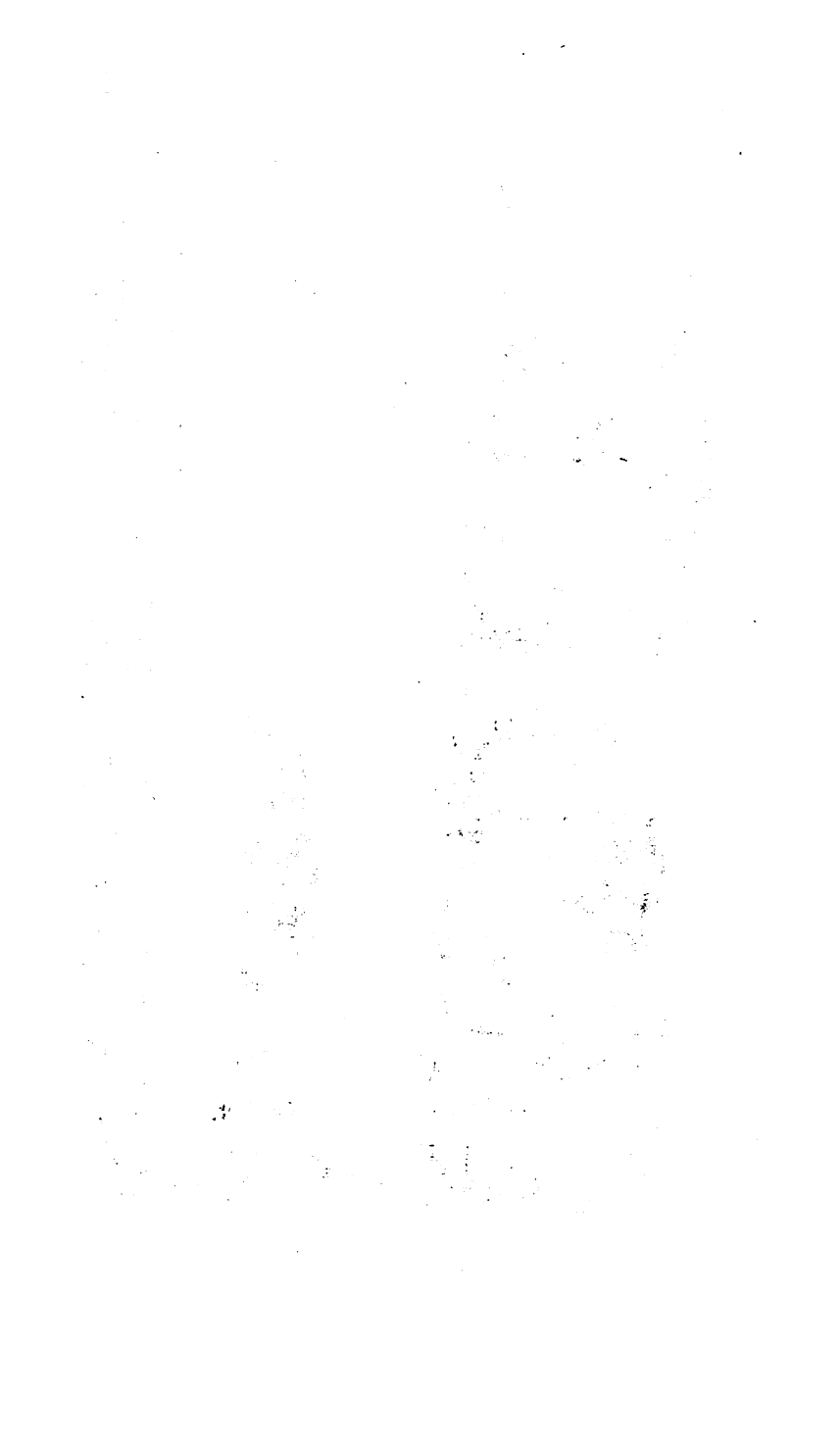
The Contents of the Second V O L U M

B O O K IX.

C	H A P. 1. <i>The Reign of Henry III.</i>	1
	2. <i>The Reign of Henry IV.</i>	63
	3. <i>The Reign of Lewis XIII.</i>	71
	4. <i>The Reign of Lewis XIV.</i>	1

The Antient and Present State of *France.*

C	H A P. 1. <i>Of the King and Royal Family.</i>	120
	2. <i>Of the Princes of the Blood, n Children of France, and Foreign Pr settled in that Kingdom.</i>	12
	3. <i>Of the Dukes and Peers of France.</i>	120
	4. <i>Of the Origin of the antient Peers France, and their Functions at t King's Coronation.</i>	121
	5. <i>Of the French King's several Orders Knighthood.</i>	121
	6. <i>Of the Constable, Marechals, Colon General of France, Master of the Or nance, Admiral, &c.</i>	121
	7. <i>Of the Government of the Provinces France.</i>	122
	8. <i>Of the Archbishopricks, Bishopricks, &c of France.</i>	122
	9. <i>Of the States of France, as also of t Justice and Institution of their Parli ments.</i>	123
	10. <i>Of the Chamber of Accounts at Par</i>	123
	11. <i>Of the Court of Aids.</i>	124
	12. <i>Of the Taille, Taillon, &c. and t manner of raising them.</i>	124
	13. <i>Of the Imposition called Entries.</i>	124
	14. <i>Of the Tax called the Gabelle.</i>	124
	15. <i>Of the Demesnes and Customs of t Crown.</i>	125
	16. <i>Of several other Taxes and Creat of Offices.</i>	125
	17. <i>Of the Generalities, Intendancies, Re al Treasury, &c. of France.</i>	125





A COMPLEAT
HISTORY
OF
FRANCE.

The First, or Merovignian Race.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

*The Reign of PHARAMOND,
first King of France.*

THO we find by the Historians of those Phara-
Antient Times, that the French had seven-
ral Kings before Pharamond, which is an Reign.
ambiguous Word, and uncertain whether
it be a proper Name, or an Epithet, signi-
fying, that he was as it were the Stock of the French
Nation, since Pharamond in the German Tongue, im- Emp. The-
ports the Mouth of Generations; yet the common odosius 2.
Opinion has ever begun to reckon the Kings of France and Valen-
from him, whom they make to commence his Reign tianian 3.
B in

2 *The Reigns of Pharamond and Clodion. B*

in 418. (a Year very remarkable for a great Eclipse of the Sun) and the manner of whose Inauguration was, to set him upon a great Shield, on which they carried him into the Field, where the People were assembled, and confirmed the Choice with Acclamations and Applause.

It's not to be doubted but his Design was to make Conquest, at least of some part of *Gaul*, wherein, probable, he did not much succeed, since we find
 428. *Romans* drove the *French* beyond the *Rhine* in 428.
His Death. about which time 'tis thought *Pharamond* died, after having reigned about ten years, and in his Life-t was reputed to have been the Author of the *Sali Law*, of which more hereafter.

C H A P. II.

The Reign of CLODION the Hairy, or Long-locks.

Clodion's **T**HE Reasons being uncertain why this Prince w
Reign. such long Hair, we pass that over, and observe
 428. that *Clodion* certainly in the beginning of his Re
 dwelt beyond the *Rhine*, over which he was beaten
 431. by that ever famous *Roman General Aetius*, in 4
 when he would have made an Irruption into *Gaul*;
 being ever upon the watch for a favourable Con-
 cture, he from his Castle of *Disparq* in *Thuri*
 brake in privately through the Forest *Charbonn.*
 into *Picardy*, where he made himself Master of *Bar*
 Cambray, and some other adjacent Places; from wh
His Con- pursuing his Conquests, during the extreme Confu
quests in of the *Roman Empire*, he received a Check from
Gaul. *tius* in *Artois*, which Country however he at le
 made himself not only Master of, but enlarged
 About 444. Dominion as far as the *Soame*, and took *Amiens*, w
 he chose to be the Place of his Royal Residence.

A modern Author says, he died of Grief for the
His Death. of his eldest Son at the Siege of *Soissons*, after he
 447. reigned 20 years, leaving two Sons behind him.

us to be their Protector, tho we find nothing concerning his Wife and Children.

CHAP. III.

Reign of MEROVEUS, or Merovee.

MEROVEUS, who was a near Relation of Meroveus Clodion, assumed the Regal Dignity, in pre- *begins his* jure to his Predecessor's Children; or rather the People *Reign.* him the preference upon the account of his fitness 448. to govern: List for the fabulous Story of his Mother's giving him by a certain Sea-Divinity, it had no ground than the Similitude of his Name to the *Mer-veich*, which signified a Sea-Calf.

proved to be a warlike and brave Prince, and with his Forces with *Actius* the Roman General, and *Corick* King of the *Visigoths*, they charged *Attila* of the *Huns*, who had laid siege to *Orleans*; with such Fury, that they made him quit it with a Slaughter. They also not long after engaged

the Plains of *Chaalons* in *Champagne*, tho some will say it to be in *Soulogne* near *Orleans*; and *Attila* lost 200000 men, for all which he had still men enough to retreat into his own Country. *Actius* having discharged the *Visigoths* and the *French*, lest he should be obliged to pursue and make an end of them; youngest of *Clodion's* Sons had cast himself into the arms of that Prince, who adopted him for his Son, the other under the protection of *Attila*; but what Fortune was is uncertain, tho some will have *Childerick* to have been the Adopted of *Actius*, which Roman was some time after massacred by the Emperor *Valentinian III.* from whence ensued the utter Ruin of the Western Empire: So that *Meroveus*, his Son *Childerick* after him, had a proper time to extend their Limits, the first of whom took the Territory of *Metz*, one way, and on the other *Picardy*, a part of *Normandy*, and almost all the Isle of *France*; and after having reigned almost 21 years,

444

His Con-
quests and
Death,

458.

paid his last Debt to Nature *Anno* 458. and so leave him.

C H A P. IV.

The Reign of CHILDERICK.

THIS Prince being young and debauched, People dethroned him, and advanced *Agil* or *Gillon*, Master of the *Roman* Militia, a Person of high reputation, in his room, while he himself, for of his Life, retired into *Thuringia*, but left the *Childerick* *ful Guyemans* in *France* to manage his Restoration. *deposed and restored.* having cunningly ingratiated himself into the favour of *Gillon*, and perswaded him to burden the People with Taxes, when they grumbled about it, he encouraged him to cut off the principal Men among them, who were the same that had deposed *Childerick*; he gave secret Encouragement to the Complaints of those whom he perswaded to re-call their natural Prince. *460.* *468.* That now they went as far as *Bar* to meet and receive him. *Childerick* hereupon making use of the Favour of his Subjects against *Gillon*, forced him to a *Retreat*, took *Treves* by Assault, and burnt it, together with *Lorain*; and having crossed *Champagne*, that remained firm to the *Romans*, he made himself Master of *Beauvais*, *Paris*, and many other Towns upon the *Oise* and the *Seine*, the People, who were weary of the *Roman* Exactions, every where readily submitted to him: Nay, so charmed was Queen *Basina* with his Vertues, that soon after he came from *Thuringia* she forsook her Husband, and came to him, who was her true Wife, and within a year had *Glovis* by her. *His Conquests.* It seems *Gillon* had called in some *Auxiliary* *Saxons* under their King *Odoacre*; but *Gillon* *464.* Count *Pal* took the Command, and with his Fidelity would secure *Angiers*, and fortify the *Loire*; but *Childerick* having vanquished him near *Orleans*, pursued him to *Angiers*, where he met him, and there slew him. This done, he





Saxons of their Islands, and by agreement sent them expel the *Germans*, who at that time had made an up-
 tion into *Gaul*. *Childerick* upon his Return from Expedition against the *Germans*, fell sick of a Fe-
 , and dyed, aged 45 years, whereof he had reign- *His Death.*
 22 or 23, leaving one Son named *Clovis*, and three
 ighters behind him. It's conjectured he had his Roy-
 Residence at *Tournay*, because that in 1654. they dis-
 er'd a Tomb there in digging, and found a Ring,
 ereon his Effigies and Name were engraven.

CHAP. V.

The Reign of CLOVIS, or Lewis.

LOVIS, or *Lewis* (for 'tis the same Name) was
 a brave handsom Person, and early began a War a-
 inst *Siagrius* the Son of *Gillon*, who had been set up *Clovis de-*
 head of *Childerick*; and having defeated him near *feats Sia-*
iffens, forced him by Threats out of the hands of *grius.*
aric King of the *Visigoths*, put him to death, and
 zed on all that the *Romans* had in *Gaul*. He also sub-
 ed part of the *Thuringians*, and imposed a Tribute *481.*
 on them; and his Conquests made him so famous,
 it *Gondebaud* King of the *Burgundians* seemed to be
 more than his Vassal, whose Niece *Cloilda* he mar- *Married*
 d in 491. by the interposition of *Aurelian*, a *Erench*
 ord, who had the County of *Melun* for his Reward.
 Now the *Almains* out of *Germany* entring in an Ho-
 le manner into the Territories of *Sigebert* King of
lagn, *Clovis* his Kinsman engaging in his Quarrel at
alg, his men gave ground in the Action, and fell into
 order: The greatness of the Danger made the King
 ay to the God of his Wife, and make a Vow, if he
 and Deliverance he would be baptized; upon which
 e Scene immediately changed, and the Day became his
 , with the Slaughter of a multitude of his Enemies;
 a pursuing his Victory, he exterminated all those
 at were on that side of the *Rhine*. Being returned
 on this Expedition, and intrusted in the Mysteries

Baptized.
496.

of Christianity, he was baptized at *Rheims* on Christmas-day, Anno 496. whose Example 3000 of his Subjects followed; and the *French* boast he was at time the only Orthodox King in the World, there ing none but himself that did not either live in E or Idolatry.

But the Zeal of Christianity not allaying his war Heat, he assisted *Gondefigilus* against his Brother *Gondebaud* the *Burgundian*, upon condition of sharing Spoil between them; and when they came to Battel near *Dijon*, *Gondefigilus* went over to the *Fr* which made *Gondebaud*, now sensible of the Treachery to flee to *Avignon*, where he was besieged by *Clo* but by the wise Management of his Counsellor *Ari* who pretended to desert him, he brought about a greement between them, and *Gondebaud* became
500. Tributary, tho it held not long: For scorning to Tribute, he watched his opportunity, and beset *Gondefigilus* in *Vienne*, and by the means of one *temier*, finding a Passage through an Aqueduct into City, he there slew him, with the *Arian* Bishop Place, and so remained sole King of all *Burgundy*, *Clovis*, and *Theodorick* King of the *Ostrogoths*, a League to conquer it.

He defeats
and kills
Alaric.

After this, some peaceable Days ensuing, *Clo* plied himself (as they said) to reform the *Salique* from the Dross of *Paganism*; but he and *Alaric* being able to continue long Friends, and a Rupture being fomented between them by the Bishops of *quitain*, out of the hatred they bore to the *Arian* ciples of *Alaric*, the Kings had an Interview
507. at *Amboise*, and all that *Theodorick* King of the *goths* could do, being not able to restrain the Ar of *Clovis*, he made war upon *Alaric* under the pretence of Religion, took *Tours*, and in the of *Vouglay*, not far from *Poitiers*, defeated *A* Army, and slew him with his own Hand: After which he became Master of *Albigensis*, *Rouergne*, *Quercy*, *Auvergne*, while himself, with another part of his my, took *Poitiers*, *Saintonge*, all *Bourdelois*, *Bordeaux* it self, where he wintered. In the S
508. *Tholouse* fell to his share, then the *Walls* fell down before him; and li y to

His Con-
quests.

508.

the *Gauls*, which were t freed from the
 of the *Aquians*, while *Conde* l, pursuant to
 l treaty th him, conquered the *Narbonnois*,
 wi : City of *Narbonne*. All these Successes put
 t extended the Fame of *Clovis*, even to the East,
 from whence *Anastasius* the Emperor sent him honoura-
 ry Letters, and Imperial Ornaments ; so that he was
 ever after accosted with the Titles of Consul and August,
 which were not all together useles to him towards the
 more entire Subjection of the *Gauls*, who had still some
 Veneration for those Titles.

Theodorick, King of the *Ostrogoths*, jealous of *Clovis's* French de-
 Success, sent a great Army against him under Count *feated by*
Ida, who in a bloody Battel defeated and slew 30000 the *Goths*.
French and *Burgundians*, and afterwards took from 510.
 them all they had conquered in *Provence* and *Langue-*
doc, except *Tholouse* and *Uzaz*.

Clovis fretted at these Losses, lays snares for the o-
 ther petty Kings of *France*, and rid himself of them
 by such Methods of Cruelty and Treachery as no way
 became a Christian, and Orthodox King ; and at length
 died at *Paris*, November 26. Anno 511. aged 45. *Clovis's*
 having reigned 30 years. He had four Sons living, *Death*.
Thierry, *Clodomir*, *Childebert*, and *Clotaire*, the first
 by a Concubine, the other three by *Clotilda* ; as also
 a Daughter of the same Name, afterwards married to
Amalaric King of the *Visigoths* in *Spain*.

The *French* under *Clovis* his Reign wholly freed *Manners*
 themselves from the *Roman* Empire, and became their *and Cu-*
 Allies upon equal terms, till which time tis thought *stoms*.
 they had been Stipendiaries, or tributary to them.
 That part of *Gaul* which reaches from the *Rhine* to the
Loire, was called *France*, and the *French* measured
 those Lands, and took the third or fourth part, which
 they shared among themselves. The People consisted
 of Freemen and Slaves, the first of whom all bore
 Arms. The *Gauls* paid Tribute to the *French*, but the
 natural *French* paid hardly any thing besides their per-
 sonal Service : They were bred up to the exercise of
 Arms from their Youth, were of a good Shape and Sta-
 ture, enured to Labours, strong and exceeding nimble :
 They had left off the use of Arrows, and in lieu of them
 for offensive Weapons, they us'd the Sword and the *Angon*
 which

which was a Dart of a moderate length, with an iron bearded Head, and Cheeks of Iron, and the iron-edged Ax, which they called *Francisque*, that it darted, as well as the *Angon*, tho nearer at hand for defensive Arms, unless it were their Comma they had only the Buckler, which they managed with dexterously to shelter, and, Tortoise like, to cover themselves in Onsets. Their whole Army were Infantry, or if there were a few Horse, they only served to attend the General, and carry his Orders. They retained a good part of the Establishment made by the *Romans*, as the manner of raising Imposts, but less; also of providing Magazines for the Subsistence of their Troops, maintaining Horses and Carriages for Travellers on the great Roads, publick Sports, Horseracing, and Combats of wild Beasts; and their Kings believed themselves as absolute as Emperors, and Dukes, Counts, and great Masters of their Military, even Patricians, and perhaps the Mayors of the Palace held the Office of *Præfecti Pretorii*.

C H A P. VI.

The Reign of CHILDEBERT.

511. *Tierry* King of *Metz*. } *Childebert* of *Paris*.

Clodomir of *Orleans*. } *Clotaire* of *Soissons*.

THESE four Brothers divided the Kingdom between them, tho the Succession be accounted the Kings of *Paris*, because that City has since been the Capital of all *France*. *France* then began to be divided into *Ostereich*, or the Eastern part, corruptly called *Austrasia*, and into *Westrich* or *Neustria*, the first comprehending all between the *Meuse* and the *Rhine*, as even *Rheims*, *Chaalons*, *Cambray* and *Laon* on this side the *Meuse*, besides antient *France*; and all the People subdued beyond the *Rhine*, as the *Bavarians*.

and part of the *Thuringians* depended upon it, where-
as *Neustria* extended from the *Meuse* to the *Loire* :
But *Aquitain* was not comprised under the Name of
France nor *Burgundy* ; nor the lower *Bretagne* at least,
because it was an independent State.

In the mean time *Gondebaud* King of *Burgundy* 516.
dying, and being succeeded by his Son *Sigismond*,
who in prejudice to his Queen *Ostrogotha*, took one
of his Servants into his Bed, by whose wicked Instiga-
tion he put his own Son *Sigeric* to death in his Sleep ;
Divine Justice stirred up the *French* Kings to chastise
him, who in a few days made themselves Masters of
a great part of *Burgundy* ; so that *Sigismond* was quick-
ly betrayed into the Hands of the Enemy, and with
his Wife and Children, shut up by *Clodomir* in a Castle,
not far from *Orleans*. But *Gondemar* *Sigismond's* Brother
having saved himself by flight, and gathering up the Re-
mains of his Brother's Army, put himself in possession of
the Throne. *Clodomir* not brooking this, made a League
with *Thierry* his Brother, to compleat his Overthrow ;
and having notwithstanding all the pious Arguments of
St. Avy cruelly massacred *Sigismond* with his Wife and
Children, this wrought so just a Resentment in *Thierry*
for the death of *Sigismond* his Father in Law, that
he forsook *Clodomir* in Battel, and suffered him to
perish: However the *French* were so far from being
slain. *Clodomir*

Radegonda, *Bertier's* Children; the first of which put to death, and married the other: While *Thierry* being returned home, and having allured *Herfroy* to his Court, under the security of the Faith, he was one day barbarously thrust down the Walls of *Tolbiac*, and so miserably perished *Childebert* about the same time making War upon *Amalaric* King of the *Visigoths*, the last was overtaken in Battle near *Narbonne*, the place of his Royal residence, and slain in his Flight, tho *Clotaire* got more than Plunder; for *Septimania* still remained in the Hands of the *Visigoths*, whose timorous Kings transferred their Royal Seat to *Toledo* for their great security, and so we leave them.

534- But now for the utter extinguishing of the Kingdom of *Burgundy*, *Childebert* and *Clotaire* confederated and having quickly expelled *Gondemar*, put a period to it, after it had subsisted 90 Years, and united it to *France*, tho it retained still its *Native* Laws, and particular Magistrates: And because *Thierry* of *Metz* refused to accompany his two Brothers against *Gondemar*, his Subjects threatened to dethrone him, because they had no share in the Plunder of *Burgundy*; and he had no other way to appease them than to conduct them into *Auvergne*, who were

**Thierry*
slain.

volted from him to give themselves up to *Childeric* *Thierry* in his Return besieged the Lord *Munich* in the Castle of *Vitri*, by whom he was slain with a Dart; after he had reigned a little above 5 Years, and lived about 55, leaving only one Son named *Theodebert*, who during the Wars of *Bavaria* and *Thuringia*, had Orders to oppose the incursions of the *Visigoths* in *Septimania*, from whom he recovered some Castles in the Country of *Beziers*, but just as he himself was to be taken by the Beauty of the *Queen* *Deateria*, who received him into her Castle and married him. From *Septimania* he carried the War to *Provence* against the *Ostrogoths*, where he made a considerable Progress, when the News of his Father's Sickbed made him hasten to *Metz*, where he arrived some days before he died. Now *Childebert* and *Clotaire* the Uncles of *Theodebert*, were preparing to invade his Father's Kingdom, but his diligence

Chap. 6. *The Reign of Childebert.*

11

their measures; and when he had bought a Peace of them, and apparently tied a knot of Friendship with *Childebert*, who promised him the Succession, as having no Children of his own, he publicly married *Deateria*, in prejudice to *Wisgard*, the Daughter of *Theodebert's* *Adf-*
Wacon King of the *Lombards*, whom he had betrothed *ons*.
in his Father's Life time.

In the mean time *Athalaric* King of *Italy* dying in his Youth, and his Mother marrying *Theodad*, Son of *Amalafrede*, Sister to King *Theodoric*, and advancing him to the Throne, he ungratefully makes away with her, which indeed caused the ruin of the *Ostro-goths*; what with the Conduct of *Belisarius* the Emperor *Justinian's* General, and the Advancement of *Vitiges* to the Throne, who put *Theodad* to death: But this was not all, for *Theodad* in his Life time offering *Provence* to the *French*, and 8000 *l.* of Gold, to take his part, *Vitiges* by way of Prevention actually does it; and *Theodebert* to make his Advantage of both, first sent 10000 *Burgundians* into *Italy*, who joining with *Oraia*, one of *Vitiges* his Captains, helped him to recover *Milan*; and when he believed both Parties were pretty well weakned, he entred the *Milanese* with 200000 Men. The *Roman* Army, and that of the *Ostro-goths* were encamped over against the other Army, near *Pavia*; and each of them thought *Theodebert* was come to their Assistance, but he first assaulted and defeated the *Ostro-goths*, then came on thundering against the Emperor's Army, and cut them all in pieces; but a Plague and Famine made him soon repass the Mountains, for fear *Belisarius* out of *Tuscany* should fall upon him.

539.

But this was not all, for *Theodebert* about this time was also tormented with the Plagues of his own Family; for Queen *Deateria* growing jealous of her own Daughter, caused wild Bulls to be harnessed, to draw her Chariot, who precipitated her from off the Bridge of *Verdun* into the *Meuse*: At which unnatural Fact the *French* were so offended, that they obliged their King to repudiate *Deateria*, and take *Wisgard* to Wife, to whom he was before contracted. The following Year his Uncle *Childebert* and he fell un-
wares upon *Clotaire*, who only had time to fortify
himself

540.

541.

himself on the Banks of the *Seine*, by laying great Trees cross the Avenues; but when they were ready to force him in this Post, the Heavens, as they said, the Prayers of Queen *Clorilda*, without hurting of, poured such a Tempest upon the Enemies, that they desired a Peace of him. But to return to the Imperialists and *Ostro-goths*, still engaged against one another, *Theodebert* already Master of *Rhetia*, *Vindelicia* and *Suevia*, took that opportunity by his Lieutenant *Haminge*, to make himself Master of the lesser *Italy*, since called *Lombardy*; but *Justinian's* Forces having gained some advantage over his Troops, and the Emperor thereupon among the taking upon himself the Title of *Francica*, *Theodebert* being not able to endure it, would needs cross *Pannonia* and *Mesia*, and bring all his Power into *Thrace*, to let him see the *French* were not vanquished. But as he was preparing for his Expedition, a most fatal Accident took away his Life; for being one day hunting a wild Bull, he happened to break down the Branch of a Tree, that hit him so rudely on the Head, as to throw him into a Fever, where he died in the 14th Year of his Reign, and about 40 his Age, leaving one Son *Theodebaldus* behind him and a Daughter called *Bertoaire*, who afterwards came a Nun. As *Theodebert* had been a Prince of great Undertakings, he mightily burdened his Subjects with Taxes; for which his chief Minister *Partenius*, a voracious Glutton, was stoned to death at *Triers*.

*Theodebert's
Death and
Character.*

*Theodebaldus
succeeds.*

551.

Theodebaldus succeeding his Father *Theodebert* could by no Solicitations of *Justinian* be brought to abandon the Defence of the *Ostro-goths*, or make a League with the Empire; however he sent an Embassador to *Constantinople*, to treat of some differences concerning the Cities he held in *Italy*, wherein the *Justinian* gave him all the satisfaction he could desire, yet he could by no means be induced to restore to their Pope *Vigilius*, and *Datus* Bishop of *Milan*, who were detained and treated very ill.

552.

It was not long before the Kingdom of the *Ostro-goths* came to be extinguished in *Italy* (where it subsisted but 58 Years) by the Successes of *Justinian's* Lieutenants, and the remainder of those People implor'd

the Assistance of the *French*, *Leutarius* and *Bucelinus* two *German* Lords, by the Permission of *Theodebaldus*, made a descent into *Italy* with 75000 Men, both of *Germans* and *French*, and ravaged it on the right and left, even to the farther extent of the Country. *Leutaire's* Army having pierced as far as *Otranto*, were beaten back near *Fano* in the Province of *Amilia*; and retreating from thence with much difficulty into *Venetia*, which then belonged to *Theodebaldus*, they were all destroyed by a Pestilence, while the other Army under *Bucelin* were all cut off by *Narses*, the Emperor's General, only five Men escaping. And the Year following another Army of *Theodebaldus* having run the like Fate with *Bucelin*, there remained nothing to the *French* in *Italy* but the Passage of the *Alps*; so that after such bloody Losses, *Theodebaldus* ended his languishing Life, in the 20th Year of his Age, and 7th of his Reign; and having no Children, his Succession returned to his two Uncles, but *Clotaire* being the strongest seized all, and married his Wife, tho thro the Remonstrances of the Bishops, he afterwards put her off, and gave her in Marriage to *Garibald* Duke of *Bavaria*.

554

555

The *Saxons*, who at this time were Tributaries to the *French*, even from the time of *Thierry* of *Metz*, conjointly with the *Thuringians* took occasion now to revolt, but *Clotaire* soon beat and plundered them: Yet the *French* refusing them Mercy, the next Year upon a fresh Revolt, they were beaten with a horrible Slaughter, and the King gladly proffered the *Saxons* that Peace which had been denied them. His Brother *Childebert* seeing the Prosperity, incites his own Son *Mercurius* of *Aquitain* to rebel against him, and to be managed by his two other Sons, he marched several times upon them.

555

556

557

558

559

560

561

562

563

564

565

Childebert's
Death and
Character.
558.

long the Benefit of it, for returning from *Châlons* he was struck with a troublesome Disease, which ended in his Death. Among his other Virtues he is reckoned to be a Prince eminent for his Care to the Poor, and his Zeal for Religion according to the Mode of those times : As for his Wife *Ultrahedra* and his two Daughters *Chrotberg* and *Chrotchinda*, were detained in Prison by their Uncle *Clotaire*, he had secured the Kingdom to himself ; and set the first Example of the Salique Law in favour of Males Succession to the Crown, which yet seems to be rather compulsive than lawful ; and so he rejoined in his own Person the entire Succession of the Grand *Merovingians*.

C H A P. VII.

The Reign of CLOTAIRE I.

Clotaire
sole King
of France.
560.

PRINCE *Chramne*, now destitute of *Childebert's* Protection, reconciled himself to his Mother ; but soon after retires to *Conobert*, one of the Princes of *Bretagne*, whither he was hotly pursued by his Father, who fought him near the *Selle*, the *Bretons*, killed *Conobert*, and took *Chramne* ; whom with his Wife and Children he put after a most cruel manner caused to be burnt : So barbarous an Action wrought a severe Repentance in which he likewise endeavoured to appease by Acts of devotion, and large Donations to the Church ; but coming back from hunting in the Forest of *Chaise*, he was seized with a burning Fever, whereof he died at *Compiègne* in the 61st year of his Age, and about the end of his Reign : His four Sons buried his Corps with great Pomp at *Soissons*. He had four Wives, of whom he kept two Sisters at once, namely *Ingonde* and *Childeberte*, by the first of whom he left three Sons, viz. *Childebert*, *Gontran*, and *Sigebert*, and one Daughter married to *Alboinus* King of the *Lombards* : By his second Wife he had *Chilperic*, and by *Glinisne* the u

His Death.
561.

Chr. :: Some Authors give him a Daughter named *Blith*, married to the Senator *Ausbert*, paternal Grandfather to St. *Arnold*.

C H A P. VIII.

The Reign of CHEREBERT.

Cherebert King of Pa- } *Sigebert of Austrasia.*
ris. }
 Gontran of Orleans and } *Chilperic of Soissons.*
Burgundy. }

THE Kingdom being a second time divided into four parts for *Clotaire's* four Sons, occasioned great Calamities; for before the shares were settled, *Chilperic* the youngest seized upon all the Father's Treasure at *Bresne*, and then at *Paris*; but he being driven thence by the other three, they drew Lots, which fell upon each according to the Divisions in this Title; besides which each of them had a share in *Aquitain* and *Provence*, because they might be altogether obliged to maintain them with their joint Forces. These Brothers had not had long to settle themselves in their respective Partitions, when the *Avars* flying from the Tyranny of the *Turks*, into the Emperor *Justinian's* Service, and being after his Death slighted by *Justin*, in quest of their Fortune penetrated into the Heart of *Germany*, and ravaged *Thuringia*, which belonged to *Sigebert*; who nothing terrified with the approach of these *Barbarians*, encountered them on the Banks of the *Elbe*, and sent them back with shame to the *Danube* from whence they came. In the mean time *Chilperic* falling upon his Territories, ruined all the Country of *Rheims*; but he was so vigorously repulsed by *Sigebert*, that he not only took the City of *Soissons*, but also his Son *Theodebert* Prisoner; but a Reconciliation ensued the same year, and the young Prince obtained his Liberty.

The Kingdom divided into 4 Parts.

Avars beaten.

567.

The

The Kingdom of the *Lombards* being erected in *Italy* about this time, the Neighbourhood soon set them together by the Ears with the *French*; and being puffed up with their Successes in *Italy*, they made frequent Incurfions into *Rhetia* and *Provence*, and in 571 marched into the Kingdom of *Burgundy*, where at first in a bloody Battel they defeated King *Gontran's* Army, and slew his General *Amat*, the Patrician of *Arles*; but his Successor *Mummole*, having afterwards hemmed them in about *Ambrun*, destroyed almost their whole Army, or made them Prisoners.

King Cherebert dies.

Cherebert being gone into *Xantogne*, which was his Lot, died in the Castle of *Blay* upon the *Garonne*, at about 49 years of Age, having reigned nine; he had only three Daughters, viz. by Queen *Ingoberge*, *Berte*, who was married to *Ethelbert* King of *Canterbury* in *England*, and proved an Instrument to convert him to Christianity; and the other two by some Mistress, who proved dissolute Nuns. This Prince indeed changed his Wives often, for he put off the first and married a Nun, and last of all a Shepherd's Daughter. Neither were his Brothers better than he upon this account, for *Gontran* chose a Servant for his Mistress, then espoused and quickly rejected *Marcatrude*: *Chilperic* repudiated Queen *Andovere*, tho he had three Sons by her, for the Love of *Fredegonde*, one of her Maids; tho he afterwards quitted his Amours with her, and married another Wife. *Sigebert* alone of them was he that desired a lawful Marriage, and one suitable to his Quality, and therefore espoused *Brunechild* Daughter of *Managildus* King of the *Visigoths*: But of this enough.



570.

The Kingdom of the *Lombards* being erected about this time, the Neighbourhood soon set together by the Ears with the *French*; and being with their Successes in *Italy*, they madeursions into *Rhetia* and *Provence*, and in 571 the Kingdom of *Burgundy*, where at first a Battel they defeated King *Gontran's* Army, his General *Amat*, the Patrician of *Arles*; Successor *Mummole*, having afterwards been in about *Ambrun*, destroyed almost their army, or made them Prisoners.

King Cherebert dies.

Cherebert being gone into *Xantogne*, which Lot, died in the Castle of *Blay* upon the 6 about 49 years of Age, having reigned nine; only three Daughters, viz. by Queen *Ingoberthe*, who was married to *Ethelbert* King of *Ca* in *England*, and proved an Instrument to convert to Christianity; and the other two by some who proved dissolute Nuns. This Prince indeed seduced his Wives often, for he put off the first married a Nun, and last of all a Shepherd's I Neither were his Brothers better than he on account, for *Gontran* chose a Servant for his I then espoused and quickly rejected *Marcatrude*; *peric* repudiated Queen *Andovere*, tho he had Sons by her, for the Love of *Fredegonde*, one Maids; tho he afterwards quitted his I her, and married another Wife. So next them was he that desired a lawful Marriage, suitable to his Quality, and therefore espoused a child Daughter of *Mmagildus* King of the I But of this enough.





B O O K II.

C H A P. I.

The Reign of CHILPERIC.

Gontran in Neustria } *Sigebert in Austrasia.*
and Burgundy. } *Chilperic in Neustria.*

HEREBERT's three Brothers immediately redivided his Kingdom between them, and even the City of *Paris* also; into which neither of the three was to enter without the Consent of the rest, upon the Forfeiture of his Share not only therein, but in the Kingdom that was *Cherebert's*: However *Chilperic* resuming his Mistress *Fraganda*, for whose sake he caused his lawful Wife to be strangled in her Bed; his Brothers, more particularly *Sigebert*, made War upon him, and forced the Countries of *Bourdelois*, *Limosin*, *Quercy*, *Bearn* and *Biscay* from him. About which time the *Avars* made a second Irruption into *Thuringia*, they made use of the Onset of Diabolical Enchantments against *Sigebert* and his Frenchmen; tho't is likely, they had nothing but ugly Vizards on, or had blacked their Faces: However it were, the *French* were so hemmed in on all sides, that *Sigebert* had no way to get out of this Extremity, but by the Power of Money, and furnishing them with Provisions, of which they stood in great need.

571.

Sigebert impatient of rest, soon after made War upon *Gontran*, in order to take the City of *Arles* from him; but failing in that Design, he was now to expect Adventures, and indeed the Division of *Cherebert's* Kingdoms afforded the Brothers sufficient Occasions to quarrel; and more particularly *Tourain* and *Poitiers* falling to *Sigebert's* share, *Chilperic* had an itching

572.



he went to *Tours*, and thence to *Roan*, where he married *Brunehaud* by the Advice of *Pretextat* Arch-Bishop of that Place ; but the Father hasting thither, and taking the new Couple out of the Church, to which they had retired for refuge, he set a Guard upon *Brunehaud*, and carried his Son away with him, whom some time after he confined also by the advice of *Fredegonde*, and forced him to turn Priest. At the same time the *Austrasians* demanded their Queen *Brunehaud* with so much earnestness, that he sent her to them, yet forbore not to invade the Territories of *Childebert*: His son *Clovis* took *Saintes*, but Duke *Didier* laying Siege to *Limoges*, the *Patrician Mummole*, King *Gontran's* General, engaged him in a most obstinate fight, wherein 30000 Men were slain, of which three Parts were *Didier's*, who had much ado to save himself.

576.

And now the Fate of poor *Meroveus* comes on apace, for having made his escape out of the Monastery to *St. Martins of Tours*, and finding not himself safe there from his Step-mother *Fredegonde* ; he with the traitorous *Boson* (who had been the Cause of his Brother *Theodebert's* Death) fled into *Champagne* ; after which, *Boson* and the Bishop of *Rheims*, under pretence of delivering *Tournay* to him, took him Prisoner, and giving *Chilperic* immediate notice of it, he made all the hast he could thither, but found his unfortunate Son stabbed to death by the order of *Fredegonde*.

Now Death having snatched away *Gontran's* two Sons by his second Wife *Austrigilda*, he adopted his Nephew *Childebert*, and placed him in his Royal Seat, and then sent to *Chilperic* to demand their Part of the Kingdom of *Paris*, or declare War against him ; but *Chilperic* laughed at the Proposal, which made no Interruption in his Chariot-Races, wherein he much delighted : Neither was he afraid of over-burdening his Subjects with Imposts ; he having taxed an Amphore of Wine upon every half Acre of Vineyard, laid a Tribute upon every Slaves Head, and Poll-Money upon every Freeman. But now his Calamities began to come upon him, for this year *Sampson* his eldest Son by *Fredegonde* died ; and himself the next was tormented with a long Fever, and two of his other Sons afflicted with a Dysentery : All which making *Frede-*

597.
The Practices of
Fredegon-
da.

Gonda believe it was the effect of Divine Vengeance for the sufferings of the oppressed People; she took the Lists of the Tax-gatherers into the Fire, and called all the Collectors. But this forced Repentance was but short-liv'd, for seeing now that Prince must necessarily succeed his Father, and her own fury, if that once hapned, she wickedly accuses her his Father of having poisoned her two Sons, thereupon delivering him up to her resentment caused his Throat to be cut, and his Mother (*Andovere*) to be strangled.

The Kingdom of *Austrasia*, and *Childebert's* Father being under the Government of Queen *Brunhilda* the Lords of the Country grew very licentious that she had much ado to keep the publick Tranquillity and had no other way to secure the faithful *Duchy of Champagne* from the Resentments of the Bishop of *Rheims* and others, than by sending him out of the Kingdom to King *Gontran*, while the Bishop of *Autun* who was in *Chilperic's* Interest, brought the other Lords, in prejudice to the Alliance their Father had made with his Uncle *Gontran*, to oblige him to make a League with *Chilperic* against him. The League made, *Childebert* sent to demand half of the Kingdom of his Uncle, who was so far from restoring it, that he made himself Master of the other, by the Treachery of *Dynamius* Governour of *Provence* for *Childebert* who thereupon goes over to *Gontran*, as the Bishop of *Mummoles* forsook him to be of *Childebert's* Side fortified himself in *Avignon*. The Business of *the Bishop of Autun* caused an open Rupture between the two Kings and *Chilperic* who was desirous of it, immediately falls upon *Gontran's* Countries, having at the time ordered *Didier* to invade *Perigord* and *Aquitaine* which he did with good Success, while Duke *Thierry* his Troops were hemmed in and cut in pieces at *Gascoigns*. But a more dangerous design was contrived against *Gontran*, than the open War of *the Bishop of Autun* for by the Contrivance of *Mummoles* and the other Lords, one *Gondebaud*, who pretended to be *Clotaire's* Son, and perhaps might have been so being able to get his Brothers the Kings to acknowledge him, retired to the *Constantinopolitan* Emperor.

Til

where *Gontran-Boson* hapning also to take a
 e, he persuaded him to go for *France*; and be-
 sed with Money by *Tiberius*, he arrived at
 les, was received by the Bishop, and after-
 entertained by *Mummole* at *Avignon*: But the
 son, who had persuaded him to return, falling
 in the Bishop, the other wisely withdrew to the
 at the Mouth of the *Rhone*; while the false *Bo-*
 ed all his Money, and took a Commission from
Gontran, to besiege *Mummole* in *Avignon*.
 rt being informed of it, sent one of his Dukes, *Miseries of*
 ashed that design: However the Provinces suf- *France.*
 xtremely by these Discords of the Kings, the Sol-
 rew very insolent; and an Epidemical Distem-
 illed *Lues inquinaria*, swept away abundance of
 , especially about *Paris*, who mostly died how-
 d shrieking most horribly.

Chilperic at this time having besieged *Melum*, and
 ended three of his Dukes to attack *Bourges*, his
 s were so defeated by *Gontran*, that he was glad
 Accommodation; which the other being of a
 disposition easily gave way to; and all the In-
 of *Chilperic* was now, to get his Brother to
 oppress *Childebert*; but *Gontran* and his Nephew
 better understanding than he was aware of,
 ade a League to recover, at a joint Charge, those
Childebert *Kingdom* which *Chil-*

583.

mane, malicious, dissembling and a great Pretence for Impositions, but crafty, patient, magnificent, and loved. In the year 1643. a couple of Tom found at the entrance into the Church of St. Gerdes Prez, upon one of which the Name of Chilperic was written. He had only one Son but four Months old, that survived him, who had yet no Name, a Daughter by *Fredegonde*, whose Name was *Rigobert* and was then on her Journey to Spain to meet King *Carade* to whom she was betrothed, when the News came of her Father's Death: But Duke *Didier* with all her Equipage, she returned to her Mother, and her a great deal of Trouble, being of the like ill-luck with her self.

C H A P. II.

The Reign of CLOTAIR II.

<i>Gontran</i> in <i>Burgundy</i>	}	}	<i>Childebert</i> in <i>Austria</i>
and Part of <i>New-Stria</i> .			<i>Clotair II.</i> in <i>N</i>

584.

GONTRAN being informed of his Brother's Death, made all the hast he could for *Paris*, & *Fredegonde* was gone to take Sanctuary; and *Childebert* who intended the same thing, finding the Church possessed, retired to *Meaux*; from whence he sent Ambassadors to *Gontran*, to demand part of the Kingdom of *Paris*, as also *Fredegonde* to be punished for murder of her Husband, and of *Meroveus* and *Chilperic*. To the first of which he replied, that all the Kingdom of *Paris* belonged to him, because *Sigebert* and *Chilperic* had forfeited their Shares by violating the Treaty of Agreement made between them three; and for the other, he would refer it to the Assembly of the Nobles for which a day was appointed. He staid two Months at *Paris*, in which time *Fredegonde* did so insinuate to his Favour, that her Son by *Chilperic*, whom she named *Clotair*, was acknowledged King by him, to the propriety

riated the greatest part of the Kingdom to himself, leaving *Paris* only to the Child; and in short, obliging himself to be Master of all *France* during the minority of his Nephews, he took possession of the Lands in *Neustria* at his Pleasure, but in *Austria* Power was not owned.

Not to be for ever entertained with a Scene of Treachery, the forementioned *Gondebaud* from *Constantinople*, at the Instigation of some of *Gontran's* Enemies, persuaded him to take the Title of King upon the *Isle de la Gaillard*, wherein he was favoured by some of *Childebert's* Court, Bishops of *Aquidun* and *Brannaud* herself, who desired him for her Son. Now *Gontran*, who feared *Childebert* might discover this Conspiracy, desired he would come to him, confirmed the Adoption before made, putting him into his Hand; and at the same time he sent his Army to march into *Aquitain*, which beset *Gondebaud* in *Lyons de Cominges*, where after some days, he was delivered up by the ever-treacherous *Mummole* and others to the Besiegers, who slew him upon the place; neither did *Mummole*, and the rest of them fare any better, and the City was de-

585

Gontran being satisfied by *Fredegonde* as to the Point of Legitimacy of little *Clotair*, was soon after in-
 against *Laurin*, King of the *Lowlands*, for

four Attempts *Fredegonde* had made against him; yet, for what reason we know not, he did not do much as he ought to have done to secure his Life the Punishment of this *Megera*.

Childebert being now about fifteen, began to himself to be dreaded by some Examples of Sever having caused Duke *Magnoald* to be killed, and *ser Gontran-Boson* to be punished according to the Judgment of K. *Gontran*, who very well knew his Treachery, and indeed did not pardon him. But to by other Examples he made of such as conspired *Fredegonde* against him, the Emperor *Mauritius* ing for some time solicited him upon very advantageous terms to make a Descent into *Italy* to drive out *Lombards*, he at length marched thither with a powerful Army; nevertheless he was well beaten by brave *Antaris* at the entrance of the *Alps*, and forced to retire. Neither had the second Army, which *Childebert* sent into *Italy* against the *Lombards*, any success, most of them having perished by Sickness and Famine: However *Antaris* thought it best to propose to the *French* some annual Presents to leave him in peace.

Now *Childebert* having discovered another of the Assassins, whom *Fredegonde* had sent to murder him, it gave him occasion to inquire into the old Conspiracy whereby the Bishop of *Rheims* was detected, convicted by his own and others Confessions, deposed and banished to *Strasburg*, the King, upon the petition of other Bishops, having spared his Life.

In the mean time some Princes of *Bretagne*, contrary to their Oaths, having ravaged the Bishopricks of *Rheims* and *Nants*, which belonged to K. *Gontran*, he dispatched *Ebracair* and *Boubelene* with an Army against them; but the second being deserted by the first upon the first point of the business, the other on the third day of fight was at length destroyed with all his Men; the King awarded his Heirs the Estate of *Ebracair*, and made them some amends for their Loss.

But now to close with the Actions of this Prince, whom we find nothing else that is very remarkable: *593.* or, as some will have it, two years after, he died at *Chaalons*, and died the 28th of *March*, in the 39th or 32d year of his Reign, and the 68th of his Age.

K. Gon-
tran's
Death and
Character.
593.

all his Children, only one Daughter called *Clotilda*, a Nun, survived him, so that he left all his Dominions to *Childebert*, and little or nothing to *Clotair*, tho he was his Godfather. He was undoubtedly the best of the four Brothers, pious, charitable, a Lover of Justice and the Publick Good, respectful to the Churches and Prelates; but inconstant, timorous, suspicious, and easy to be flattered, and transported with Choler, which but too frequently gave him cause to repent.

Childebert now grown very potent by the Death of his Uncle, thought to have made an easy Prey of young *Clotair*, and his Mother *Fredegonde*, who was hated by all the *French*; but this subtil and courageous Woman sparing no Cost nor Artifice, regained the most alienated Minds, and engaged them to her Service: She appeared every where, carried her Son along with her, and holding him up, sometimes in her Arms, shewed him to the Soldiers and People, which animated them with Compassion for his Innocence. Thus with their faithful Assistance, and the Conduct of *Landry*, Mayor of the Palace, she not only obstructed the Progress of *Childebert's* Army, but defeated them in *Soissonois*, with the loss of 3000 men; tho *Clotair* however could not prevent *Childebert* from tearing away some Towns in the farthest part of his Kingdom. And now *Childebert* having extirpated the *Warnes* or *Garnes*, some-
594

time since settled in *Friesland* and *Holland*, who rebelled against him; he and his Wife the following year were both snatched out of the World near the same time, in the 25th year of his Age, and 20th of his Reign, being succeeded by his two Sons, *Theodebert* in *Austrasia*, and *Thierry* in *Burgundy* and the Kingdom of *Orleans*.
Childebert's Death. 595.

All the Kingdoms of *France* being now in the hands of three minor Kings, under the tutelage of two Women, viz. *Brunehaud* and *Fredegonde*, the last more active and fortunate than the other, took the Field to regain *Paris*, and other Places taken by *Childebert*, which was happily effected; but she died not long after at the Age of 50 or 55. leaving her Son's Affairs in a condition to defend themselves alone. And now for the other Virago *Brunehaud*, after she had removed the *Huns* by the force of Money out of *Thuringia*, she proved

Wars be-
tween the
Kings.

ed extreme covetous, and her Revenge tending
wards the filling of her Coffers, she laid
the Lives of the wealthiest Subjects, and, amon
thers, Duke *Wintrion* suffered; but her Con
last grew so unsupportable to the *Austrasians*, t
haled her by force to the Frontiers of the *Ka*
clothed only in Rags, and there leaving her,
man that knew her, conducted her to her Son *Th*
Chalons, who received her both with Joy and In
tion together, and bestowed the Bishoprick of
upon her Conductor. The two young Brothers
while could not forget the loss of *Paris*, and
Places upon the *Seine*, which *Clotair* had forced
them, and therefore they resolved to attack him
Clotair bravely meeting them upon the Banks
Arouane, gave them battel, but unhappily lost t
and almost 30000 men, and fled to *Paris*, the
the Forest of *Arelaune*. In short, he was force
fear of losing all, to yield to them the greatest
his Kingdom; all that lay between the *Loire* an
Seine, as far as the Sea, being given to *Thierry*,
Theodebert the Dutchy of *Dentelen*. However,
these Controversies the *Gascoigns* planted themse
that part of *France*, since called according to
Name.

Brune-
haud's In-
trigues.

Brunehaud had all the Power in young *Th*
Court, and not only made him taste of all sorts of
sure, whereby to preserve her Authority, but
Great Grandmother her self, yet would taste
the Pleasures of Love with a young Lord name
tades, of *Roman*, i. e. of *Gaulish* Extract, wh
must needs raise to the high Office of Mayor
Palace, and therefore got *Bertoald*, the then l
to be sent to gather the Imposts in *Neustria*, ne
taken from *Clotair*; where being opposed, and p
by *Landry* as far as *Orleans*, *Thierry* himself ca
support him, and engaging in a Battel at the Pal
the *Eftampes*, tho *Landry* was there utterly r
yet *Bertoald* being killed, *Brunehaud* had her desir
she confer'd his Imployment upon *Protades*.

Theodebert had at the same time taken the F
gainst *Clotair*, to whom he grants a Peace, desiri
preserve him for a time of need against his Br
Th

Thierry, who likewise, and perhaps upon the same consideration, did some time after make his Accommodation with *Clotair*. Old *Bruneband* being all this while uneasy for the Outrage she received by *Theodebert*, or his Lords, excited *Thierry*, under pretence he was not his Brother, but a Gardiner's Son, to take up arms to deprive him both of his Crown and Life: But as the Armies were encamped near each other, the King's Vassals desirous of an Accommodation, slew *Bruneband* in his Tent for opposing it. His Death *Bruneband* revenged so severely upon the Authors of it, that the Bishop of *Lyons* thought himself obliged by his Pastoral Office to make some publick Remonstrance of it to her, the effect of which was, that this second *Jezabel* caused him first to be degraded and banished, and two years after he was stoned to death by her Guards. Not content with this, she opposed the King's marrying with the Daughter of *Bertric* King of the *Frisians*; and because the Abbot *Colomban*, from a Principle of Conscience, would have promoted it, she procured his Banishment, as she did the Death of *Bilchild*, the Wife of King *Theodebert*, and the War that was now kindled between the two Brothers. *Theodebert* was indeed a Prince more stupid and cruel than valiant, and began it to his own Misfortune; for having taken *Alsatia* and *Suntgow* from *Tergow* and *Thi-*
om. under pretence that he reassumed them as he

Wars between the two Brothers.

Thierry
poisoned,
&c.

612.

must expect to be forced to it. But *Clotair* having scoffed at his Threats, he made all his Forces march that way, when a sudden Death put a period to all Designs, and made his Army retire home again. He must know he having a design to marry his Brother's Daughter *Bertoaire*, and *Brunehaud* taking upon her to dissuade him from it, he severely reproached her with all the wicked Actions she had put him upon, which would then, had he not been held, have run thro' ; but she cunningly dissembling her Resentment took a fit time to poison him, whereby he died, he had reigned 17 years, and lived 26. He had Bastard Sons, of whom *Sigebert* had the Kingdom of *Austrasia* left him, and *Childebert* that of *Burgundy*. *Brunehaud*, for the preservation of her Authority was forward to have this Distribution continued ; some *Austrasian* and *Burgundian* Lords assuring *Clotair* of their Suffrages, he marching thitherward accordingly, she sent to warn him out of *Austrasia*, her Godson's Territories. But he answered, the Succession after *Thierry's* Death, belonged to him, to the exclusion of Bastards, and protested to stand to the Judgment of the Lords of those Kingdoms ; but she unwilling to trust to that, sent *Sigebert* with an Army as far as the Plains of *Chalons* to oppose him ; and when they were ready to engage, *Sigebert's* men, upon Signal given, instead of a Charge sounded a Retreat and when they were got to the Banks of the *Soane* they delivered him up, with his Brothers *Corby* and *Meroveus*, to *Clotair*, while *Childebert* saved himself by the Swiftnefs of his Horse, tho' it was never known what became of him. *Brunehaud* was also soon taken in the Castle of *D'Urbe*, and the same moment *Sigebert* and *Corby* had their Throats cut ; but *Meroveus* who was *Clotair's* Godson, had his Life spared, he was made a Monk. That done, *Brunehaud*, in a Military Assembly being cried out against, as deserving Death, and the most exquisite Torments, she was racked for three days, then led thro' the whole Camp upon a Camel, and afterwards fastened to the Tail of an unbacked Mare, who beat out her Brains, and dragged her over Stones and Briers, tore her in pieces ; the others say she was tore in pieces by four wild Horses.

The terrible
Death
of *Brunehaud*.

613.

Thus for the second time were all the parts of *France* Clotair restored to one hand, tho *Austrasia* and *Burgundy* King alone. would still retain the title of Kingdoms and distinct Officers. Clotair therefore, after having quieted some domestick Jars, and having no more Enemies, made it his whole business to regulate his Kingdom, and establish Law and Justice: Such as had been unjustly dispossess'd, he restored to their Estates; he abolished Impôts laid without the Peoples Consent by *Bruneband* and *Thierry*, recalled all exorbitant Grants, resumed all that had been usurp'd or alienated from the Demesnes of the Crown: Likewise, that he might keep peace abroad, he discharged the *Lombards* of the 12000 Crowns of Gold owing him for Tribute, provided they paid down only what was due for three years. His good Actions. 614, &c.

Queen *Bertrude*, an excellent Princess, dying Anno 620. and the King having married *Sichilda*, he grew so jealous of her, that he caused the Lord *Boson* to be put to death upon that account. However, he neglected not to take care of the Education of his Son *Dagobert*, whom he committed to the Tuition of *Arnold* Bishop of *Metz*. But as *Austrasia* was more exposed to barbarous Nations than the other parts of *France*, Dagobert Clotair gave this Kingdom to *Dagobert* under the Guardianship of *Pepin* the old, who was Mayor of the Palace, and *Arnold* Bishop of *Metz*; but reserved to

628.

The Saxons by this time were grown a ple, bearing different Names, and having Dul Country ; and those of them that owed Tri French, this year revolted : So that L ing war upon them, was wounded with a which cut off part of his Helmet, and a of the Skin of his Head, with some of insomuch that 'tis said, when he sent these bloody to his Father, who was hunting near the King moved by his good nature, drew wh he could together, and having passed the l tacked the Saxons incamped on the other si Weser, where he slew Bertold their Duke with Hand, and then scouring all the Country, any one of them alive that was taller tl It happened about this time in the Assembly of *Neustria* and *Burgundy* held at *Clichy*, there a great Quarrel : *Eginairus* Intendant of *Aribert* lace, K. *Clotair's* second Son, having been slain l na's People, the Favourite of this King, the Prince and his Uncle *Brunnulp* would revenge his so that *Egina* and his Friends incamping at *Martre*, the King commanded the *Burgundians* upon the first that began to stir, which brought Parties to a better temper.

And now we come to close the last Scene of *Clotair's* Life, who died in one of his Houses near in the year 628. and was buried at *St. Vincent* called *St. Germain des Prez* ; the time of his R *Neustria*, within four months of the time of being about five and forty years, and his Re *France*, after *Thierry's* Death, fourteen. He *Clotair's* Death and *Sons* behind him, *Dagobert* and *Aribert*, of w *Character.* thers we cannot certainly tell, but only that not both of one and the same Bed. He was Prince, very different from the cruel and brutun ty of his Predecessors, pious, just, of good Lit and liberal, especially towards the Church, and professed a Monastick Life.

C H A P. III.

The Reign of DAGOBERT I.

Dagobert in *Neustria*, } *Aribert* in part of *A-*
Austrasia, &c. } *Aquitain*.

PRINCE *Aribert* being with *Clotair* at his Death, it might have been thought that in his Brother's absence in *Austrasia*, he should with his Father's Treasure have raised Men and Friends enough to have seized the Kingdom, but he was young, and his Mother's Brother *Brunolph* endeavoured in vain to engage the *Neustrians* in his Quarrel; and he and *Aribert* had no better way left than to go and meet, and submit themselves to *Dagobert*, who however out of pity, and according to the Advice of the *French* Lords, gave him *Santonge*, *Perigord*, *Agenois*, *Tholonsain*, and all the third *Aquitain*; and *Aribert* made *Tholouse* the place of his Royal Residence.

629.

Now as soon as *Dagobert* had been acknowledged in *Neustria*, he went to visit *Burgundy*; and being at *St. John de Laone* he heard the Complaints of the People, administered Justice to all his Subjects, and took care to compose their differences; all which it seems were but to cover a villanous Murder, for which perhaps he had undertaken this Journey, for going one Morning to the Bath, he commanded three Lords to kill *Brunolph*, that had attended him thither: And a little time after the young King, at the Instigation of some *Neustrian* Lords, repudiated his Queen *Gomatrude* that was an *Austrasian*, under pretence of barrenness, to marry *Nantilda*, one that served him; by which means *Ega* Mayor of the *Neustrian* Palace, got the Preference in his favour: But *Nantilda* did not long enjoy her Husband's Affections, for the King going to *Austrasia*, and delighting to shew himself with great Pomp in those Provinces, he took the beautiful Virgin *Raguetrude* in her room; and not long after he married two Women more, called *Wlfegunde* and *Bertechilda*, and took as many Mistresses as himself

Dagobert's
Cruelty.

Covetous.

self had a mind to. Indeed it was natural Prince of six and twenty amorous, but a Nature that at that Age he should have such a Heart as nothing can satisfy: However upon monstrances of St. *Amand*, he somewhat restrained the heat of his Avarice, and took *Nantila* with whom he lived the rest of his days. In mean time having a Son by *Ragetrude* the he married her, the Child was baptized at being held at the Font by *Aribert*, who died at *Tholouse*; and his Son *Chilperic* survived him but a few days, it being suspected *Dagobert* had contributed to his Death, and resumed *Aquitain*.

631.

A base
Massacre
by the
French.

It happening about this time that some Franchs who traded with the *Sclavonians* were returning and having no Redress, *Dagobert* with the King *Lombards* and Duke of the *Almains*, attacked jointly on the one hand, whilst the *Austrasians* assaulted them on the other; but these latter dissatisfied with *Dagobert*, for removing his Residence to *Neustria*, failed so in their Duty, that the *Franchs* were emboldened to make Incursions into *Thuringia*, and other Countries belonging to the *Franchs*. But what seemed yet to be a worse action in the war, that about 9000 *Bulgarians*, which were left by the *Avars*, their Enemies in having by *Dagobert's* leave settled in *Bavaria* Estates of the Kingdom considered how to destroy them; the best Expedient they could find was to cut the Throats of them in one Night, which was but too punctually done, only 700 of them shifted to escape into *Sclavonia*.

But more particularly to King *Dagobert's* Actions; as he was raising great Forces to oppose Incursions which King *Samon* with his *Saxons* made into *Thuringia*, the *Saxons* offered to repeat on their own Peril and Charge, if *France* would forgive the 500 Bees Tributes, and the same was agreed; but they wanted either Strength or Faith to performance, and so the Country continued exposed to the Insolency of the *Barbarians*, and having assembled the Prelates and Lords of

the like disorders for the future,
f and his Kingdom to the

621.

n was in Peace, both within and 636.

; but *Dagobert* did not enjoy this

the second Year he was taken

at *Espinay*, one of his Royal Seats

the below *St. Denis*; and his Sick-

him, he made them carry him

e he died on the 17th of *July*, *Dagobert's*

very near 38 Years of Age, *Death and*

all but 16 Years; that is by *Character*.

in his Father's Life ne. and 10 628.

Character in the gross favours of too much Adultery. Indeed the Chronology begins to be very confused and uncertain in this Reign, for some will have that *Dagobert* died in 639, others in 643; some compute the 16 Years of his Reign from his Father's death, others from the Year he was made King of *Austrasia* and the best Historians are of the Opinion of the latter. Gold and Silver had been very scarce in *France* in the Reign of *Clovis* and his Children; after that, the Expeditions made by the *French* into *Italy*, the Pensions they drew from the Emperors in the *East*, and 'tis thought the Commerce they had with the Nations in the *Levant* brought great quantities thereof, as well as Jewels and the like. *France*, insomuch that the bravery and lustre of the Court was not inferior to that of the Emperors.

C H A P. IV.

The Reign of CLOVIS the Second

Pepin, and then Gri-	}	Sigebert King in
moald Mayors.		<i>Austrasia</i> .
Ega, then Erchinoald		Clovis 2. in Ne-
Mayors.	}	

638.

WE being from hence forward to behold the Regal Power in the Hands of the Mayors of the Palace; I have for that reason noted it as well as the Kings. Now *Pepin* who had been Mayor, being delivered by the Death of *Dagobert*, who had always kept him near himself, some honourable Pretence, got again into that in *Austrasia*, the same being surrendred to the Duke *Aldagaise*: And *Pepin* presently gave thereof to Bishop *Cunibert* his old Friend, who was Governour to *Sigebert*; and it was perhaps for that he transferred the Court and Royal Seat of *Austrasia* from *Metz* to *Cologne*; but he held not his power long, for in about a Year after his Re-

4. *The Reign of Clovis II:*

35

1, he fell sick and died. He was indeed a
 eminent both for his Honesty and Policy; he
 his Wife *Itta* or *Inberge* 3 Children, a Son
Grimoald, and two Daughters. Now *Grimoald*
 the Assistance of *Cunibert* got himself into pos-
 of the Office of Mayor of the Palace. *Otho*
 who was Fosterer of the young King, disputed
 him for 3 Years together; but *Grimoald* at last *Mayoralty*
 by it quietly, caused him to be slain by *Lentair* of the Pa-
 of the *Almains*. This is the first time that the *lace be-*
 descended from Father to Son, but hereafter *comes here-*
 all find the same hereditary.

ring this discord and minority of *Sigebert*, *Raoul*
 of *Thuringia* sets up for Sovereign, against whom
Austrasian Lords, together with the King himself,
 ed with their Forces thither to chastise him.
 st Earl in League with *Raoul*, and at the Head
 e *Slavonians*, having dared to come and meet
 was defeated and slain with most of his Men:
 ph hereupon retreating with his Forces, was be-
 d in a wooden Castle, upon a Hill nigh the
Onesrud; but a difference hapning between the
 Commanders, some went upon the attack,
 the rest remained about the King's Person in
 mp. All which being observed by *Radulph*, he

After Queen *Nantilda's* decease, the most remarkable thing we meet with in King *Clovis* his Re great Famine, which afflicted *Neustria*, and gred the King to take the great Silver Plates, wvered the Tabernacle or Chappel of St. *De Shrine*, to buy Bread for the Poor; a pious Act, and yet the Monks would have it, that verely punished him, by weakening and stupid Spirits: Indeed he had a weak Brain, and all scendants were tainted with that defect, but not then above 14 or 15 years old at most.

The Indigency of Authors in those times is and the stile of such as are handed down to confused, that we can hardly relate any thing tainty, either as to their Actions, or the t them. Some place the death of *Sigebert* King *Death and* *strasia* on the 1st of Feb. 650. after he had liv *Character.* little above 21 years: His merciful Disposition,

650.

tion, and ten or twelve Abbies which he built, quired him a Place in the Roll of the Saints: dy was buried in the Abby-Church of St. *M the Suburbs of Metz*, and thence transferred cy, when the *French* demolished it to main Siege against the Emperor *Charles V.* in 1552. but one Son, an Infant named *Dagobert*. *Ind moald* his Mavor of the Palace, gave out, that he had that Child, the King had adopted his *debert*, which is not at all likely, but the ra *Grimoald* did this, that he might have some usurp the Kingdom, as he really did, when he he had disposed things, so as he might under In the mean time young *Dagobert* bore the King for about two years, in which time I nothing memorable.

Dagobert
deposed.

653.

But towards the year 653, *Grimoald* imag 'tis probable, that he had now fully concert Measures, caused him to be shaven by the *Poitiers*, banished and transported into *Ireland* the Guard of some People, who we may had all imaginable Care to keep him concealed, fined to some remote Monastery; so that it w time before any News was heard of him: In t time his Mother Queen *Imnehild*, betook h

the Protection of King *Clovis*, with whom, as also with his Son *Childeric II.* she had a great Interest. This done, *Grimoald* confidently sets up his own Son *Grimoald* upon the Throne, and there are Proofs of some Regal *makes his* Acts he did ; but this Attempt lost him all the esteem *Son King* which the *Austrasians* had for the Memory of *Pepin*, of *Austca-* and they abhorred the Mayor and his Son to that de- *fia with ill* gree, that having taken them in some Ambuscades laid *Success.* for them, they carried *Grimoald* to *Paris* to *K. Clovis*, who caused him to be put to death ; tho others will have it, that he was only confined to a perpetual Imprisonment : However there was no more heard of him, neither is it known what became of his Son, or whether the *Austrasians* chose another Mayor ; tho perhaps *Ermold* executed that Office in all the Kingdoms, for since the decease of *Floachat* the *Burgundians* had created none.

Now *Clovis* reigns alone in all the *French* Kingdoms, tho indeed the Regal Power was but very faint ; for during these Minorities there being no Authority great enough to curb the Nobility, they audaciously undertook to do what they pleased, and commonly deciding their Quarrels by the Sword, they put the whole Kingdom into a Combustion. And here the Authors of those times accuse *Clovis* of giving himself up to a dissolute Life, as to Wine and Women, and make a

English Saxon Kings : By this *Batilda*, *Clovis* 1
Sons, *Clotair*, *Childeric*, and *Thierry* ; the
whom had the Kingdoms of *Neustria* and
and the second that of *Austrasia*, but *Thierry*
share assigned him.

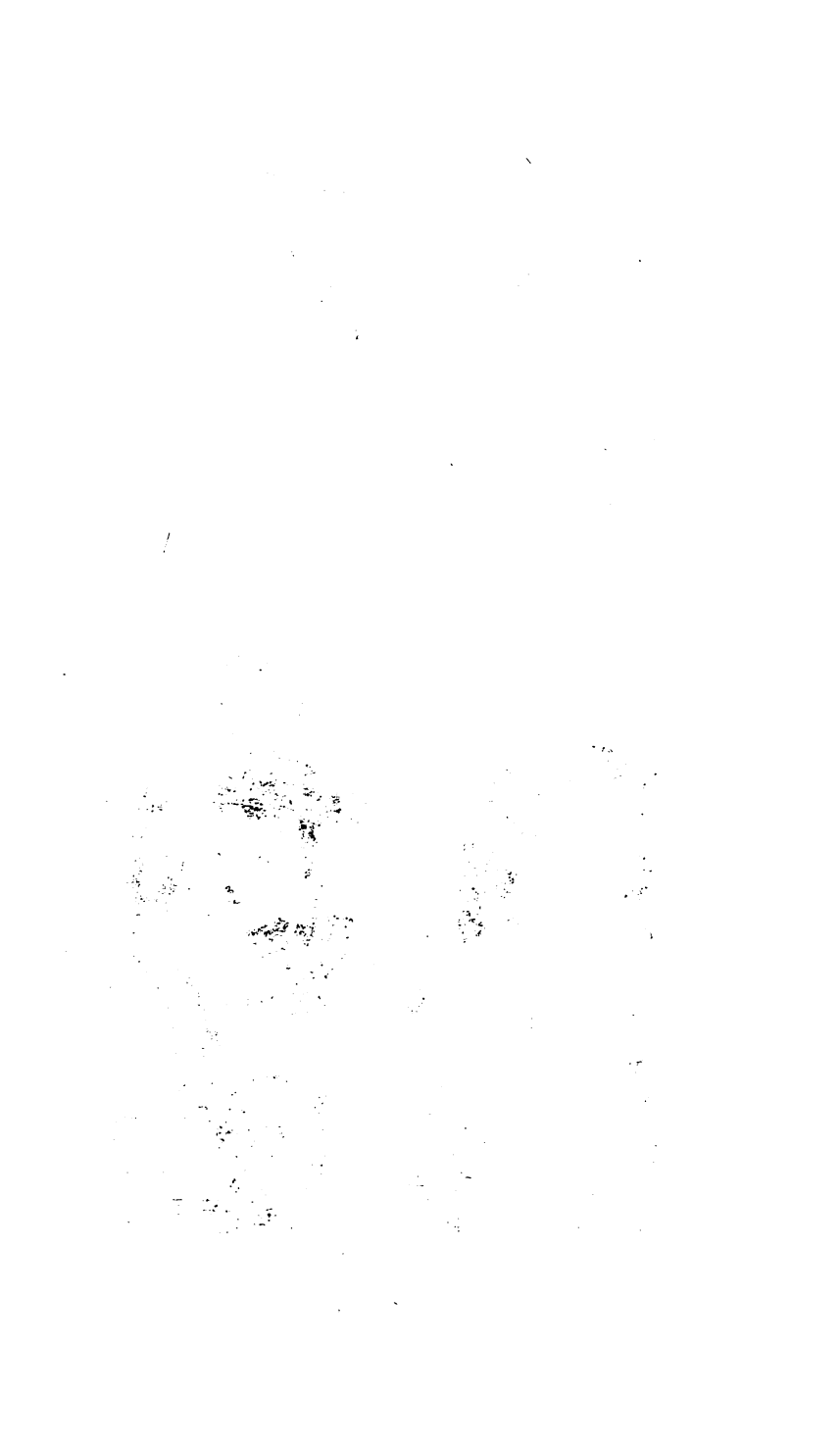
C H A P. V.

The Reign of CLOTAIR II

Ebroin Mayor. { *Clotaire* 3. in } { *Chil-*
 { *Neustria* and } { *straf-*
 { *Burgundy.* } { }

655. THE Government of *Erchinoald* Mayor
Palace ending with his Life, a short time
before or after that of *Clovis* ; he was succeeded
Ebroin, an active and valiant Person, and for I
reality to the Church accounted a good Man ;
that Reputation he lived for many years. In t
time Queen *Batilda* governed the Kingdom wi
Queen Ba- Goodness, Prudence and Justice ; so that for ten
tilda's good Regency. together there hapned no Trouble in her Son's
Now before her time the *Gauls*, as well the
that lay in their Cradles, as their Fathers, p
Tribute by way of Poll, which restrained man
marrying, or caused them to expose their Childr
which the good Queen discharged them, and
the *Jews* to buy and export such innocent Ch
way of Traffick into Foreign Parts ; nay she
several that those Infidels had already purch
ther was she less careful for the Affairs of the
for the Princes for some time past having
ney for Ecclesiastical Preferments, and t
selling by retail what they bought by t u
forbad such sacrilegious Traffick, founded tv
gious Houses, and endowed divers Churches ;
ter all she did in reality give too much Acc
Bishops either for the good of the Church or her
Reputation.





Among the rest there were two in great esteem, viz. *Deposed,*
and why.
 Leger Bishop of *Aulun*, and *Sigebrand*, which last was
 the Cause of so much ill Report concerning the Queen,
 that the Grandees got him put to death, without form
 of Law; the Consequence of which was the deposing
 the Queen herself from her Authority, wherein those
 whom she had most gratified with her Favours, became
 a Party; so that she was conducted to the Nunnery of
Chelles, of which she was the Foundress; wherein of
 a Queen, she became a simple Nun, and yet was more
 illustrious in her Humility, than she had been in all
 her exalted Grandeur, and there she lived till 686.
 'Tis thought *Ebroin* was at the bottom of the whole
 Conspiracy, who now set the Reins loose to his Avarice
 and Cruelty, and above all hated the Bishop of *Clotaire*
III. dies.
Aulun the Queen's Creature, and him that was best able
 to oppose his Designs. K. *Clotaire* having been about
 three years in the Power of this wicked Minister, died in the
 14th of his Reign, *Ann.* 668. without any Children, tho he
 was then 17 or 18 years old.

C H A P. VI.

The Reign of CHILDERIC II.

Thierry
killed.
669.

ary but the Horns of the Altar, from which he took him, and confined him only to a living and at the same time shaved King Thierry, him Prisoner to the Monastery of St. Dennis, had reigned near a year in *Neustria*. And on the fifth time, the whole Monarchy of *France* united under one Head in the Person of *Charlemagne*, while *Wlfoad* remained Mayor in *Austrasia*, and bore, if not the Title, at least the Office in *Northern* and *Burgundy*. The good Laws of former Kings, having by this time been much corrupted, it was that the Judges, Counts and Dukes should observe ancient Customs of the Country, and those Employments should not be perpetual, lest they should become tyrannical: But some wicked Favourites brought young King, by plunging him into the Debauchery of Wine and Women, on to violate them, without Knowledge and against the Opinion of *Leger*; his Enemies for all that imputing the same to him, were obliged in his own Justification, to use the King's Freedom, and threaten him with Divine Vengeance for the Enormities he was guilty of; but the Favours he had still the Ascendency, this did but heighten the displeasure of his Prince against him. Inasmuch as *Childeric* being at *Autun* to celebrate the Feast of St. Martin, and his Sycophants persuading him that the Count and one *Hector* Patrician of *Marseilles* had conspired against him, he furiously ran into the Baptistery to kill him: Upon this, they endeavouring to save themselves by flight, *Hector* was killed by the way, and the Bishop taken and confined to *Luxen*, where he was reconciled to *Ebroin*; the Wolf and the Lamb living together under the same Roof, for fear of a terrible Power, and because they had nothing to decide betwixt them.

But the good Bishop had not been there long, before the King sent two Dukes to drag him out, and hurry him to Court to be sacrificed to his Revenge; and about the same time having caused the Lord *Bodillon* to be tied to a Post and whipped, the Nobility resented this outrage as if done to themselves; and therefore conspired to waylay him in his return from hunting in the Forest of *Lechonia*, *Bodillon* the most furious of all the rest, was

Childeric
dissolute.

his own hand massacred him with his Queen *Bilechild*, Childeric who was big with child, as also a Son of theirs that *slain*. was very young. However *Wlfoad*, Mayor of the *673*. Palace, made his escape strangely into *Austrasia*. The exact time of this King's Reign is not certain, tho the most probable opinion is, that it was fifteen years in *Austrasia*, and three in *Neustria* and *Burgundy*. Not many years since, as they were repairing the Church of *St. Germain des Prez*, they found two Tomb-stones by one another, in one the Body of a Man, and in the other a Woman's with a little Child, and the Inscription bearing *Childeric's* Name. This, with some Regal Ornaments therein, discovered them to be the Tombs of this King and Queen.

This tragical Death was followed by an *Interregnum*, *An Interregnum*. and Confusion in the three Kingdoms. The Nobles conducted Bishop *Leger* to *Autun*, where the Citizens and Lords of *Burgundy* made a League to defend him, in case any Attempt should be made upon his Life during this *Interregnum*. It's indeed now likely that most of the *Austrasians*, by the perswasion of *Immichilda*, *Sigebert* the Second's Wife, recalled her Son *Dagobert* before-mentioned out of *Ireland*, and acknowledged him King of *Austrasia* many years; whereas the Lords of *Neustria* and *Burgundy*, that they might not fall into an Anarchy, took *Thierry* out of the Monastery of *St. Dennis* set him on the Throne, and for Mayor of

C H A P. VII.

The Reign of THIERRY I.

Leudesia, then } *Thierry in Neu-* } *Dagobert in Au-*
Ebroin May- } *stria and Bur-* } *strasia.*
 ors. } *gundy.* }

Ebroin's
ill Proceed-
ings.

E*Ebroin* having left *Luxen*, threw off his Religious Habit, a thing in those days look'd upon to be very hainous, tho a man took it up by Compulsion and having formed a design to seize upon the Government again, he drew together as many of *Leger's* Enemies as he could, and making a League with *Wilfo* Mayor of *Austrasia*, who was a mortal Hater of the Bishop, he took the Field, and suddenly fell into *Neustria* to surpris *Thierry* and *Leudesia*; but failing in the Enterprize, he applied himself to Policy, and under colour of an Accommodation, having engaged *Leudesia* to come to a Conference, he laid an Ambush for him by the way, where he was assassinated; but for all this failing of getting himself restored to his Office, when he was returned to *Austrasia*, he, by the advice of the two deposed Bishops of *Chaalons* and *Valence*, spread a Report that *Thierry* was dead, in order to impose upon the Nation; and with this Statue he proceeds to force the People to swear Fealty to him, and ruined all those Countries that refused. He more particularly by the Duke of *Campaigne* attacked *Leger* in *Autun* and when the Bishop could by no means be brought to betray his Trust by a Surrendry, he was at last necessitated to go out and surrender himself to the Duke who caused his eyes to be put out, and confin'd him to a Monastery. The *Grande*es of *Neustria* and *Burgundy*, as it were losing all Courage, hereupon accepted *Ebroin* for Mayor of *Thierry's* Palace, when having no more need of his false *Clovis*, he took off his Vizars and returned him to a private condition. *Ebroin* being

gh in Power, his Tyranny had no bounds; and other Methods, he, under a specious pretence of ing his Cruelty as far as he pleased, applied to detect all that had a hand in *Childeric's* tho none rejoiced more at it than himself; among others, *Leger*, and his Brother Count *Gue-*ng brought in, he caused the last to be stoned to at a Stake, and the other to have the Soles of t torn out, and his Lips cut, and then he was d for two years under one of his Guards to the tery of *Feschamp*. Not content herewith, he ime after called an Assembly of Bishops (many om were but too ready to flatter and coun- e him in his Tyranny) and besides the Pu- ents inflicted upon some other Prelates, against he had a particular Peak, he procured them to ce him to have his Garment tore from top to n, which was the manner of Degradation, and ards delivered him over to be put to death, which xecuted by *Cradebert* Count of the Palace, in the t of *Iveline*.

about this time died *Dagobert* King of one part of *King Da-*
ra, after an ill Reign, as some will have it; the *gobert's*
Authors make him to live many years longer, and *Death.*
to him a Son and Daughter, without any proofs 680.
tainty: And a little before his Decease, *Wilfoad*
lived ended his Days after he had enjoyed his

Ebroin
lain.

682.

less taken the Reliques; but when they had got him there, *Ebroin's* Soldiers surrounded him and his Men and cut them all to pieces: So that now the whole Government of *Austrasia* remained in *Pepin*. However *Ebroin* did not long survive to enjoy the benefit of his Victory; for having unjustly and tyrannically disposed the Lord *Hermenfroy* of his Estate, armed with Revenge, the said Lord watched him one morning before break of day, at his going from home to Church and cleaving his Head with a Sword, afterwards made his escape into *Austrasia*. He was succeeded by *Varaton*, a wife old Man, who associating his Son *Wimer*, a crafty, bold, rough and choleric Person, in the Administration, he presently breaks the Treaty on foot by his Father with *Pepin*, and marches as far as *Namur*, and at his return was seized with a Distemper whereof he died; which made way for the restoring of the old Man to his Office again, tho' *Dea* disposed him also in about a year after, being succeeded by *Berthier*, his Wife's Son-in-law, a little, ill shaped, hair-brain'd, unjust, proud, covetous Fellow that had neither Wit nor Judgment, which made many of the *Neustrians* forsake him the very next year, and enter into an Alliance with *Pepin*.

684.

This Lord advised the exiled Persons to send to the King to implore a Pardon for what was past, in a very submissive manner; and when the same was rejected he brought them back to their own Country with an Army, and fought *Thierry* and his Mayor at *Tert* between *St. Quentin* and *Peronne*, wherein he was voured with a compleat Victory, seized the King's Treasure, and then *Paris* and *Thierry* himself in upon which *Berthier*, on whom all the *Odium* just fell, was knocked on the head. Some put an end to the Reign of the *Merovignians* here, since all but the Throne of King fell into the power of *Pepin* and his Children. He was owned Mayor of the Palace thro' all *France* and took upon himself the Title of Duke or Commander of the *French*, according to the antient usage of the *Germans*, and he commanded and acted all under the King's Name. The *French* found no prejudice by this Change, the Interest of a new Prince, who desired to establish himself, being to gain the Affections of the People.

Pepin
Mayor, and
his great
Actions.

: And indeed he repaired the Breaches made in
 Reigns all he could, restored what had been
 from the Church, the Bishops to their Sees, the
 to their Lands and Dignities, resolved upon
 g without the advice of the Lords and Bishops,
 led the Cause of the Oppressed, Widows and
 ans, and applied himself to give vigour to the
 which are the only Shields for the Weak against
 ighty. The second year of his Command he
 the Militia together, and by the advice of the
 lity made War in *Friesland*, where he compelled
 Duke or K. *Ratbod*, who had revolted, to submit
 pay Tribute; and at his return he called a Coun-
 to consider of means for redressing the Abuses of
 Government. But to close this Reign, poor *Thi-*
 being stripp'd of the exercise of all Regal Power,
 reduced to be content with a moderate Revenue
 lands, ended his days in 690, or 91. having lived
 or 40 years, and reigned 17. He left two Sons
 and him, *Clovis* and *Childebert*, who succeeded

Thierry's
Death.
 690.

C H A P. VIII.

free, while on the other hand, the *Aquitani*ans and *Gascogners*, created each a Sovereign Duke of their own, and the *Bretons* enlarged their narrow Limits. *Clovis*, according to some, reigned but two years, tho others, with more probability, assign him four compleat, he

Clovis I's dying about the end of 694, or beginning of 695. at
Death. the Age of about 15, and neither had seen or done any
 694, or 95. thing that was memorable in his Reign.

 BOOK






B O O K III.

C H A P. I.

Reign of CHILDEBERT II.

LOVIS was succeeded by his Brother *Childebert*, called the Young, and who because of his Minority, was yet reduced to a lesser Scantling of Allowance than his Brother had. The Great Officers, as the Count of the Paganellor, Intendant of the Royal Houses, with the Mayor, the King having only a small of Domesticks, who served rather as Spies, and than Officers: Nay, these Kings were usually to a House of Pleasure, from whence they went forth once a year to shew themselves to the Assembly of the Estates held the first of May. There happening very little remarkable for the first part of this King's Reign, besides



Childe-
bert's
Death.
711.

Willehair, who was beaten in two Expeditions thither by *Pepin*: But not being able to subdue the Country, he found it necessary to send a third Army thither; but when they were on march, he was obliged to recall them, because of *Childebert's* Death, which happened April 15, the Age of 28, when he had reigned 16 or 17. Some attribute two Sons to him, viz. *Dagobert* and *Childeric*; the first succeeded him, and the second was bred up to Learning, and surnamed *Daniel*.

C H A P. II.

The Reign of DAGOBERT

UPON the Decease of *Childebert*, *Pepin* chose of *Dagobert* his eldest Son to succeed him by the Counsel and Approbation of the States after he had caused him to preside, and that he received the Presents of the *French*, recommended of the Rights of the Church, of Widows and Orphans, renewed the Law against Rapine, and commanded his Army to hold themselves in a readiness to go on any occasion required, he sent him back to one of the Royal Palaces, to be bred and entertained in all the appearance with great respect, tho in reality he had no Power nor Function.

712.

Pepin, the first year of his Reign, undertook an Expedition against the *Germans*, whom he found at this time, that they remained quiet many years; but not being able after many Wars wholly to subdue them, he made an agreement with *Ratbod* Duke of *Friesland*, he not only made an agreement, but likewise allied himself to him by marrying his Son *Grimoald* to that Prince's Daughter while *Pepin* remained at *Jupile*, he fell into a troublesome Distemper, and his Son *Grimoald* visited him, and passing by *Liege* to make some visit for him on *St. Lambert's* Tomb, he was assassinated by a Rascally *Frieslander* named *Rangaire*, which on some occasion to attribute the Fact to *Rangaire*.

Father-in-law, without any authority for it: But *Pepin* being recovered, severely revenged his Son's Death upon all the Accomplices he could lay hold on; and the rather, because he loved him the best of any of his Sons, tho he had also a great regard for his natural Son *Theodoald*, and obliged the *Neustrian* Nobility to chuse him for their Mayor. However, *Pepin*, some months after, fell into a most grievous Relapse, insomuch that he departed this Life Decemb. 16. having governed all *France*, from the Battel of *Tertry* in 687. to his dying Day, with great Success, but with much greater Vertue, of which the most eminent was his Zeal for the propagation of the Faith, wherein he spared no means to plant it in the Countries beyond the *Rhine*, whose Inhabitants were at this time Heathens and Idolaters. Besides *Drogon* and *Grimoald*, he had two Sons more, who were *Charles Martel* and *Childerbrand*; but the Mother of the last is not known; tho a very exact Historian has proved that *Robert* the strong, who was the paternal Great Great-Grandfather of King *Flugh Capet*, was descended from him by the Masculine Line.

Pepin's Death and Character

714

Now whether *Pepin* left the Mayoralty of *Austrasia* to *Arnold* the Son of *Drogon*, as that of *Neustria* to *Theodoald*, or that changing his mind a little before his Death, he bestowed the Office upon *Charles* for all the three Kingdoms, or perhaps only the Name of Prince of the *French*, which seems to be above that of Mayor; his Widow *Plectrude* seiz'd upon the whole Government, and by a Stratagem getting *Charles* into her hands, she kept him prisoner at *Cologn*, where she usually resided. But the *Neustrians* already weary of the Dominion of the *Austrasians*, were yet more impatient of being governed by a Woman; and therefore taking up Arms, they put their King *Dagobert* at the head of their Troops, to prevent her coming in the name of *Theodobald* to usurp the Government of their Country. Now the Army that conducted *Theodobald* being near *Compeign*, the *Neustrians* fell upon and routed them, all the *Austrasians* could do being only to save *Theodobald*, while the other after their Victory chose *Rainfroy* for their Mayor, a Man of the most considerable Quality and Valour amongst them, and who the

E

more

more to perplex the *Austrasians*, made a League wth *Ratbod* Duke of the *Frizons*, and led *K. Dagobert* ravage *Austrasia* as far as the *Meuse*.

715.

Dagobert
his Death
and Suc-
cessor.

It happening therefore that the *Austrasians* at time were in a great Consternation and Confusion *Charles* luckily made his escape out of prison, and ingot his Friends together, was received with indible Joy by all his People. And about the end of same Year *Dagobert* King of *Neustria* dying, after had been a Property to the Mayors for four or five y he left one Son named *Thierry*, yet an Infant, be him; and the same was afterwards surnamed *Chelles*, the Place where he was brought up: And immediately hereupon, *Rainfroy*, that he might have a Name, der which he might maintain his Office and Government, took *Daniel* out of the Monastery, made King with the Concurrence of the Nobility, named him *Chilperic*. Indeed it is not certainly I whose Son he was, some believing him to have *Childebert's*, others *Thierry's*, and some again the of that *Chilperic* who was assassinated by *B* Anno 673. But if this last Opinion prevail, he least forty four years old when he began his Reign.

C H A P. III.

The Reign of CHILPERIC II.

Chilperic II. in *Neustria*.

Rainfroy Mayor.

Charles, Mayor Prince in one part *Austrasia*.

Theodobald under *trude's* Regency the other.

716.

Rainfroy and *Ratbod*, by virtue of a League the preceding year, fell both upon *Charles*; the last having entred his Country as far as *Co March*, they engaged in a very bloody Battel, proved at last disadvantageous to *Charles*;

3. *The Reign of Chilperic II:*

51

ost the only Defeat he met with in the whole of his Life. Hereupon the *Friezlanders* and with joint Forces ravaged the open , and laid Siege to *Cologn* where *Plestrude* with Money caused them to draw off. in the mean time having rallied his Men, Charles Ambush for *Rainfroy* in his Return, beat and *successful*. d part of his Army, and next Year in his turn Irruption into *Neustria*, where *Rainfroy* and giving him Battel at the Village of *Vincial* in resis upon the 20th of *March*, the same after a Success for a long time ended in *Charles's* far he put *Rainfroy* to the rout, and pursued st as far as *Paris*. At his Return *Austrasia* him for their Head, *Cologn* opened him her and *Plestrude* was forced to give him up his *Pepin's* Treasure, together with his Grand i *Theodobald*, *Hugh* and *Arnold*, whom he kept strong Guard : But tho he had all these Ad- t, yet wanting the Name of a King, he gave le to one *Clotair*, who was of the Royal and is supposed by some to be the Son of III. not long since deceased, tho perhaps he ve been the Son of *Clovis* II. the Son of *Dago-*

Rainfroy finding but little Assistance from the

too much accustomed to that Name to lay it as if he made Peace with *Eudes*, and got *Chilperic* whom he caused to be owned for King thro all three Kingdoms, that so he might be Mayor o Pope *Gregory* calls him Duke and Mayor of the lace of *France*, which shews he esteemed himself an Officer of the Kingdom, and not of the King.

Now of all the People tributary to *France*, *Saxons* were the most potent; for they had not thrown off the Yoke, but bore hard upon the *Bri Attuarii* and the *Thuringians*, which brought *As* with his Forces 3 or 4 times thither to quell tho that Honour was reserved for *Charles* the Gr And here 'tis worthy of Observation, that they divided into several distinct People, and that they almost as many Dukes as there were Countries being to them. *France* also during this Prince's Ku began to be incommoded with the Arms of the *A* cens from *Spain*, where they had fixed a Com but of them you will hear more by and by, and

Chilperic's death. *Chilperic*, who lived not above two Years after 721. re-establishment, and reigned five or six in all.

C H A P. IV.

The Reign of THIERRY II.

CHILPERIC was no sooner dead, but that would ever have an Image to amuse the ple, caused *Thierry* or *Theoderic* II. the Son of *Lebert* II. to be inaugurated King; and when he duced *Rainfroy*, and put him to death or at least him from his Mayoralty of *Neustria*, he had or five Years together divers Wars with the *Germans* and *Bavarians*; and in 725. he re *Hubert* Duke of *Bavaria* and all his Country, carried along with him *Bilistrude* and her Niece child; the first of whom is thought by some to be same with the forementioned *Plectrude*, that had

drawn hither, to procure him fresh troubles ; tho she seems rather to have been Sister to *Odillon* Duke of *Bavaria* ; but whoever she was, *Martel* some time after married her Niece.

After divers Wars against the People beyond the Rhine, happened that against *Aquitain*. Duke *Eudes* having violated the Treaty with *Charles*, and made a League with *Munuxa* the *Saracen*, who was Governor of the *Spanish* Countries on this side the *Hebrus*, but revolted from *Isam* the *Caliph* ; *Charles* having Intelligence hereof falls suddenly into *Aquitain*, and sacked the Country as far as the *Garonne* : But *Abderamen* General to the *Caliph Isam* in *Spain*, having vanquished and taken *Munuxa* Prisoner, fell into *Aquitain* also, ravaged the Country, and sacked *Bordeaux*, which made *Eudes* reconcile himself to *Martel*, and go and join his Forces with him ; but *Abderamen* would not allow him time, for pressing still forwards, he passed the River *Dordogne* to attack him in his Camp ; the Duke stood his Ground, and fought with exceeding great bravery, but at last was overcome with great loss, however he made a shift to retreat with some few Troops to *Martel's* Army now past the *Loire*, and incamped near *Tours*, tho others will have it to be a little on this side *Poitiers*. In the mean time *Abderamen* following his Blow when he had sacked *Poitiers*, marched directly to *Tours* ; but

ken Camp, they did not pursue them.

This News was soon dispersed into all the Countre of *Christendom*, and wrought unspeakable Joy in Hearts of the People in all parts, as well as gai *Martel* a great Reputation; but he did not use of this great Advantage as he might have done for instead of pursuing it, he applied himself to secure every thing that cast but the least shadow his Grandeur, and wrought great confusion in Church by banishing divers Prelates, and best Abbies and Bishopricks upon his Captains.

The Kingdom of *Burgundy* did not as yet Commands, but it was not long after he conquered the *Saracens* before he marched directly thither, brought all the Country into subjection. With the Expedition he conquered the *Frisons*, killed the Duke *Popon*, subdued the *Ostergow* and *Westergow* pulled down all their Temples, sacred Groves: Idols, and covered all the Land with Slaughter

735. Destruction. The Year following the Duke of *Aquitain*, now out of danger, and repenting him of disadvantageous Treaty he had made with *Charles* to procure his Assistance against the *Saracens*, revolted and *Charles* fell a third time into his Country, but not able to catch him, made a great Ravage in Territories, and returned. In the mean time having put an end to the Duke's misfortunes, by which he bestowed upon his Son *Harlon* the Count of *Poitiers*, and upon *Humond* all the rest of the first and second *Aquitain*; *Charles* who would have been other Partaker, ravaged it again with an Army, marching quite to the *Garonne* seized upon *Blaye* and some other places, so that *Humond* was forced to submit, and receive the Duchy from him as he had before from his Father, giving his Oath both to him and to his Son *Pepin*. This done, he not only made sure of *Provence*, and put Governors into *Arles* and *Marseilles* but from thence turned upon the *Saxons* beyond *Rhine*, and reduced them so low, that they made Attempts afterwards for many Years. Now as *Arnulf* was esteemed an Usurper, there were divers persons loth to obey him; among others, *Maurontius* a young man of *Marseilles*, called in the *Saracens*, and

Martel's
other Ad-
ventures.

ered the City of *Avignon* to them, from whence they spread themselves over *Dauphine*, *Lionnois*, and as far as *Sens*, with an horrible Desolation: However *Martel* first sending his Brother *Childebrand* to *Avignon*, and soon after following himself with the main Army, he took it by Storm, and put all the Infidels to the Sword; then crossing over *Septimania*, laid Siege to *Narbonne*. The *Saracens* in *Spain* being informed of the danger the Place was in, made great Levies, and sent them by Sea to relieve it; the Troops landed at the Lake *Oliviere*, and were commanded by the Governor of *Terragonne*, against whom *Martel* leaving part of the Army with his Brother to maintain the Siege, marched, and after a very obstinate Battel near *Sigeac*, gave them a terrible Overthrow, and slew and drowned the greatest part of them: But for all this, *Abim* the Governor of *Narbonne*'s Courage no ways failing him, he defended himself so bravely that *Charles* left him there, and turning his Forces to more easy Conquests, made himself Master of *Besiers*, *Agde*, *Maguelonna* and *Nismes*, all which were dismantled by him. Much about which time hapned the Death of King *Thierry* in the 23d Year of his Age, and the 17th of his imaginary Reign. Now *Martel* having perhaps a design to take the Title of King upon him, as he had already the Authority put upon him by his Successors.

Thierry's Death.
738.

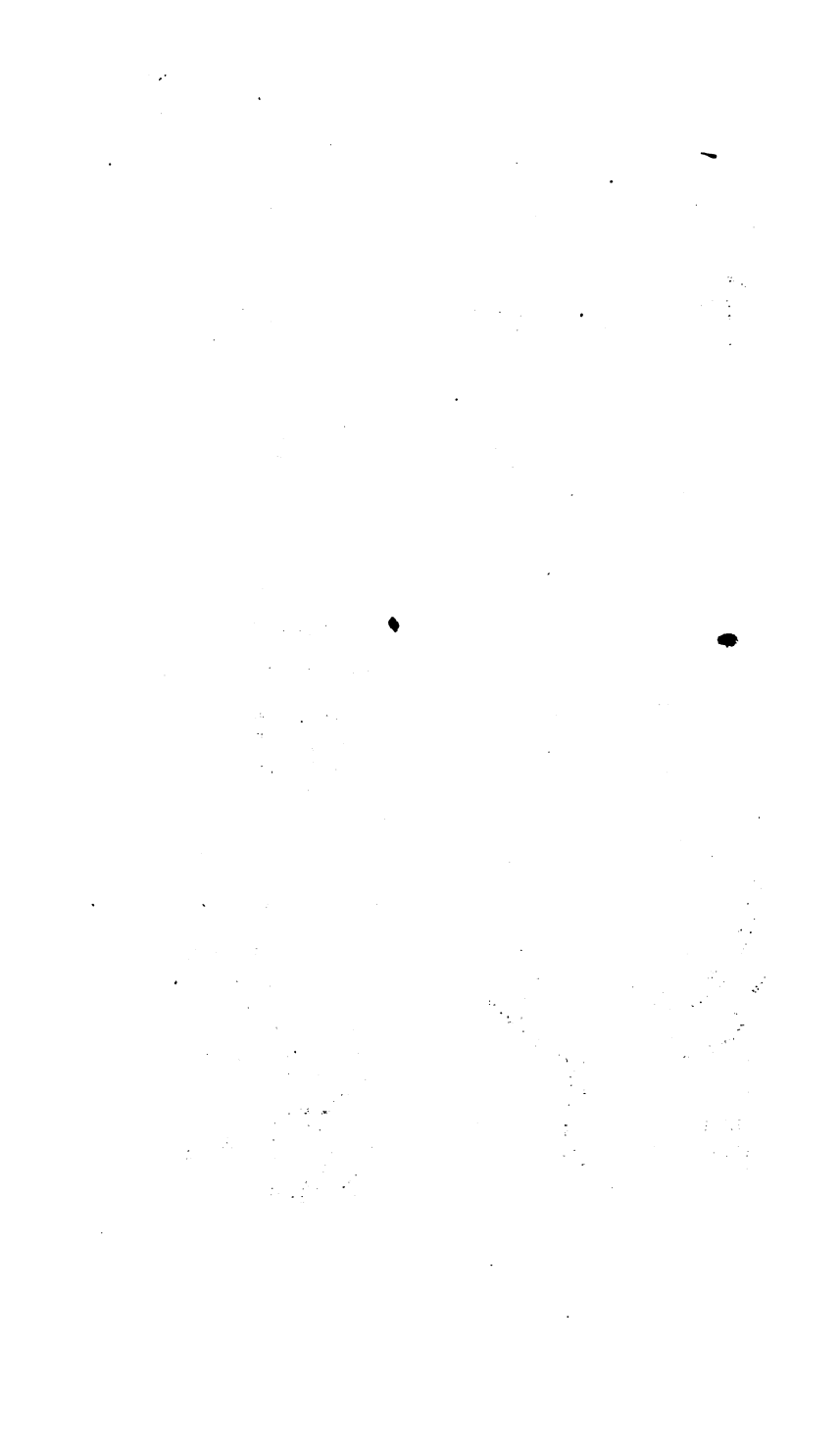
Roy, but sent him a remarkable Embassy, offered as a Present (if you will believe it) the Key of St. Peter's Sepulcher, and the Bonds wherewith been tied; and after that came another which offered upon him the Sovereignty of Rome, and of Patrician: But *Charles* (if he had been d thereto) was no longer in a condition for greater enterprises, for a troublesome Dis temper now fore him by degrees of his approaching Fate, and the Ruine of his Family. He had three legitimate Children, *Carloman*, *Pepin* and *Griffon*; and besides, these natural Children, *Remy*, *Hierosm* and *...* Now *Charles* dividing the Estate between his legitimate Children, as if he had been the Sovereign, gave *Carloman* the eldest, *Austrasia*, and *Thuringia*; to *Pepin* *Neustria*, *Burgundy*, *Saxonia* and *Provence*; to *Griffon* a Portion between the two Brothers, made up of some parcels of the Kingdoms. Soon after he ended his Life on the 10th of October, in the Castle of *Carissy* upon the *Oyse*, in 3 Leagues of *Noyon*, after he had ruled 3 Years in *Austrasia*, and 28 in *Neustria*. As the Character of this great Man, the Martial Courage and great Genius which inclined him to have a his Sword in his Hand to smite his Enemies, and to acquire him the Name of *Martel* in History, and the Immortality of Fame: But the Ecclesiasticks, whom he severely dealt with, sullied his Memory, and by no means forgive him in the other World, they affirmed, according to the Revelation of St. *Bishop* of *Orleans*, that he burned both Soul and in eternal Flames, and that his Tomb having been opened, there was nothing to be found there but a huge Serpent, and stinking Blackness, the Emblem of his ill State.

Martel's Death.

741.

His Character.

How little soever the share of *Griffon* was, his Brothers could not endure it, and therefore they shut him up in the Castle of *Chateaufort* in *Ardenne*; and having seized his Mother *Sonichilda*, allotted him the Abby of *Closter* for his Subsistence and Prison; and *Theodebald* of *Grimoald* was at the same time taken out of the World. All those People whom *Martel* had





to their Duty by the Power of the Sword, imagined now upon his Death, it would be easy for them to cast off this Yoke: Particularly *Hunond* Duke of *Aquitain*, against whom the two Brothers joining Forces, they drave him beyond *Poitiers*, and forced the Castle of *Loches*, so that he sued for Peace; but before the two Brothers left *Aquitain*, they shared the Kingdom between them, or rather what they had taken from *Hunond*. But besides this Expedition, the Year was very remarkable for the Birth of *Charles* Charles- the Great, or *Charlemain*, the Son of *Pepin*, at *Ingel-main born.* 742. upon the *Rhine*, which was now passed by *Car-* 743. *leman* against the *Almains*, whom he brought so low, that their Duke *Thibaud* gave him up Hostages for Pledg of his Faith, and the Tribute he was to have from him.

It seems to have been this Year, or at least the next, that the two Brothers bethought themselves of filling up the Royal Throne with *Childeric* the Witlefs, so called, as being either really so, or so represented to the People. Some make him to be the Brother of *Tierry de Chelles*, others of *Clotair III.* and if so, he must at least have been 17 or 18 Years old.

loss, and so terrified his Camp that they all fled out their Baggage, and the brothers had full time to ravage the Country for two Months together. From thence *Carloman* marched against the Saxons, won the Castle of *Hechtsburg*; and *Theodoric* Duke of that Country solemnly gave him his Faith, though he kept it but for a short time, which occasioned their Expedition into his Country to the great damage of it.

Carloman Prince *Carloman* having struck his last blow against the *Almains*, which was in 746. resolved to quench the World in the fifth Year of his Principality: he therefore given up his Estate with his Son *Dreux* into the Hands of *Pepin*, he first went to *Rome*, and then became a *Benedictine* at *Mount Cassin*, and sometime after retired to *Mount Cassin*. he allowed no share of his Dominions to *Dreux*; perhaps at his Brother's Request, he now sets his younger Brother *Griffon* at Liberty, and gave him an honourable Allowance; but the Ambition of young Prince not being tamed by a Prison, he effected his escape, and engaged the *Saxons* in his Quarrel. *Pepin* followed him close, insomuch that part of the *Saxons* being overpowered by him, submitted to his pleasure, and were baptized; and *Griffon* and his rest being incamped on the other side of the Ocean, they for fear deserted their Post in the Night, their Country remained exposed to the Mercy of the *French*; so that *Griffon* finding himself not safe retired to *Bavaria*, and seized on that Dutchy: this Country could no more protect him than *Saxony* for *Pepin* joining Gold with his Sword, and then soon unhinged his Party; so that now he had no way but to come in, and submit to his Brother, whom he was kindly received, and had the *Counties of Mans*, and 12 Countries in *Neustria* assigned him: he made his Escape a third time the very same Year, and cast himself into the Arms of *Gaifre I* Duke of *Aquitain*.

Pepin having gained the better over all his Enemies, and finding all the Power in his own Hands, after a Parliament that was wholly devoted to him, he made *Pepin* King, whom he obtained the Title of King; but to

engage

from his Oath and Allegiance, he had recourse to his good Friend Pope Zachary, who having need of assistance against the Lombards, gave a favourable answer, upon which the French calling another Parliament at Soissons, degraded Childeric, and elected Pepin. This the Bishops with Boniface Arch-Bishop, not a little promoting, this King and his sons, as if under some Obligation to the Clergy for their Regal Dignity, gave them a great share in Government. Childeric by the same Act was degraded Monk; and with him ended the first Race of Kings of France, who if we reckon from 418 to 751, reigned 333 Years, and had 21 Kings, only accounting those of Paris.

CHAP. VI.

The Reign of PEPIN the Little.

AFTER the Estates of Soissons had chosen Pepin, he would needs add the Ceremonies of the Church, to consecrate his Royalty, and render it the more sacred; so that he was crowned by the Arch-Bishop of Reims in the Cathedral of Soissons, and anointed with Oil according to the Custom of the Kings of France. 751.

The Reign of Pepin. B

from his Body, but his Sword entred even a way into the Bull's Neck; then turning him to his Lords, said with a kind of Heroick Pride, *you not believe I am worthy to command you?*

258. This King's first Expedition after his Coronation was into *Saxony*, which he quickly brought to 300 Horses yearly Tribute; and at his Return had the News of his Brother *Griffon's* Death, having been assassinated in his way to *Italy*, by some of *Pepin's* People, or those of *Gaifre* of *Aquitain*, who had conceived some jealousy having been too familiar with his Wife.

Astolphus King of the *Lombards* having now the Exarchate of *Ravenna*, and so claiming a reignty over *Rome* it self, Pope *Stephen* had recourse to the Protection of *Pepin*; and going into France, the King sent to desire him to come to Paris, a Royal Castle near *Langres*; but his eldest Son went above 50 Miles to meet him: The King with great kindness (tho he did not walk on his Horses side, as some would have it) and after Conferences, *Pepin* promised him all the Assistance he could, as soon as his Affairs would permit, and in the mean time desired him to repose himself in the Monastery of *St. Dennis*; and not long after he crowned *Pepin* and his two Sons with his own hands, exhorting the People to keep their Faith, and warning them from thence forward with Excommunication if ever they chose a King of any other Race. At the end of the Ceremony, *Stephen* declared himself Advocate, or Defender of the *Roman Church*.

Pepin
crowned by
Pope *Stephen*.

In the mean time *Astolphus* foreseeing the Pope would bring the *French* upon him, sends the King's Son *Carloman*, now a Monk, into *France*, to disperse the Storm; and indeed the Monk pleaded his Cause stoutly in the Parliament of *Crecy*, that it was not fit to send Embassadors to *Astolphus* to endeavour Accommodation. In the mean time *Carloman* espoused the Interest of the *Lombards* too. The King and the Pope consulting together, shut up *Carloman* in a Monastery at *Vienne*, where he died the same year, and his Sons were shaven for fear they should claim the Estate their Father had once possessed.

great Preparations for War, and a second Em-
 ing not enough to remove *Astolphus* from his
 solution to keep the Exarchate; *Pepin* caused
 to march, and the Vanguard having seized
 of the *Alps*, and beaten off the *Lombards*,
 retired to *Pavia*, where he was soon after
 by *Pepin*. At length an Accommodation ensuing
 the *Lombards* promising to give up the Exarchate
 Pope, as soon as the *Frenchmen's* Backs were
Astolphus instead of performing the Stipulation
 on, the year following went and laid Siege
 to. This Infraction obliged *Pepin* to pass the
 rains, upon which the other decamped, and re-
 to *Pavia*, where *Pepin* besieged and prest him
 that he had no other means to save his Life
 own, but to take him for Arbitrator of the Disfe-
 between him and the Pope; and you may be sure
 in favour of the last, notwithstanding the
 or *Constantine Copronimus* his Pretensions to, and
 of the Exarchate, who about this time en-
 dored to gain the *French* to his Interest by rich
 its, and particularly by a pair of Organs he
 the King at *Compeigne*, which were the first
 ere seen in *France*.
 year they changed the time of the General As-
 which us'd to be held in *March*, but was now

He takes
 the Pope's
 Part a-
 gainst the
 Lombards.

756.

758.

His Con-
quest of A-
quitain.

767.

sides, he or his Nobles retained what belonged Churches the *French* had in *Aquitain*: Upon a plausible pretence, *Pepin* having suddenly marched into his Country, the Duke was so affected that he promised him full Satisfaction, and gave Hostages: But *Gaifre* instead of performing his promise, ravaged all the Country about *Chassagne*, which so incensed *Pepin*, that he resolved to make perpetual War upon him, till he were subdued; and therefore for several years successively made Expeditions into his Country, and took at length, nay almost all places from him; and in 767, after the General Assembly at *Orleans* he entered *Septimania*, and won the Cities of *Marguelonne*, *Beziers*, *Tholouse*, and all the Country of *Givaudan* belonging also to *Gaifre*, though not by what Title: He must necessarily have made a long march in the Winter, since he kept his Court at *Vienne*, held the Field-meeting of *May* at *Orleans* and in *August* descended from thence as far as the sources of the *Garonne*, clearing all the Country of *Gaifre's* Soldiers as skulk'd amongst the Rocks and the Caves of *Auvergne* and *Perigord*.

The King after having kept his Christmas at *Orleans* crossed *Aquitain* as far as *Saintes*, and in his way met *Remistan* the Brother or Maternal Uncle of *Gaifre* and caused him to be hanged for breaking his promise to him three years before; and while he was thus employed they presented to him the Mother, Sister and Son of the Duke's, who unfortunate Man fled still before him, and being put to a full stop near *Perigueux*, he strained to stake his last Fortune in a Battle, but lost it and his Life soon after, being either killed by the *French*, or even his own Men, who were put an end to their Troubles and the Desolation of the Country.

Pepin's
Death.

All *Aquitain* being now entirely subdued, *Pepin* lived long enough just to finish this Conquest, but was seized with a Dropsy at *Saintes*, and died at *St. Denis* Sept. 24. 768. at the Age of 52 or 54, of which he had reigned 17 and an half, if we reckon from the Day of his Election, supposed to be in the Month of *March* 751. He was survived by his only Son

Greatfoot, the Daughter of *Caribert* Count by whom he had four Sons, *Carloman*, *Pepin*, and *Gilles*, and three Daughters, *Rotaiside* and *Giselle*: His youngest Son was very thrust into the Monastery of Mount *Soracte*; and at three years old, and the Kingdom was divided to the other two, who were crowned in *October*, *Carloman* at *Soissons*, and *Charles* at *Noyon*. The two Brothers falling into dispute about their Kingdom, the Nobility interposed, who obliged them, as determined, by way of Provision to take, the one *Neustria*, and the other *Austrasia*.

CHAP. VII.

Reign of Charlemain, or CHARLES I.
surnamed the Great.

BRING the Discord between the two Brothers, and *Hunond* the Father of *Gaisfre* laying aside his Monastic Habit, assumed the Title of Duke of *Aquitaine*, and endeavoured to bring the Province to revolt: to whose share it fell, intreated his Brother to

769.

Carlo-
man's
Death.

770.

Charles for all the Opposition made by the I gainst it, married *Hildegard*, another of that Daughters: *Carloman* was a Prince of a very morous Spirit, which gave *Charles* a great Trouble; but Death happily delivered him, in 770. of his Brother in the 28th year of his age, left two Sons behind him. Hereupon while held an Assembly at *Carbounac*, most part of *Afrasian* Lords and Prelates came thither to a ledg him for their King; while *Carloman's* withdrew with her Children to *Tassilon* Duke *varia*.

Charle-
main sole
King of
France.

771.

Charlemain, now sole King of all *France*, had very potent Enemies to deal with, viz. the *Huns*, *Lombards*, and *Saracens*. The *Saxons*, a warlike and valiant, yet idolatrous Nation, consisted of several People, but acting by mutual give him work enough for above thirty years; which time he made divers Expeditions against always with advantage: He never denied them but they broke it again as soon as ever he v fight; neither was he weary of forgiving them so much out of desire to allure them to his Ob as to bring them under the Yoke of Christ; the est part of his Care having no other end than the propagation of Religion. He entered therefore into this year, and they disdained not to give him near *Osnabrug*, where he routed them with Slaughter; and pursuing his Victory took the *Eresburg*, demolished the Temple of their false *Irmensel*, and broke his Idol: This is supposed been *Mars*, whence *Merspur* took its Name. King afterwards passing the *Weser*, compelled the *Saxons* to give him some Hostages, and having *Fresburg*, put a French Garison into it.

In the mean time *Didier* King of the *Lombards* continuing still at variance with the Pope, after an Experiments to gain his Point, employed Forces on several Cities of the Exarchate, ravaged the Neighbourhood of *Rome*, and advanced to the Pope under pretence of visiting the Sepulcher of the holy Apostles, carrying along with him the late King *Carloman* to crown them; this

refused, and failed not to make use of it as a more exasperate *Charlemain* more against the *Lombards*. There were already some Causes of Enmity betwixt two Kings; for *Charles* in 771 had divorced *Hilard Didier's* Sister, alledging she was infirm, a vice that did not please many People; and *Didier* on his side had given reception to *Carloman's* Widow, promised her assistance in restoring her Sons to her Father's Kingdom: These put together, they were easily inclined *Charles* to hearken to the Pope's entreaties. Having therefore rendezvoused his Army at *Neuva*, he divided the same into two Bodies, one of which under his Uncle *Bernard* marched by the way of *Mont Jon*, while himself led the other by Mount *Ce-*

773.

Didier had fortified the Passes, and in case they should be lost, he was advanced himself with all his forces into the Valley of *Aost* near *Turin*, to oppose his Enemy; but some of the *French* Army having suddenly slipped by him, attacked him suddenly in the rear, which so terrified *Didier* lest he should be hemm'd on all sides, that he threw himself into *Pavia*, while he sent his Colleague in the Kingdom went into *Spoleto*. Those of *Spoleto* and *Rietta* having already taken him, and sided with the Pope; all the *Marche Ancona*, and many other Citys followed their Example. Hereupon *Charles* with part of his Army in-

Charles his Expedition against the Lombards.

Power in all those Countries. *Pavia* at length streightned with Famine, that after *Huno* Firebrand of this War, had been knocked on by the very Women of the Place, *Didier* Wife and Children surrendered himself to *Charles*. *Charles* was cloistered in *France*, where he died soon after thus was a final Period put to the Kingdom of *Lombardy* at an end. dy, after it had lasted 204 years.

Charles before his return into *France*, went time to *Rome*, where the Pope with 150 whom he had summoned together for his magnificent reception, and likewise the People of *Rome* transferred upon him the Title of Patrician, which the next degree to the Empire; and farther that *Charles* should have the Power of the In of Bishopricks, and even to nominate the F prevent those Cabals and Disorders that happen Elections: Indeed the *Italian* Authors assure committed this Right to the *Romans*; but however, he at least reserved to himself the Power confirming them, which the succeeding Emperors enjoyed without the least Contradiction above.

Charles upon his return was crowned *Lombardy*, at the Borough of *Modece* near according to Custom, with an Iron Crown, titled over with a plate of Gold: And then published the following Order in *Italy*: He left the *Exarchate*, the *Pentapolis*, since called *Rom* also the *Dutchies* of *Perusia*, of *Rome* farther *Tu*, *Campania*; the *Dutchy* of *Benevento* he conferred on *Aragisa* *Didier's* Son-in-law; that of *Spole* *Hildebrand*, and that of *Friuli* on *Rotgana* Conditions only of Homage and Service, but again to him for want of Heirs Male: He bestowed the Earldoms and Capitainries upon terms, but reserved *Liguria*, *Emilia*, *Vene* part of the *Alps* to himself: He imposed a Tribute upon the Cities, and would have the Law be in force there.

The *Saxons* during his absence breaking all in the Country of *Hesse* to Fire and against whom in 775 in the Spring, he Person, took the Castle of *Siegburg*, rebuilt

rove them upon the *Wefer*, and having soundly
their Army, he forced them to quit the Post of
wg; then dividing his Army into two Bodies,
d them to the River *Ouvre*, and there received
bs and Hostages of Prince *Halsen* of the *East*-
and upon his return those of *Vitiking*, and the
nsiderable of the Dutchy of *Angria*.

ig all this *Adalgise Didier's* Son, honoured by
eror with the Title of Patrician, got an Army
to recover *Lombardy*, and debauched the Duke
d to join with him; but *Charles* hastning thi-
d having defeated this last in a great Battel,
d his Head, and gave the Dutchy to a *French*

named *Henry*. The *Saxons* in his absence ha-
ourse to Arms, the *French* pursued them with
Slaughter to the Banks of the *Lipp*; and they
Intelligence that *Charles* was got into their
y, they went and prostrated themselves before
h their Wives and Children, and dissemblingly
Pardon and Baptism, it disarmed his Displea-
inst them.

ed in *March* following they came from several
s to the General Assembly of *Paderborn* to im-
s Protection, the same being done by *Ibnalara-*
aracen Governour of *Saragossa*, to support him
surpation of part of *Spain*. *Charles* dividing

Governor of the *French Coast* towards the Lords of those Countries fearing I reveal up many of those *Burditti* to suffer such Punishment as he should inflict upon them: But how the *Spanish* Authors may triumph in this Event, to obtain *Arragon, Navarre, &c.* that is, all betwixt *Pyrenees* and the *Hebre*, were brought under the Dominion of *Charles*, and that tract of Land was called *Marches of Spain*.

- In his absence *Vitiking* Duke of *Angria*, not submitted to him, incited the *Saxons* to a terrible Havock as far as *Mentz* and *Cologn*: were soon beaten by his Troops, yet the follow they gave him Battel at the River *Lipp*, tho' the Success, which gave him an Opportunity to
780. *Westphalia, Eastphalia, and Angria*; and next ther Nations about the *Hore* submitted to him now fearing lest *Italy*, which was went to and was besides molested by Land with the *Saracens* by Sea, would revolt, he went under pretence of devotion; where the Pope
781. his second Son *Pepin*, and afterwards crowned King of *Italy*, and *Lewis* his younger Son King of *Aquitain*, whom he sent to *Orleans* under the Command of *Arnold*; but *Pepin* staid in *Italy*.

782. *Charles* for some years had held his General Assembly in *Saxony*, and now he had one at the River *Lipp*; and after that and the Audiences of *For* *bassadors* were over, he repassed the *Rhin* *Vitiking* returning from *Denmark* to his own Country caused a rising of the *Saxons* against him, and the People about the *Elbe* and *Saale* being in Confederacy: And here three of *Charles's* Commanders without staying for *Count Thierry* *peror's* Kinsman, falling rashly and disorderly on the Enemy, most of them were cut to pieces, incensed *Charles*, that he would not forgive them, unless they would deliver up 4000 of the best Mutineers to him, all whose Heads he caused cut off upon the Banks of the *Alare*; but to hinder them from rising up in Arms the following year with an undaunted Courage, and not contented with one Battel, they attempted another with

Charles his
War with
the Saxons.

They likewise encountered divers other misfortunes till 785, when their two bravest Leaders *Albion* SIXONS and *Vatkind* being disheartened by so much ill For-
submit.
tune, gave ear to *Charles's* friendly Persuasions, and 785.
having given Hostages, they appeared before the Estates at *Paderborn*, and then following him into *France* they were baptized in his Palace of *Atigni*.

At the forementioned Assembly at *Paderborn*, *Lewis* King of *Aquicain* came to his Father with all his Forces, he often sending for him and his Brother *Pepin*, either when he wanted them, or to call them to an account, thereby to keep them in Subjection. And his Army the year after made an Irruption into *Bretagne*, to bring those Princes to a dependance upon him. In the mean-
786.
while *Adalgise* was at Sea with an Army, and at the same time solicited his Brother in law *Tassillon* to fall into *Italy* by Land; having made sure of *Aregisa* Duke of *Benevento*, who had married his Sister: But *Charles* passing the Mountains the fourth time, and taking *Benevento* and *Capua* from *Aregisa*, who would be called King, he quickly brought him to terms, and made him renounce that vain Title. *Charles* in his return to *France* brought with him the *Georgian* Singing, and the Liturgy and Mass that was used at *Rome*, and would needs abolish the Musick and Service of the *Gallican* Church: This Change occasioned the Persecution against the antient *Gauls*, who stuck to their own

788.

what the Event of it was like to prove t only, wherein they lost three Battels. *Adal* the same time endeavouring to regain *Lomb* not only overthrown, but also taken by t of *Pepin* and others, and cruelly put to death

Charles
subdues
Germany.

And now *Charlemain* having subdued all *mans*, even to those who inhabited along th who would not own him; he spent this Y Palace at *Worms*, without undertaking any Expedition, addicted himself to Works & sent large Alms to the Christians in *Syria*, *E Africa*, that groaned under the *Saracen* courted the Friendship of those Infidel Prince by to oblige them to use the Christians better

790.

This year gave a beginning to the indif liance between *France* and *Scotland*, and to t University of *Paris* by an *Englishman* and a S And *Charles* in the next resolved to be rever the *Huns*, which indeed proved a Blessing it having been a means to convert them to ty. Some Authors say, they had seven F vast Inclosures within one another, wonderl sadoed and strengthened with Rampiers, wh retreated with their Spoil, which they had for above two hundred years. *Charles* hav the *Emms*, marched along both the sides of th attended with a vast Fleet; and at the sam^e ther Body of Eastern *Frenchmen*, entred t from *Bohemia*: They all fled upon the Kin^g left their Rings, which gave him Opportu vage the Country as far as *Raab*; and been for a Mortality, that destroyed most c ses, he would have pushed his Conquest fart an eminent danger the following year pr designed return thither; for the *Austrasian* fended with the Behaviour of Queen *East* freed from her, conspired the Death of he and intended in his stead to set up one of l called *Pepin*, who had a handsom Face, but ed and exceeding malicious: But the Plot covered by a poor Priest, the States cause them to be beheaded, and others were oth nished, while *Pepin* was made a Fryar.

Charles
routs the
Huns.

While *Charles* was at *Ratisbonne* intent upon subduing the *Avares*, he was diverted therefrom, as well as from his Design of making a Communication between the *Rhine* and the *Danube*. First by the Revolt of the *Saxons*, who had now been quiet for 7 or 8 Years, and then in that the Forces commanded by his Counts in the Marches of *Spain* were defeated by the *Saxons*. Before the King left *Frankfort*, he held a Council of Bishops, who condemned the Error of *Felix* Bishop of *Urgel*, that held Christ as Man was but the adopted Son of God the Father; and his Queen *Estrada* died: But then falling with all his Forces by two different ways into the Country of the *Saxons*, they were so terrified, that instead of running to their Arms, they sued for Mercy; and *Charles* contented himself with taking away a third of all that were capable to bear Arms, and transport them to the Maritime parts of *Flanders*. Upon his Return, he wintered in *Juliers*, where having discovered some hot Baths, he built there a fair Palace and Church, in Honour of the Virgin, for which Reason 'tis called *Aix la Chapelle*; but before the Expiration of the Year, the *Saxons* once more like enraged Devils brake out, and cutting an Army of the *Abrodites* in pieces at the Passage of the *Elbe*, as they were marching by the King's Command upon an Expedition against the *Avares*, in which Action their Commander also was

793.

Saxons
submit.

796.

799.

Judges, who did not leave that Cr u
The *Baleares*, called since *Majorca* and 1
Islands in the *Mediterranean*, now gave tñ
to *France*, that they might be protected ag
Saracen Pirates; and the *Saracen* *Aza*,
made himself Sovereign of *Huesca*, that he
get the Protection of the *French*, sent the
his City with Presents to the King: On the o
the *Avares*, after many vain Attempts to rec
Liberty, were entirely subdued, and the R
of their Wealth carried away by the *Fren*
now began to adorn themselves with Gold Ori
even to the very common Soldiers. *Guy* also C
the Marches of *Bretaign* wholly submitted
County, and brought him the Shields and Arms, t
with the Names of all the Lords and Com
became subject to the King, so that all the C
a time was under the Dominion of *France*.

800.

Put tho the *Danes*, *Normans* and *Saracens*
their Piracies about this time, and very much i
the Coast of *France*, this did not hinder the
to go from *Metz*, where he had called a Par
into *Italy*, as well to take cognizance of f
rages committed against the Pope, as upon a
suspicion that they were conspiring with G
Duke of *Benevento*, and the Inhabitants of
to revolt from him: Being at *Rome*, he admi
Pope to justify and purge himself by C
Crimes laid to his charge (no body then ap
accuse him) and order those to be punished with
that had done him the Outrage; but the Pope i
for their Lives, and in Retribution of the K
his Family's Favours to the holy Chair, he
the *Romans* to demand him for their Emper
crowned him on *Christmas*-day in *St. Peter's* C
the People crying aloud thrice, *Along* 11
and *Victory* to Charles, the *August*, *Gre*
able Emperor of the Romans, crowned God.
Ceremony being over, the Pope adored, i. e. k
down before the new Emperor, and ackno
him for his Sovereign. Some Historians say, c
no ways sought this Honour; however it w te,
West had an Empire again, but such as had

Charles
goes to
Rome.

Charles
made Em-
peror of
Rome.

nection with that in the *East*, as formerly.

The Emperor returning home this Year, made no military Expedition, but his Son *Lewis* rendered himself famous by the taking of *Barcelona*; and when the petty *Saracen* Princes of *Spain* were afraid of being oppressed by the King of *Cardona*, they made an Alliance with the *French*, but soon broke it: And *Zad* Prince of *Barcelona* studying some Conspiracy against the *French*, was yet so imprudent as to go to King *Lewis* at *Narbonne*, who there seizing him, the *Saracens* chose his Kinsman *Hamar* in his room, and resolved to defend themselves to the utmost. This brought *Lewis*, after he had severely chastised the *Gascons* for their *Revolt*, to undertake the Siege of *Barcelona*, and the *besieged* after a 12 Month's Resistance gave up the place. Indeed *Charlemain* was either feared or loved by all the neighbouring Princes: The King of *Gallicia* would be called no other but his Vassal, the *Scottish* Kings ever stiled him their Lord, the chief of the *Spanish* and *African Saracens* sought his Alliance; *Aaron* the haughty King of *Persia* desired no Friendship but his, he having not only sent him great Presents this Year, but gave him the Propriety of the holy Land and of *Jerusalem*, reserving to himself only the Title of his Lieutenant in that Country; and two Years after he interposed so earnestly in his behalf with *Nicephorus*, that he engaged that Emperor to con-

801.

Lewis takes Barcelona.

804.

They turn
Christians.

King of *Denmark*, who was very potent at S
Now *Charles* being come thither with all his Forc
and having pitched his Camp near the *Elbe*, the *Sax*
Holfatians suddenly finding themselves abandoned
the *Danes*, redeemed themselves from utter ruin,
turning all Christians: But the Emperor transplant
one part of them into *Flanders*, and another in
Helvetia, from whom they say, the *Swiss* are d
scended; and the Lands they inhabited beyond the *E*
he bestowed upon the *Abrodite Sclavonians*; then
established a Council in *Saxony*, by way of Inq
sition, to punish Mutiners, especially such as return
again to Idolatry, and this sort of Inquisition last
to the 15th Century.

806.

The Parti-
tion of his
Estate.

The Emperor now for the better Establishment
his Family shared his Estates between his three Son
so that if either of them happened to die witho
Children, his Proportion should be redivided betwe
the other two; but if a Son were born, and th
the People would choose him to succeed his Fath
the Uncles were to consent to it. This Partiti
was made in the Presence of all his Sons, subscri
by the *French* Nobility, and carried to the Pope
sign it; not to make it the more valuable, but to r
der it the more Authentick. About this time
Navarrois were reduced from their Revolt to
Obedience of the *French*.

The Emperor's eldest Son employed himself cont
ally to subdue the remaining Idolatrous People of *G*
many; having the preceding Year gained a great V
tory over the *Bohemians*, and now over the *Sclavonn*
and *Sorabes*, on the other side of the *Elbe*; while his
Brothers did all they could in their respective Divis
to increase them to the Detriment of the Infid
Pepin made War by Sea against the *Saracens*, w
Lewis with his *Aquitaniens* made Incursions to
farther Shoar of the *Elbe*.

807.

Norman
Piracies.

The Piracies of the *Normans*, and their Desce
upon the Coasts of *Neustria*, and even in the *Me*
terranean, about this time became more frequent a
troublesom; and *Charlemain* being one day in *P*
vence, and observing the misery *France* was like
suffer from them, he could not forbear shedding Te
Howe

However the Emperor was more and more honoured, particularly in the *East*; none but *Godfrey* King of *Denmark* countermined his Grandeur, and had the Confidence to attack his Country. At first he made a great bustle, drove the Duke of the *Abrodites*, a Tributary of *France*, before him, took and hanged another of them, and made two thirds of the People become his Tributaries; however having lost his best Men, and his Brother's Son upon the storming of a Castle, and being informed that *Charles* the Emperor's eldest Son had passed the *Elbe*, he thought fit to retreat, and take all possible care to cover his own Country.

On the other hand, amongst divers Exploits performed in the Marches of *Spain*, *Lewis* King of *Aquitain* forced the City of *Tortosa* in *Catalonia*: But Count *Aureolus*, who had the Government of those Frontiers, dying the Year after, *Amoroz* a *Saracen* Prince of *Saragosa* seized upon several Fortresses of the *French*, but still protested he was ready to restore them and his own Person to the Emperor's disposal: Whereupon a Treaty was begun, during which *Abulzar* King of *Cordona* not pleased therewith, sent his Son *Abderamen* to seize *Saragosa*, who forced *Amoroz* to retire to *Huesca*. Those Turmoils were quickly after succeeded by a Revolt of the *Gascoigns*: *Lewis* therefore being gone to *Dacs* with a potent Army, ruined

wife, and say, the *French* received a n

In the mean time *Godfrey* with a l et or 2
lands in *Friesland*, ravaged the Country, an
Tribute; but instead of going forward, as
out, to give the Emperor Battel upon the
Pepin and Vesper, he returned home, where he was killed
Charles his own Son, and succeeded by his Brother's Son l
Sons die. who made a Peace with the *French*. *France*
Revenge for the Affront received in the *Guip*
nice, because *Pepin* died now at the Age of 33
and the 29th of his Reign in *Italy*, leaving c
natural Son behind him, named *Bernard*,
ceeded him in that Kingdom, and was then ne
12 or 13 Years old. About the end of the f
Year *Charles* the Emperor's eldest Son died
but left no Children. About which time t
peror's Troops overcame the *Bretons* and th
King.

And now *Charlemain* himself being br
Age, and the Toils of Empire, this with tne
his two Sons made him more inclinable to have
812. with the *Saracens* in *Spain*, as also with the
and *Danes*, which was the more easily to
plished; because *Mahumed* King of the *Sa*
ing at War with *Abdella* his Brother, was
forced to let him have a share in the K
then as to *Greece*, the Emperor *Nicephorus* v
in Battel against the *Bulgarians*, and there wa
War in *Denmark* about the Succession.

The Emperor at length finding himself de
by day, summoned a Parliament at *Aix*, wh
asked every one present, whether they wo
pleased he should give the Title of Emper
his Son *Lewis*; and they assenting, he made
Colleague in the Empire, and in the same Pa
declared *Bernard* King of *Italy*. The Death
mighty Prince was preceded by all sorts of
digies: And whilst he was studiously
reading and correcting some Manuscripts or t
in his Palace at *Aix*, he was seized with
and carried out of this World, 7
812
72^d Year of his Age, at the beginning of
his Empire, and the 48th of his Reign.

Charle-
main's
Death and
Character.
814.

et in being, he gave all but the fourth part of his treasure to the poor and *Metropolitan* Churches of his Kingdom, and he was buried at *Aix la Chappelle*, which he had erected: He caused all the Laws and Customs of the several Nations under his Empire to be digested in writing, contrived several Capitularies, and collected all the antient Poetry that contained the brave Actions of the *French*. At his Meals he made some read to him the History of the Kings his Predecessors, or the Works of *St. Augustine*; he took two or three Hours Repose after Dinner, interrupted his Sleep in the Night, rising three or four times; heard all Complaints, did Justice at all Seasons; the Spring and Summer time he spent in War, part of the Autumn in Hunting; the Winter in Councils and the management of the Government: Some certain Hours both of the Day and Night he employed in the Study of Learning, as Grammar, Astronomy and Theology; and to illustrate his Language, which was *Dutch*, he brought it under Rules, and made a Grammar to it, assigned Names for all the Months in that Tongue, as likewise for every Wind, which are mostly retained to this day; and in Truth, he was one of the most learned and eloquent Persons of that Age, the Works he left behind him to Posterity being undeniable Proofs of it. His Treasure he employed in rewarding

and Carriage; his Humour sweet, facil and jovial; his Conversation easy and familiar; he was humane, courteous and liberal, active, vigilant, valorous, and very sober, tho' Fasting was prejudicial to him; Enemy to Flatterers and Vanity: He hated new and strange Modes, clothing himself very modestly unless it were upon some publick occasions, where the Majesty of the Kingdom ought to appear in the Sovereign. However it were, his Successors prove not Imitators of his Virtues, and were not attended with such a Fortune as he; nay all the Wisdom and Valour of *Charles Martel* expired in this his Grandchild *Charles the Great*, and his Posterity grew to be so foolish, that the *French* Nation must have perished under their Conduct, if the Nobility and People had not rejected them, and placed the Crown upon a more deserving Head, as we shall see in the Sequel of the History; and therefore to close this Reign, this great Prince's Fame would have been without blemish, as was beyond Parallel, had he not been too much given to Women, and too indulgent towards his Mistresses and his Daughters in their Carriages.

He had at least three lawful Wives, *Hermengarde* King *Didier's* Daughter of the *Lombards*, whom he repudiated the 2d Year; *Hildegard* the Daughter of *Childebrand* Duke of *Swabia*, and *Fastrade* Daughter of Count *Rodolph*: The last bore him no Children but *Hildegard* nine; four Sons, viz. *Charles*, *Pepin*, *Lewis* and *Lotaire*; of whom *Lewis* reaped the whole Succession, and the rest were Daughters. As for the Number and Names of his Mistresses they are not known, only amongst his illegitimate Children mention is made of *Pepin* the Crook-back, *Hugh* Duke of *Burgundy*, called the great Abbot, *Dreux* Bishop of *Metz*; and amongst 7 or 8 Daughters, one of them called *Hiletrude*, by her Actions became scandalous in her Father's House.

C H A P. VIII.

*Reign of LEWIS I. called the De-
bonnaire or Pious.*

I. Emperor and) *Bernard* his Nephew K.
of *France.* } of *Italy.*

LEWIS upon his first Accession fearing to meet
opposition, more especially from *Walla* an under-
g Person, and a Prince of the Blood, he got as
Troops as he could together; and having sent
Walla, he came to him with all due Submission,
all the *French* Nobility made haft to meet him.
he had solemnized his Father's Funeral, he divi-
the Goods with his Brothers and Sisters, and ex-
all Ladies of pleasure out of the Court, con-
his Sisters, some of whom were lewd enough, to
Abbeys his Father had conferred upon them;
about this time the Ambassador whom his Father
to *Constantinople*, returned home with Envoys
the Emperor *Leo*, who brought a Treaty of

814.

816.

some that had conspired against him to
Sorabes in that which succeeded in
 reduced: The *Gisgoins* Intelligence also
 nished by their losing of tv ttels,
 ced to renounce the Count they had elec
Seguin; *Gisgoigne* being then divided into a
 Dutchy, whereof the first held of the o
Leo dying May 23d, and *Stephen* the
 ceeding, tho he waited not for the Emper
 ment, yet he made the *Romans* swear I
 and afterwards journied himself into *Fr*
Rheims the Emperor and Emperess *Her*
 crowned by him with two Gold Crowns he
 pose brought along with him, that for the
 being set all over with Jewels and precious
 the other was of plain Gold without
 ment.

Louis weak
for Govern-
ment.

This King *Louis* seemed rather to be
 Church than the World; for as he behav
 he would have made a better Abbot or
 King: For besides his particular Exercises
 on, he busied himself too much about r
 Clergy, and among other things in the
Aix la Chappelle he caused a Rule to
 Canons, commanded the Benedictines to
 sent Commissioners into the Provinces to
 Simony, Luxury, Pride, and other ab
 Churchmen; and obliged the Bishops to
 in outward Appearance, and throw aside
 and Swords. In this Assembly he associa
 eldest Son in the Empire, gave all *Aqu*
 and *Bavaria* to *Louis*, both with the T es
 doms.

To this place they brought him Intel
 Defection of the *Abrodites*, and the
Bernard King of *Italy*, both which were
 their Birth: *Bernard* was strangely delud
 take the dethroning of his Uncle; th
 sently forsaking the passages of the
 the Emperor's Army began to march,
 advised him to it being the first that forso
 rashly went to *Chaalons* to beg the Emperor's
 but here he was imprisoned together v

f his Retinue, of whom the Seculars were all K. Ber-
 ned to death, and the Ecclesiasticks degraded nard put to
 fined to a Monastery; neither did Bernard Death.
 escape with Life, which was very rigorous
 Uncle to a young Nephew: Indeed *Lewis* had
 morse of it all his Life after, nor did the *French*
 him that Cruelty. *Bernard* left one Son na-
 pin, and this begat 3, viz. *Bernard*, *Pepin*, and
 r, from the middlemost of whom sprang the
 anch of *Vermandois*: And the Emperor now ap-
 ding his own bastard-Brothers, whereof he had
 might form the like Conspiracies, he cau-
 nem all to be shaven, and put into Monaste-

is done, the Emperor reduced all the Country of
igne in forty days, slew their King *Morvan*, and
 them a Duke of his own nominating, but at his
 he lost his Wife *Hermengarda*: The Emperor
 ise changed the King of the *Abrodites*, and de-
 ed and exiled the Duke of the *Gascoigns*: However
 Commotions made by these and others, sufficient-
 iscovered the weakness of the Government. *Lin-*
 Duke of *Lower Hungary*, threw off his Masque,
 for three or four years together gave a great deal
 trouble to the Emperor's Lieutenants in *Dalmatia*,
 , and *Bavaria*, till at length he was quite driven

823.

to omit divers minute things not worth
'tis very memorable, that *Lewis* troubled
put his Nephew to death, and cloistering
and Cousins, made his Confession, and did
nance at the General Assembly of *Attigny*, after
he released all those he had cloistered, and
Valac and *Adelard* to be of his Council. Ar
happened the Birth of *Charles* the Bald, and wi
World of Mischiefs, which was presaged by
terrible Prodigies this year.

The *Bretons*, as obstinate for their Liberty
Saxons for their Religion, endeavoured to wi
themselves from the Obedience of the *Fren*
chose one *Guyomac* to command them; against
the Emperor entering the Country with three
made such an havock, that in 10 or 12 days t
glad to submit; and next year their Prim
Guyomac their Chief came to the General An
Aix, as making up now a part of the *Fr*
narchy, and the Emperor made them all ric
sents.

The *Bulgarians* having already signaliz
selves by their Incurfions into the Territories
Eastern Empire, the *French* began to kno
when they became their Neighbours; and t r l
mortag having employed Ambassadors to tne E
to settle the Limits between the two Nations,
tained them above two years, and sent the
without any Answer. The Affairs of *France* bei
in a declining Condition towards the Marches o
since the defeat of the *Gascoigns* under *Ebles* a
nar by the *Saracens*; a discontented Lord nan
zo, leaving the Emperor's Court, cunningly sei
on the City of *Ossuna* in *Catalonia*, and r
League with the *Saracen* King, who giving hi
erful Assistance, he therewith so disquieted the
nours of the Neighbouring Places, that some
them, while others went and joined the Ene
that there was none but *Bernard* Earl of
that persisted faithful to the Emperor. *Aiza*
got a great Reinforcement of *Saracens* next ye
Emperor on his part gave *Pepin* an Army
him, and resettle his Affairs in those Count

French
Affairs de-
clining.

del's ravaged the Countries of *Gerome* and *Bar-*
at their pleasure before the *French* were ready,
ich the Commanders were severely punished.
nperor sent another Army under *Lotair* against
who advancing as far as *Lyons*, and having con-
with *Pepin*, he went no farther; and this was the
empt the *French* made for those *Marches*; so
e People of the higher *Marches* seeing them-
ow abandoned, made *Eneco* or *Inniguo* Earl of
e their King, who took *Pampelona*, and some o-
laces from the *Saracens*: And here we must assign
eginning of the Kingdom of *Navarre*.

It now to pass over the Ravages committed by the
arians in *Upper Hungary*, for not opposing of
the Duke of *Friuli* was divested of his Dutchy,
nperor desperately fond of his Wife and Son
les, bestowed *Rhetia* and part of the Kingdom of
undy upon him, to the great mortification of his
ers, and the farther disgust of such as had been
Bernard's Party. The Emperor foresaw the
best, and his Wife to gain a greater Power en-
d his Apprehensions, persuading him to put an
Confidence in *Bernard* Earl of *Barcelona*, who
Chamberlain, and on whom she was enamoured;
did but increase the opposite Parties Discon-
and therefore they all address themselves to *Pe-*

Restored.

went to his Sons *Pepin* and *Lewis* to incite t
pouse his Cause ; so that the Power of th
thers serving now as a Counterpoise to that of
there was a Necessity of a General Assembly t
led to settle the Government, and the mee
some designed Altercations was held at N
where the Emperor's Interest prevailing, he
Son *Lotair* to come and submit to him in his
give up the principal of his Confederates, whom
doned for all their Disloyalty ; only he comma
Laymen to be shorn, and the Churchmen to
in Monasteries. When he was got back to *Ais*
called his Wife, and her Brothers that had
ven ; but he required her first to clear hersen
ding to the usual manner ; and in the Easter 1
he released and recalled all those he had ca
shorn, but he sent his three Sons into their ow
doms, after which neither of them shewed him
Obedience ; but more particularly *Pepin*,
made a Prisoner at *Triers*, from whence he
escape, and still pursued the same rebellio
but at last being summoned to appear at the
Assembly at *St. Martins*, and not obeyi
he dispossessed him of the Kingdom of
great displeasure of the other two So
the like Treatment : They therefore all co
gainst him, under the management of *Lor*
took the Field with a numerous Army ; t
having done the like, they both incamped be
fil and *Strasburg* five or six days ; during
Emperor and the Pope had some conference
Peace, but his Men under that pretence bei
ched and induced to forsake his Service, he
ther way himself but to submit, and obta
neither his Wife nor Son *Charles* should f n
nor Limbs ; however they confined the last to a
tery, and banished the Mother to *Tortona* in *I*
The King being thus detained, *Pepin* return
quitain, and *Lewis* to *Bavaria*, while *Lotair*
neral Assembly at *Compeign* ; during which
beginning to be touched with Compassion
their old Emperor, some Lords and Bisho
be punished if ever he was restored, contr

to exclude him, by degrading and condemning him to publick Penance; and therefore the Bishops having remonstrated his scandalous Faults to him, sent for his Son *Lotair* and his Princes, and made his Reconciliation with him, then they led him to *St. Medart's* Church, where prostrate before the Altar upon Sack-cloth, he confessed he had been the Cause of great Troubles to *France*; and the Bishops exhorting him to name his Crimes openly, he owned he had committed Sacrilege, Parricide, and Homicide, and then gave the Bishops a Paper, who laid it upon the Altar: This done, they took off his military Girdle; and lastly having disrobed him of his secular Habit, they clothed him with a penitential one, which was never more to be quitted: But being quickly set at Liberty again by his Sons *Lewis* and *Pepin*, they returned unto him the Crown and Military Girdle in *St. Dennis Church*, with the Deliberation and Consent or Counsel of the *French* People, and sometime after his Wife and Son *Charles* were brought to him; so that now the Emperor's Power revived to that degree, that *Lotair* who opposed his Restitution was forced to submit, upon Condition he should come no more into *France* without his Father's leave, but remain in *Italy*; all the Passages from which Country he shut up with strong Garrisons. Indeed it had been much better for *France*, that *Lotair* had never repassed the Mountains; for the Empress *Judith* desiring to have a Support for her Son *Charles* after the old Emperor's Death, endeavoured to reconcile them, and sent word he should come to Court; but he was hindred by an Epidemical Distemper, that so seized him, and most of the *French* Lords, that it was said it had left *France* naked, both of Counsel and Strength: However *Lotair* at last coming to stand to such a Division as his Father made of his Territories, he took the *Eastern France* from the *Meuse* upwards, and left the *Western* to his younger Brother *Charles*, obliging himself by Oath to defend him, and not to undertake any thing against his Father's Will.

Lewis de-
posed again.
833.

Restored.

837.

About the same time the *Normans*, never ceasing to pillage the Coasts of *Flanders*, gained a great Battle in the Isle of *Walcheren*, slew the Count of *Zeland*

838.

and were driven out with much Difficulty : A Comet in *January* presaged the Death of *Pepin* of *Aquitain* in *Nov.* aged 35. after a Reign of twenty years : He left two Sons *Pepin* and *Charles* whom hereafter, and a Daughter that Count of *Poitiers*.

Bat to return again to the forementioned *Pa* with *Lotair*, *Lewis* was forbid to take upon his Title of King of *East-France* any longer, which him arm ; but before he could put himself into any rable Posture, his Father passed the *Rhine*, and brought him to submit : Then in his return g *Aquitain*, he there met the Lords of the Co who had been induced to swear Allegiance to *Charles* ; but young *Pepin* with his Friends, | Father's Inheritance still by some corner or and struggled so vigorously for it, that he could be dispossessed for many years. Here the Empero ving notice that *Lewis* had debauched the *Sax Thuringians*, and seized all the Country with *Rhine*, he was exceedingly troubled at it ; and were incommoded with a Defluxion upon the | and that the Weather was very unseasonable, y marched thitherward, and held a Parliament at W when his Distemper increasing, he went to *Ing* Lewis his where lying in his Tent, his Heart pierced with Death and Stomach oppressed with an Impostume, he d Charaſter. ted this Life on the 20th of *June*, in the 64th y 840. his Age, and the end of the 27th of his Em before which he had been King of *Aquitain* 32 . This Prince was of a mild and sweet Nature, and and that was all, for he was too easy and c lous ; so that he was sometimes persuaded to u Actions : From his Youth he was profoundly vout ; and if he gave not too much credit to Churchmen, it must be owned he could not di the Good from the Bad, or else he spoiled them his Over-liberality, whereas it had been better pursued his Father's Method, who never one Man to have more than one Employment nefice at the same time. As for the rest of racter, he was laborious, sober, vigilant, u very knowing and learned, both speaking and

ting Latin as well as any Man in his Kingdom, and who together with the perfect Knowledg of the Laws, had ever a great Care to see them put in Execution. He had by his first Wife *Hermengard*, *Lo-tair*, *Pepin* and *Lewis*, besides three Daughters, and by his Second Wife *Judith* had *Charles* surnamed the Bald.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

The Reign of CHARLES II. surnamed the Bald.

SOMETIME before his Death, the Emperor Lewis had sent his Scepter, Crown and the Ensigns of Empire, to his eldest Son Lotair, recommending to him the Protection of Prince Charles, and enjoining him to preserve share for him that had been allotted him with the Consent ; but Lotair presuming his Birth-Right Quality ought to make him Sovereign over his Brethren, he went from Italy to the Kingdom of Germany, and so with his Army to Frankfort, where Lewis coming boldly to encamp by him, he was led at the matter, and they agreed to remit their differences to the 12th of Nov. to be amicably composed then between them. Charles was then at Besen where he waited for Pepin who failed him, and thence he sent to Lotair to intreat him to retract his Oaths ; but he amusing Charles with fair words adjusted all his Engines to turn him out of his dominions ; and indeed the Neustrian People joined Lotair, tho Charles had already beaten Pepin. However Charles and his Party advanced against the Emperor near Orleans, but then finding himself much weaker, he was forced to agree to take Aquitaine, Languedoc, and Provence, with some Countries on the Loire and the Seine only by way of Provision, and was said they should meet at the Parliament at Compiègne to compose all their Differences ; but Lotair was the mean time to attempt nothing against Charles : However he soon violated his Engagement, by endeavouring to





the Passages, and hinder *Charles* from coming to *Atigni*; but *Charles* very diligently wafting over the *Seine*, in some Vessels he found at *Rouen* the Enemies presently fled upon the first Appearance of his Standard; and so *Charles* marching up along the River, beat two of the Counts sent by *Lotair* to oppose his march, went to *Atigni*, and thence advancing on, he there found the Empress his Mother, whose Forces she brought him out of *Aquitain*, and who at the same time had Intelligence that his Brother *Leuwig* gained a Battel against *Albert* Count of *Burgundy*, and made all Expedition to join him; and so *Lotair* and the two Brothers were united and superior to the Enemy. *Leuwig* gained some days by feigned Negotiations, till *Pepin* could join him; with which Reinforcement he was so uppish, that nothing would do but they must have all: So that they were forced to fight in Word, they would give him Battel next day, which was the 25th of June. All the Powers of *France* being now met at *Fontenay* by *Auxerre*, fought in so bloody a Battel, that there was more slain therein, than in any other whatever, since the beginning of the world: 100000 men perished in the Action; and a most weakened the *Carlovinian* Race, that they could never well recover it; however the Victory fell to the Emperor's share, who used it so modestly, that

France divided between the three Brothers.

843.

to them : After which the two Brothers *b*
Aix, the Bishops by them assembled pronounced Judgment, whereby they deprived *Lo*
his Portion of Lands on this side the Mount
the Brothers divided between them, tho this
did not stand ; for *Lotair* endeavouring an Acc
tion, the three Brothers were persuaded to m
Island of the *Soane*, each attended with 40 L
the presence of whom they agreed to divide t
Succession of their Father (not including
Lombardy, and *Aquitain*) into three equal
whereof *Lotair* should take his choice, and
Lords were to meet together in *Nov.* at *Metz*
that Division : But the same Assembly bei
to *Thionville*, they successfully completed
on by the 6th of *March* : To *Charles* fell the V
Kingdom of *France*, and from the *British* (
the *Meuse* ; to *Lewis*, *Germany* ; and to 1
Title of Emperor, the Kingdom of *Italy* and r
and all that lay between the Kingdoms of his
ther Brothers, which were the Lands betw
Scheld, *Meuse*, *Rhine*, and the *Soane*. *Pepin*
thing allowed him, but he having gained a gr
tory over the Troops of his Uncle, who ende
to take *Aquitain* from him, he kept up for so
till his Vices, rather than the Power of his r
dethroned him.

And now the bloody Battel of *Fontenay*
strangely enfeebled *France*, the *Gascoigns* pract
manner of Devastations and Barbarities over
Kingdom ; insomuch that from one Sea to a
there was not a Monastery standing, that had n
their Fury and Devilish Rage, nor a Town t
not been ransomed, plundered or burnt two
times. The *Normans* were also exceeding tre
to *France* at this time, and *Oger* one of the
mous Commanders with a Fleet of 150 Sm
Roan ; and for fifteen or sixteen years to
continued their Barbarities in *Neustria*, and
ticularly upon *Bretagne* and *Aquitain*. *Le s*
bonnaire had given the Government of *Bretagne*
omenes, descended from the antient Kings
Countries ; now this Person having acquired a

upon *Friezland*, and going up the *Sonne*
in the right and left Shoar; and being un-
Paris, destroyed all that lay without the
being pretty well laden with Spoil, they
tempted with Presents made them by
retire, but in Return they ravaged
anders and *Friezland*, and took the City

ch being now entered into *Bretagne*, en-
selves in Bogs and Fenny Grounds, where
d a second Blow; but while *Charles* was
third Expedition against that Country,
of the *Normans* obliged him to make a
Neamess: the this last quickly broke it and

ner, ers th C
 them to e alive r their ry
 with Blood.

849.

About this time *Lotair* and *Charles* I view in the Palace of *Peronne*, and re League, while *Charles* Brother to *Pep* passing from *Lotair's* Court by *N* r: seized by Count *Vivian*, and carried to *Bald*, who at the Assembly of *Chartres* to be shaven and sent to *Corbie* Monastery; four Years after *Lewis* the Germanick I him Archbishop of *Metz*. King *Pepin* many very ill Qualities, so that a great man Nobility of *Aquitain* conceiving a kind of him, invited in *Charles* the Bald, and : take *Tholouse*, tho as soon as he left : in conciled themselves to *Pepin*.

A General
 Assembly.

851.

There was now a General Assembly held Kingdoms of the French Monarchy on t the *Meuse*, where the three Brothers met: Amity and mutual Assistance; after v went to *Bretagne* to attack *Herispoux* the Successor of *Neomenes*, who after he l *French* much mischief departed this Life; r engaged on the Confines of *Anjou*, and if the *Bretons*, *Charles* came off but ill; it were, he agreed to a Peace in order to possession of *Aquitain*, a thing of more and also to oppose the *Normans*. 'Twas in that the Pirate *Hachery* coming with his of *Burdeaux*, destroyed the Abby of. n going up the *Seine* with his small B s, all the Country a great way on eit : fi many Cities.

Pepin de-
 posed.

852.

Pepin's ill Conduct had by this time offended the Lords of his Kingdom, that they him at last, and gave him up to *Charles*, who him to be shorn and confin'd to *St. Mard*: whence making his escape, he took part v *Normans*, but being retaken he close f the Castle of *Senlis*. There w be no er down all the Exploits and Rav : t In 852 and 853. other Multitu

and some up the *Loire*, plundered Towns, to Churches, particularly the Grand St. *Martins*; whether it were by Necessity or ill Counsel, treated the *Aquitains* very rudely, inasmuch many of the Nobility sent Deputies to *Lewis* the *quick*, to pray him to accept of the Kingdom, and his Son to them: Upon this *Lewis* sends one of his Sons to observe the Disposition of the People; disposition to which *Charles* sought the Friendship of *Lotair*, with whom he conferred in the Parliament held at *Valenciennes*, a Place possess'd in part by both; and having brought themselves to a good understanding, another Parliament was called at *Reims*, to which they invited *Lewis*, but he refused to go; so that *Charles* going from thence into *Aquitaine* was crowned at *Limoges*.

It now the Emperor *Lotair*, from what Motives *Lotair* did not certainly be determined, strip'd himself of *dies*. sovereignty, and became a Monk in the Abbey 855. of *Reims*, where he died some Months after, having reigned the Empire 15 Years, and the Kingdom of *Lotharing* 12: He left three Sons behind him, *Lewis*, *Lothar*, and *Charles*, and a Daughter named *Hermengard*; before his Renunciation he shared his Territories between his Sons, giving to *Lewis* *Italy* and the Empire, wherein he had associated him in 851. to *Lotair*.

was crowned at *Metz*; but he did not long survive and died without Issue. *Charles* who held then a Parliament at *Poissy*, immediately went and seized Kingdom of *Lorain*, neither minding the Emperor *Lewis* Brother to the two last Kings, nor the King who expressly desired him to do his Nephew Justice so that he was crowned at *Metz* with the usual Ceremonies. 'Twas indeed with some Justice, but without any lawful Power, that the Pope should take Cognizance about *Lothair's* Succession; and therefore dispatched a second Embassy to *Charles* to exhort him to give up the Kingdom to the Emperor *Lewis* otherwise he would excommunicate him; and wrote to the Bishops to forbear all Communion with him. *Charles* replied modestly enough to the Legation but the French Bishops went a higher Note, particular Archbishop *Hincmar* wrote very smart Letters to *Adrian* about it, tho' he was much opposed by his Nephew the Bishop of *Laon* therein, who had a particular Interest to be on the other side, and curry the Popes favour; however the matter was carried so that *Laon* was deposed and imprisoned, where almost two Years his Eyes were put out.

870.

But for all these things the two Brothers *Lewis* and *Charles* after many Arguments used by the latter and by the Mediation of the Lords and Bishops, were divided between Lothair in a place upon the *Meuse*, and there divided the Kingdom of *Lorain* between them, without regard had at all to the Emperor their Nephew whose Cause being still supported by the Pope, sent a famous Embassy to the Brothers. *Lewis* sent them back to *Charles*, and he taking time to deliberate matters, advanced as far as *Lyons*, as it were to confer with the Pope; but meaning nothing less than to do his Nephew Justice, he likewise seized on the Kingdom of *Burgundy*, which he gave the charge of keeping to *Boson* Queen *Richilda's* Brother, whom he made Duke of *Aquitain*, and Grand Master of *Porters*, nay raised him so high, that he was afterwards one of those that dismembered the Monarchy.

Charles during this Expedition had left Archbishop *Hincmar* to govern the Kingdom, who tho' a Man of a most powerful and daring Genius, had no difficulty

y to put a stop to the Designs and Enterprizes
 man the King's eldest Son, his Father for
 spiracies had some Years before made him
 in and imprisoned him, tho he had got loose
 ntreaties of the Pope's Legates; but falling
 to his Father's Hands, he was condemned to *Prince*
 l that Sentence changed into a Deprivation of Carlo-
 However some time after he got out of Prison man's
 ontrivance of a couple of Monks, who con- *Fate.*
 m to his Uncle the *German* King, by whom 871.
 an Abby conferred upon him, but Death did
 e him long to enjoy it.

Princes of the *Carlovinian* Line were for the
 art of weak Spirits, Fools and Sottish. *Lewis*
 t of *Italy*, tho pious and valiant, was so slighted
 Subjects, that they would part him from his 873.
 ecause he had no Heirs Male. The Children
 s the *German* gave their Father much Trouble.
 the eldest, afterwards surnamed the Gross,
 l doubtless with the Conspiracies he had form-
 ist him, had violent Fits of madness, believ-
 was possess'd by the Devil, and notwithstanding
 ences of Cure, he felt it more or less all his
 r.

o return again to the Actions of the Field:
 rmans had about four Years since seized on the
Anniers and there settled: from whence they

Louis the
Emperor
his Death.
875.

Charles
the Bald
made Em-
peror.

nestled themselves in an Island within the
whence they continued their old T
sairs of *Bretagne* were also in great con
this time, insomuch that it lost the Name of a
dom, and took that of a County, then a
which two Titles were confounded in those days.
to leave this, and *Louis* the Emperor of *Italy*
without Issue Male in *August* this Year; we
observe that the Stake of Succession lay next be
Louis the Germanick and *Charles* the Bald, w
used great diligence to get thither before
Carloman, two of the Germanick's Sons, w
Brother *Louis* fell upon *France* to make a L
as for the two first, *Charles* amused them
Words, and sent them handsomly back, v
Prelates used such pathetical Remonstrances
third, that he took pity on the poor People,
turned without committing any Acts of Ho
The Pope thought it his Interest to have
Bald for Emperor, therefore by a splen
excited him to go to *Rome* to receive
Crown, as if it had been absolutely at
and the same was set upon his Head on
with great Solemnity. The Emperor also on
received the Crown of *Lombardy* at *Pavia*,
Confirmation of the Imperial one at an
held in the said City, the Pope assis
But the following Year there being yet
in *Italy*, who refused to acknowledge h
held another Council at *Rome* to confir
time, and added Excommunications ag
fractory: But for all this bustle the *We*
could be but a vain and empty Title, and at
nothing belonging to it but the Exarchate of
and the *Pentapolis*; for his Power was not
the City of *Rome*, and for the Kingd
it neither belonged nor in any wise becom
ever the Bald, to retaliate the Pope, ende
tend his Authority over the Liberties of
Church; and in a Council held at
ported as much as he could the Pope's Le
of Primacy, but the *French* Clergy
means give way to it. At the eighth Set

at in the Empress his Wife. (So fond was he of
with the Crown upon her Head, to preside there
him, of which the Bishops were so ashamed, that
did not so much as get up to receive her.
e mean time, tho the *Germanick* was seventy years
nd much distracted in his Family by the Discord *Lewis the*
st his Sons; yet he so resented *Charles* his ha- *German-*
he Empire, that with all his Forces he made an *ick's Death*
ion into *Neustria*; and being got to *Frankfort*, and *Cha-*
broke the Thred of his Life and Enterprises, *rafter.*
he had reigned near fifty nine years. This
was learned according to those times, and had
all his life-time active, warlike, and liberal, one
ared not for Money, but to give it away; and
a greater value for Steel than Gold; a great
t in Justice and Religion, an Equitable Distribu-
f Commands and Employments; and in short,
nearer than any Prince of his Race to the no-
irtues and Qualities of *Charlemaign*. He left
Sons, *Carloman*, *Charles*, and *Lewis*. The Bald
the News of his Death thought to have stripped
young Princes of all; which made *Lewis* the
st Neighbour to the Danger send Ambassadors
o, to put him in mind of the Treaty made with
ther, and offered to prove by thirty Witneses,
of ten should undergo the Tryal of cold Wa-

Country of the *Grisons*, *Switzerland*, *Swabia*, *Al* and the other part of *Lorain* bordering upon them.

During all these Diffensions the *Normans* pursue their Game, and even imposed Tribute upon *France*, while the *Saracens* no less tormented *Italy*, so that the *Bald* was necessitated to go thither, and Pope crowned the Empress at *Tortona*, from whence they went to *Pavia* to consult with the *Italian* Lords how to expel the *Saracens*; but hearing, while they were there, that *Carloman* King of *Bavaria* appeared with a great Army to resume the Kingdom of *Austria* and the Empire, the Assembly broke up, the Pope to *Rome*, and *Charles* made hast for *France*; tho at same time *Carloman* seized with a Pannick Fear returned to *Germany*. In the mean while *Charles* in turn by *Mount Cenis*, was poisoned by *Sedecias* who was his Physician, and a *Jew*; at the Age of 55 y the second of his Empire, and the 38th of his Rule from his Father's Death. As he loved Pride and nity more than Solidity, so Fortune made him illustrious in appearance, but unhappy in effect; the Qualities was, that he had attained to great Learning and rewarded Scholars, sending to *Greece* and for them, to enrich *France* by their Knowledge: He advanced very mean Persons to military Employments and Dignities, due only to the greatest in his Kingdom thereby turning the whole Estate as 'twere upside down, the greatest Families sunk to nothing, and the mean were raised to the highest pitch. He left only one behind him, *Lewis* the Stammerer, who with Difficulty by reason of the hatred they bore to his Father, did succeed him.

CHA

C H A P. II.

*The Reign of LEWIS II. surnamed the
Stammerer.*

THERE is but little material to be met with in this King's Reign ; one of the first things I find he did, was his going toward *Lorain* to confer with *Louis* King of *Germany*, and make a Treaty to divide *Lorain* between them, as it had been between their Fathers, and the Stammerer also promised him a part of *Italy* : But however it were with this Prince, the Affections of the Nobility were not firm towards him ; so that he hapning to take up Arms to suppress *Bernard* Marquis of *Gothia*, whose Government he had given to *Bernard* Earl of *Auvergne*, he fell sick in his Passage by *Autun* into *Burgundy*, not without suspicion of Poison, and therefore he sent for his Son *Lewis*, and committed him to the Care of the Earl of *Auvergne*, *Thierry* his Great Chamberlain, Abbot *Hugh*, and some others, while the King himself with much Difficulty was brought to *Compeigne*, and on the 19th of *April* gave up the Ghost, at the Age of 30 or 35 years. 878.
Lewis II's.

C H A P. III.

*The Reign of LEWIS III. and
CARLOMAN.*

WE shall find nothing but Factions to the end of this Race : The Abbot of *St. main des Prez*, did all he could to bring in *Lorain* into *Germany*, and make the *French* own his Title, to the prejudice of the Bastard Sons of *Lewis* the Stammerer for so he called them ; and the greatest Friends of the two Princes could divert the storm no other way, but by yielding up to the *German* that part of *Lorain* which the *Bald* and the Stammerer had possessed. *Lewis* indeed would have been satisfied with nothing less than the whole Monarchy, had not his Affairs pressed him to hasten home ; for his Brother *Carloman* sick and dying about this time without Legitimate Children, *Lewis* resolved to hasten thither to prevent him from giving his Dominions to his natural Sons : long after which *Lewis* and *Carloman* were crowned at the Abby of *Ferrieres* in *Gastinois*, and divided the Father's Kingdom between them ; the first having *Neustria*, and the other the Kingdoms of *Aquitaine* and *Burgundy* ; but at their first Accession they had the displeasure to find *Lorain* and *Burgundy* dismembered from them ; this last being lopp'd off by *Boson*, a Person in so much Favour with *Charles* the *Bald*, that he gave him *Provence*, if not in Sovereignty, at least in Perpetuity, and his Niece *Hermengarda* to Wife, very ambitious enough as she was encouraged him to make himself King ; and so having gained the Lords and Prelates of those Countries, he was crowned King of *Burgundy* in the Royal Castle of *Mantale* in *Dauphiny* by the Archbishop of *Lyons*. This made the Brothers very uneasy, and so did the *Normans* (whom yet they defeated near the River of *Vienne*) and their Count *Lewis*, who at length had a Parley with them at *Godenville*, where they saw one another, and agreed

*the Kings
owned,
88c.*

General Assembly to meet there: *Louis* of Germany to excuse himself because of his Sickness; *Charles* his Brother came thither, and conferred with *Louis* and *Carloman*, and found it necessary to League for the Destruction of their Enemies, *re Hugh* the Son of *Valdrade*, that sacked all the Country of *Lorain*, and *Boson*. As for the Forces of *Louis* the German, and the two others, having encountred his Army, they defeated him with a great Slaughter: Then *Charles* the first his two Brothers, marching against *Boson*, routed him, and laid Siege to *Vienne*, which *Charles* did not find at an end till about two years hence; *the Fat* before this, *Charles* who had been already crowned *made Em-* of *Lombardy*, had also the Imperial Dignity *peror.* conferred upon him by the Pope, who crowned him *821.* in his last day.

In the mean while a Fleet of *Normans* went up the *Saone*, while another strong one passed up the *Soane*, and seized the rich Abbey of *Corbie*, and the City of *Compiègne*; after which they overrun all the Neighbouring Countries, and did very great Mischief: Whereupon *Louis* leaving his Brother *Carloman* at the Siege of *Vienne*, hastened to *Picardy*, fell upon the *Normans* *Normans*, and slew 9000 of them upon the Spot, in his return home the remainder of those Barbarians fell to plundering as before: while a third

going over the Mountains, confirmed the Donation of *Carinthia* to *Arnold* his Bastard-Nephew; and after he had held a Parliament at *Worms*, marched with him towards *Hastou*. The *Normans* at first were forced to retreat, and the Emperor blocked them up with his whole Army; but a most dreadful Tempest and raging Plague infesting his Army, proved once more favourable to them; so that after ten days Siege they agreed to leave the Kingdom, from whence they carried Infinite Riches. About the same time *Lewis* King of *West-France* going to meet some *Breton* Princes, who were marching against the *Normans*, fell sick at *Tours* and died at *St. Dennis*, after a Reign of somewhat above three years; tho' *Emilius* says, that spurring his Horse to run after a pretty Maiden that fled from him into an House, he brake his Back riding in at the Door whereof he died.

Lewis his Death.

Upon this his Brother *Carloman* leaving the Siege of *Vienne* to the Care of Earl *Richard*, went to secure the Succession, and head the Army against the *Normans* and being joined sometime after by *Richard* (who had taken *Vienne*) he defeated part of the *Normans*, and then after the Example of the Emperor *Charles* the First treated with the *Normans* to go out of his Country upon Condition of giving them 12000 Marks in Silver. Not long after being a hunting in the Forest of *Iveline* near *Montfort*, not far from *Paris*, he was mortally wounded by a wild Boar, tho' others say by a Gentleman of his Train, who thought to dart at the Boar, after he had reigned five years, and left no Children. As soon as the *Normans* heard of his Death they returned again into the Kingdom, of whom *Albot High* made so terrible a Slaughter, that they left *France* for some time in quiet.

Carloman his Death.

C H A P. IV.

*Reign of CHARLES III. fir-
named the Fat.*

ught not to be thought strange, if the Western
sch, standing in need of a King at Majority, did
offer the Crown on *Charles* the posthumous Son of
the Stammerer, but swore Allegiance to *Charles*
t, tho it cannot be said they entirely excluded
since they entrusted Abbot *Hugh* with his Edu-
and Guardianship. In the mean time *Valdrade's*
I had not quitted his Pretension to *Lorain*; but
Godfrey the *Norman* Duke of *Friesland*, his Brother-
was creating some quarrel, that they might have
portunity to restore him to the Possession of that
m; however the Emperor *Charles* rid himself
s, tho by indirect means, according to the Pro-
of *Henry* Duke of *Saxony*: For he and the
hop of *Cologne*, having drawn *Godfrey* to a
ence in an Island of the *Rhine*, there massacred
all the *Normans* along with him: and at the *Base Trea*

884.

make use of Gold than Steel to drive those Robbers away, and agreed that for 700 l. Weight of Silver they should leave *France* in *March*, and in the mean while that they might winter about *Sens* in *Burgundy*: This done, he returned back with a grievous Head-Ach, for which they were forced to make divers Incisions; and this induced them to return again to the Fields of *S* *Germany*, pretending however to keep their Agreement but designing in reality to surprize the City, tho without Success.

The Death of Abbot *Hugh* the Great, and other Incidencies about this time left *France* in a very distracted Condition, to which you may be sure, the weakness of *Charles* the Fat's Brain did not a little contribute, which still proved worse after the Incisions made in his Head; he grew suspicious of the Empress *Richarda*, and put her away in the Parliament of *Uberlinghen* and his Frensy appearing more notorious in the General Assembly of *Tribur*, all his Subjects both of the Kingdoms of *Germany* and *Bavaria* forsook him, in order to elect in his stead *Arnold* his Bastard Son; and when he thought to arm himself against him, he was likewise forsaken by the *Lorainers*, and then the *Almains* or *Swabians* his antient Subjects; insomuch that he had not a man left to serve him, nor a single Penny to help himself; only *Arnold* at length allowed him the Revenue of two or three Villages for his Subsistence. However this deplorable Condition lasted not long for he died a while after of Grief, or else was strangled by his Enemies, on the 8th of *Jan.* Of all the *Carlovinian* Race there were but two Princes left *Arnold* a Bastard, and *Charles* a Child; there were indeed two others in *Italy*, i. e. *Berenger* Duke of *Friuli* and *Guy de Spoletta*, but they were by the Female side however thinking they ought to have their share of the Succession of *Charlemaign*, therefore it was agreed that *Guy* should have the Title of Emperor and *Gallic France*, and the other enjoy *Italy*; but the first having overthrown the latter in two bloody Battels, he was forced to fly for refuge to *Arnold*, who likewise found himself much embarrassed, so that the Lords of *Neustria* which from hence forwards we shall name simply *France*, sent him word when he was coming, that i

Charles
the Fat his
Misery and
Death.
888.

th





Temibly at *Compeigne* they had chosen *Eudes* *Paris* and Duke of *France* for their King; and he made a noise in favour of *Charles* the Simple, *Eudes* was actually crowned by the Arch-Bishop of *Reims* while on the other hand *Rodolph* the Nephew of *Hugh* was crowned King of *Burgundy* beyond *the Rhine*, as *Louis* the Son of *Boson* seized on the *The Mo-* *ry* between *Lyons* and the Sea, betwixt the *narchy dis-* *and the Alps*, under the Title of King of *Arles* member'd. *France*, and caused the Kingdom to be confirmed in a Council held on purpose at *Valens* in 890.

C H A P. V.

The Reign of EUDES.

EUDES already mentioned the several Divisions of the Dominions of the *Carlovinian* Race, and not doubt but these new Kings gave part of *Arly* to the Lords of their Party to gain their aid and Homage; and now *Eudes* to shew how he was of being their King, went out against *Normans* who ravaged *Burgundy*, and nigh Mount *Blanc* slew 19000 of them, pursued them to the Fron-

Arnold
makes an
horrible
Slaughter
of the
Normans.

ty. *Arnold* fretted at this, passed the *Rhine* with the whole Force of *Germany*, forced their Camp near *Meuse* with so much Fury, that he left not one of the alive, insomuch that the dead Bodies made a Bridge quite cross the River, and the Flood was swollen with the Blood of those Barbarians.

893.

In the mean time all the *Neustrian* Lords did their own *Eudes* for their King, and therefore while he was employed in *Poitou* in the War, there was a Conspiracy formed against him to set up *Charles* the Simple, who was brought out of *England*, whither his Mother had carried him, and crowned at *Rheims* on the 27th of *Jan.* in 893.

CH A P. VI.

The Reign of CHARLES IV. surnamed the Simple.

THE Parties of *Charles* and *Eudes* made War on one another for two whole years with various Success; and *Eudes* being returned from *Guy*, drove *Charles* out of *Neustria*, tho he got in again afterwards; and *Arnold* was sometimes on one side, sometimes on the other. At length the People being weary, they contrived for an Accommodation to *Burgundy* and *Aquitain*, *Champagne* and *Picardy* to *Eudes*, and to *Charles* all the rest. In the mean time *Arnold* being uneasy that any of *Charlemain's* Race in a Female Line should succeed, he went into *Italy*, drove *Guy* out of all *Lombardy*, forced him to retire to *Verona*, and then returned to *Germany*; not long after which *Guy* died of the Bloody Flux, tho some say he lived much longer; however *Arnold* got nothing by his death, the Kingdom being conferred upon his Son *Lambert*, who was crowned Emperor, and bore that Title as long as he lived. But to return again to the *Normans*, they now renewed their Incursions into the unhappy Kingdom with so much the more Assurance and Facility, as they found *Eudes* backward to supply them. And this Year *Rollo* or *Rol*, one of the most consider

The Reign of Charles IV.

109,

the Leaders of those Pyrates, after he found Rollo goes
to nothing in England, where he tried to France.
incouraged thereunto by a Dream or Di- 895.
steered his Course towards France, being
ited in by Charles, who turned every Stone
his Rival; but the Enterprizes, Surpri-
sounters between them ended with the
ades on the 3d of Jan. about the end of
of his Age, and the 8th of his Reign; Eudes's
his departure, he earnestly enjoined his Death.
and other Lords to own Charles. He left 898.
named Arnold, who assumed the Title
of Aquitain, but died soon after.

At this time the Loss of the Kingdom of Lo-
thar pleased the French, and therefore Charles
in esteem, endeavoured to recover it; and
Fred Zuendibold, who was got to be Prince of
try, and had been pursued by him also in his
rue was made, and in an Assembly held near
ace was confirm'd between Charles, Arnold, and
ld; and towards the end of the year Arnold
ing reigned 12 years since the Death of his
Charles the Fat, and held the Empire only two
an half. Among his other Children he had
ld, and Arnold the Bad by two Concubines,
by a lawful Wife; he was but eight years
his Father died.

Arnold's
Death.

899.

ed themselves; from whence for five y made Incurfions into all the Neighb conquered *Constantine*, and inhabited it, *cardy*, *Artois*, *Champaigne*, and the *C fin*, often frighted *Paris*, covered the *Loire* with the Ashes of those (med, and beat the *French* every w *Chartres*, were some of them were a Duke of *Burgundy*. In the mean time a General having by degrees become fami Archbishop of *Roan*, he upon his Intr thrice had granted a Truce. The De late was to convert him, and of the o to Sovereignty; the *French* Nobility ry averfe to have a Stranger settle in t of the Kingdom, but the People so lo the Enemy, cried out for a Period to Miseries: Besides, *Robert* Earl of to the Monarchy, desired he might re tion, to have his Assistance in time neccu.: Reasons *Charles* made a Truce with he propos'd to give him in Propriety. a Title of a Dutchy, that part of *N between the Sea, the Seine, and the Daughter Gisele* in marriage, if Christianity; which he acce d of. Homage for the Lands he hi w called *Normandy*. The Y to demand Homage hand: Duke *Alain* leaving his Children very y ried them out of the Country h est Nobility, and so we hear no ore tory, while others were forced to sub mans: There were indeed in ers *France*, especially in *Bretagne*, ty of *Main* with the Islands or Numbers of these *Normans*, who *Rollo's* Example, took Habitatio and themselves *French*, but not with doi of Mischief first; and for a long v Settlement of these drew fresh Swa and *Sweden*, who were no less cruel, but not as the first.

Rollo be-
comes a
Christian,
and settles
in France.

912.

913.

The Reign of Charles IV.

III

Rollo had repudiated *Popa* the Daughter of the
royaux to marry the Daughter of *Charles*;
 prince's being dead; to do the former Wife
 separation he now could, he takes her again,
 he had two Children *William* and *Gerlote* or *Rollo's*
 however she did not long enjoy him, for he
 year after, tho some put it off to the year
 was the first Duke of *Normandy*, and for ever
 for that severe Justice and exact Policy he
 within his Dominions; where the very
 of his Name is able to this Day to stop the
 of Villains, and bring those that are such
 Judgment-Seat. He was succeeded by his
 son, afterwards surnamed *Long-Sword*; and
 he was yet but a Minor, the Earl of *Paris*
 his Godfather undertook the Tuition of

916.

917.

The King of *Germany* dying this year, when he
 ordered his Regal Ornaments to be carryed
 Duke of *Saxony*, tho he had always made
 inst him; *Charles* before *Henry* was settled,
Lorain, conquered it all as far as *Worms*, and
 him to become his Subject for the rest of that
 : But the *French* Lords, who apprehending
 grew too potent and peaceable, he might
 their Estates which they intended to make

919.

The Reign of Rodolph.

922.

Robert
slain.

Rodolph
crowned
King.

923.

Charles upon the News hereof raised his before the Castle of *Capremont*, where he took up *Gisbert* one of his greatest Enemies; raised considerable Forces in that part where of the Kingdom, he marched resolutely to *Robert* who was encamped near *Soissons*; passed over the *Aisne* unawares, he charged suddenly, while his Men were refreshing themselves here *Robert* fighting at the Head of his Army slain with a Lance, which some attribute to himself: However it were, his Son *Hugh*, Earl of *Vermandois*, and the other Commanders made Head against *Charles*, but so prevailed, that they had utterly defeated him if they had but continued their Pursuit. And in short, the Chain of *Robert* was so far from being broken by this Action, that the Lords elected *Rodolph* Duke of *Burgundy*, Father-in-law, and a Nobleman of brave and much better Judgment than *Hugh*, to be King, and he was crowned at *St. Medard* in the 13th day of *July*, 923.

C H A P. VII.

The Reign of RODOLPH

Charles
the Simple
imprisoned.

AFTER the Election of *Rodolph* every one took *Charles*, having therefore no other way, he wrote in a doleful manner to *Henry King of France*, and gave him up *Lorain* upon condition: *Robert's* Party was greatly astonished, and the rather because *Charles* believed he had taken off the Earl of *Vermandois* from their Interest; but that Traitor having decoyed him into the Castle of *Peronne*, confined him there with *Thierry* under a strong Guard, upon which *Ogina* fled to *England* her Native Country, and her Son *Lewis*.

Now *William* the first Duke of *Aquitain* submitting as he ought to *Rodolph*, he was obliged to turn his Sword that way, upon which *W*

vanced to the *Loire*, the Bounds of his Dutchy; and after some Negotiations having passed the same, he slighted and went to *Rodolph*, who embraced and kissed him as he sat on Horseback, and next day granted him a Truce for 8 Years, at the Expiration of which the Duke did him Homage, and in requital had the Cities of *Bourges* and *Berry* restored to him.

924.

The *Normans* still almost every Year made Incursions into the *French* Territories; besides those that were in *Neustria* there were others in *Burgundy* and towards *Artois*; and at all times they were forced to be making Head against them, or be in pursuit of them: But they had such sure Friends amongst the *Grandeess*, who would not suffer the Kingdom's Grievances to be scann'd, that they ever got away scot-free; nay this Year King *Rodolph* having surrounded them in a Wood in the Country of *Artois*, they suddenly made a furious Sally, wherein he was wounded, and had been taken had not Count *Hebert* given him timely Assistance: And those that held the Islands of the *Loire* having been a long time besieged by *Hugh* and *Hebert*, they so stoutly defended themselves, that they gave them the City of *Nants* for their Habitation.

926.

But notwithstanding the strict Alliance there seemed to be between King *Robert* and *Hebert*, the City of *Laon* became an occasion of discord, for *Hebert*

nation to l Imprison , 17 Y
 Life 50; he t b n 1
 Daughter to E K E .

Whilst Rodol v 1

Normans of the Loire e exclu

husin; but he bravely surr l 1

at a place called *Dextricior*, wl 1

much esteem among the *Aquit* , r

induced to acknowledg him with a little

Rodolph fion. Indeed the Regal Authority was
 receives low Ebb, and the Lords very potent;
 divers He- *Hebert* still opposed *Rodolph* under pretence
 images. the King's Brother-in-Law had allured some

931. Vassals from him. *Hebert* made use of the

of the *Lorainers*; but his Insolence bei

abated by the loss of *Rheims* and *Laon*, l

into *Aquitain* and *Languedoc*, where he r

Homage of the Princes, and of the Dul c

who was mounted, if we belie *Floa*

Horse that was an 100 Years c , and v

and lusty. *William* Duke of A

him Homage, and the King in retri

those Lands the *Bretons* held on the s

ed to be the *Bessip* and *Constantin*; but

things could not be kept quiet at home,

Blanc, and *Hebert de Vermandois*,

potent Lords in *France*, falling out, r

War upon one another; the Ki

whose Sister he had married, K. r

many having interposed to m , ti

St. *Quintin* and *Peronne* were restored to

Cessation that ended in a Peace.

935. In the Year 935. the three Kings of

France and *Burgundy*, had an Interv

Meuse, to give joint Orders for repres

IncurSIONS of the *Bulgarians*, who infe

minions, and had this very Year got into

upon the *French* King's marching that w

ly retired into *Italy*: However the K

Dijon, of which his own Brother

Rodolph's Possession. But he did not long survive

De.uth. for he left this World on the 15th of 9

936. following Year, at *Auxerre*, in the 14th of

He was a most liberal, valiant, religious and just Prince, and worthy of better Times; his Wife died a 12 Month before him, and his Brother *Boson* about a quarter of a Year, both Childless; they had another Brother called *Hugh le Noir*, or Black, who bare the Title of Duke of *Burgundy*, and the Sirname of *Capet*, of whom more hereafter.

C H A P. VIII.

The Reign of LEWIS IV. surnamed the Transmarine.

OF all the French Lords *Hugh le Blanc* Earl of *Paris* and *Orleans*, Duke of *France*, and Brother-in-law to the late King *Rodolph*, had the greatest Authority in the Kingdom; However he durst not take the Crown, because of *Hebert* of *Vermandois*, and *Gisbert* Duke of *Lorain*, two potent Lords that would have broke his measures; and therefore he thought it more safe to make a King of the Blood of *Charlemain*, who should be wholly obliged to him for his Crown: to which end he dispatched a famous Deput

936.

his Authority the better, he began first to put down petty Rebels, then fell upon *Hebert*; he thought the more easily to overcome him, as he was grown odious for his Treachery to the People; but *Hugh* joined with *Hebert*, and fortified themselves with the Alliance of *Orso* of *Germany*; while *Lewis* on his part had a Truce with *Arnold* Earl of *Flanders*, and others: *Hebert* Duke of *Lorain* being come to the Aid of *Hugh* the Great his Brother-in-Law, *Arnold* Duke of *Britany* negotiated a Truce till the first of *June* in the Year following, between the King and *Hebert* Duke; but as soon as that was expired, the War began afresh. Whilst the King was in the East, he gave it with the *Noire*, *Hugh le B.* and *William* Duke of *Normandy* ravaged and took several Territories of *Arnold*, but the King's Rulers made them renew the Truce till *June*.

About this time *Otho* King of *Germany* was very hard for his Brother *Henry* and *Gisbert*; these two sent to King *Lewis* to put themselves under his Protection, and went to *Laon* to do him homage; and indeed *Lewis* wanted but little of the whole Kingdom of *Lorain* surrendered to him: he went into *Alsatia*, and was well received every where when he came to treat those as conquered who had voluntarily submitted themselves, it increased their Affections. In the mean time *Otho* the Great, *Hebert* and the *Norman*, re-allied themselves with *Otho*, in conjunction with whom they drove *Lewis* out of *Alsatia*, and besieged *Brisac*; *Lewis* on the other hand, to get an Interest at *Lorainers*, married that King's Sister.

Now Count *Hebert* of *Vermandois* having a young and cunning son but of ten Years, he nominated Arch-bishop of *Rheims*, contrary to the Rules of the Church, in opposition to the Will of the King's; the Contest about the Arch-bishop created a War that lasted 18 or 20 Years, and very much molested all *Campaigne*: The first effect of it was, that *Hebert* and the *Norman* took *Laon* failing to take *Laon* they retired to *Otho*, and put themselves under his Protection; yet next Year

which way soever it came into *Hebert's* Possession I cannot tell, laid Siege to it, tho to his own detriment; for being surprized in his Camp by his base Subjects, he saw one half of his Men slain, and could not save himself but by a shameful Flight; and then being forsaken of all his *Neustrian* Subjects, he retired to *Charles Constantine*, Earl of *Vienne*, his Cousin German; thence had recourse to the Pope, the Lords of *Aquitain*, and to *William Duke of Normandy*, who all gave him ready Assistance; and with these Forces he sought all opportunities to fight the Enemy; but failing of that, first a Truce, then a Peace was concluded by King *Otho's* Mediation, whereby *Hugh* and *Hebert* submitted to their King.

William Duke of Normandy being now basely murdered by the Earl of *Flanders* at an Interview, *Lewis* well knowing that while the *Normans* thereupon were divided amongst themselves, their little Duke *Richard* might be easily stripped, and that it would be a noble Act to recover so great and so good a Country, he went to *Roan*, seized on *Richard*, and his Subjects with some difficulty suffered their young Duke, under pretence of Education, to be carried away to *Laon*. Upon which *Arnold Earl of Flanders*, whose Interest it was to extirpate all the *Normans*, easily inclined the King to incapacitate the Duke for ever of succeeding, and resume the Dutchy: But before they came to put

and so they entred the Country
 one time ; but *Beard* Count of
 ty preserved the Dutchy, for he
 to pretend a Submission to the
 easily perswaded him to reserve all that
 to himself, and take away from *H*
 which he had conquered, whereby
 Rupture between thoe Princes ; and
 the discontented *Hugh* once more to un-
 Protection of *Richard*. And for the Resto-
 this young Prince he used this device : *T*
Norman King named *Aigrold*, who bei-
 Years before from *Denmark*, had fi-
Constantin ; this Prince upon a Consult-
nard revolted against *Lewis*, and sent to
 to set little *Richard* at Liberty, upon v
 counterfeiting great Zeal, assured the *K*
mandy was firm to his Service, and by t
 Pretence he engaged the King to go thither in
 to suppress that Pirate : The King's Army and
 being near one another, the last seemed to b
 and demanded a Conference, which was
Cresserville ; and the Train was so well h
Norman finding himself the stronger, he
 that came with the King, seized upon his
 and sent him Prisoner to *Rhoan* : He ever
 after by the Mediation of Friends got his
 upon condition he should restore *Rick* d to
 and receive Homage ; but for all that
 still under the Power of *Hugh*, who I kn
 what Pretences detained him at least a
 would not let him go till he had got the City
 from him.

ing Lewis
 ade a
 risoner.

944.

946.

948.

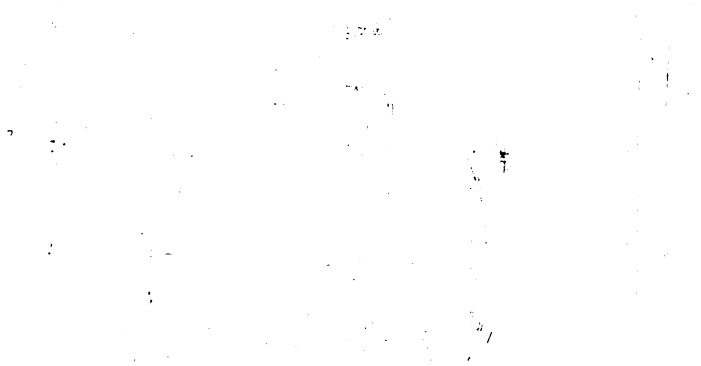
But the King being at length got loose, and
 with *Orho* King of *Germany*, and the Earl of
 against *Hugh*, they had an Army together of
 gions, and all of them wore Straw Hats ; bu-
 were so baffled at the Siege of *Rhoan*, and *E*
nold's deserting of them, that they left it and r
 Now the Dispute about this time between *E*
Vermandois and *Arnold* about the Arch-
Rheims, became a mighty business ; it s tr
 by some Prelates at *Donzi*, who referred :

Synodical Assembly of *French* and *German* Bishops at *Verdun*, where *Hugh* not appearing, the Archbishoprick was awarded to *Arnold*. Upon this *Hugh* complaining to the Pope, he procures another Assembly to determine this difference, and the Quarrel between King *Lewis* and *Hugh le Blanc*; here the King set forth all the mischiefs *Hugh* had done him, by detaining him a Prisoner a whole Year, and otherwise, and offered if any one could lay to his charge the Troubles and Calamities of the Kingdom, to justify himself in such a manner as the Council should advise, even by personal Proof in the Field of Battel. Upon these Complaints they wrote Letters to *Hugh le Blanc* and his Adherents, to admonish them to return to their Duty, under pain of an Anathema; and doing Justice upon the Petition of *Arnold*, they confirmed the Arch-bishoprick to him, and excommunicated *Hugh* his Competitor till he duly repented. Hereupon *Otho* assisted King *Lewis* with good Forces, the *Lorain* Bishops his Vassals took *Mousoir* and rased it, they excommunicated *Thibault*, who kept the City of *Lyon* for *Hugh*; and many other Traverses of Action passed between the contending Parties, some too tedious and others too insignificant to be noted. However we are to observe that this Year proved fatal to *Fulk* the good Earl of *Anjou*, a very religious Prince, and a Lover of Learning, and who being one day informed that King *Lewis* crossed at his going so often to the Onire

Earl of
Anjou's
Death.

ign of I

aged about 45, and kept P. 1
 went and married E
Queen O- Troyes, Son to the 1
gina mar- her Husband die in Prilon; 1
ries. 951. Revenge to the prejudice of her 1
 made that only a Cloak for her Incon ice.
The King But notwithstanding the patched e
and Hugh mentioned between King *Lewis* and A
agree. about the Arch-bishoprick of I quickly
 953. them again to Daggers drawing; but *Hugh* at
 treating with the King personally at *Soissons*, he
 a Peace with him this Year, about the end of A
 And in that which followed *Ku L* died
 strange Accident, for as he 5, 2 from I
Rheims, spurring to ride after a Wc whi
 in the way, his Horse stumbled, and tnr
 upon the Ground that he was bruised all
 these Bruises turning into a kind of Le
 his Death the 15th of *October* in the City A
 after he had reigned 18 Years and 3 M
 lived 38 or 39: He left only two Sons
Lotair and *Charles*, the last of whom no
 the Kingdom with the other; and fr n
 we find the Eldest alone have the Title of *Ku* ;
 younger Brothers had only some Lands in *Arpe*
 and under an entire Subjection; and even of t
 Kingly Power being increased, hath taken the
 sion for want of Heirs Male, which has not ;
 contributed to restore the Grandeur of the *Moi*





BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

The Reign of LOTAIR.

THE greatest part of the Power being in the Hands of *Hugh*, he might have taken the Crown if he had not feared *Ortho's* Forces and the Jealousy of the *French* Nobility; so that *Lotair* was crowned King at *Rheims*, upon which occasion he gave the Dutchies of *Burgundy* and *Aquitain* to *Hugh le Blanc*, and *Hugh Capet* his Son, who being satisfied, it was not difficult to calm the other Lords, who were less considerable. Now *France* was quiet enough for three Years together, only *Hugh* led the King into *Poitou*, to make *William* Earl of that Country, and Duke of *Aquitain*, become obedient, and laid Siege to *Poitiers*; but the scarcity of Provisions and the Terror of a Thunder-Clap, besieged

who succeeded him, and *Henry* after them.

The Children of the deceased *Hugh* the White, th the Perswasion of *Bruno* Arch-Bishop of *Cologne*, redred Homage for their Lands to *K. Lotair*, who Retribution declared the eldest Duke of *France*, as his Father had been, and bestowed *Poitou* upon him upon condition only that he were able to conquer for it was then possess'd by another Potent Earl; from whence it is conjectured, that the Kings had not yet entirely given away their Power, of bestowing Dutchies and Earldoms, and that if they were heretofore, the same was only but Usurpation and not Conquest. But all the new Principalities and new star'd Seigniories of the Kingdom, did not trouble the Kings so much as that of the *Normans*, who enjoyed some a Province; wherefore *Bruno* who governed the Affairs of the Kingdom, by the Instigation of the Earls of *Flanders*, *Chartres*, and *Anjou*, combined to resist Duke *Richard*, and for that reason sent for him to come to the General Assembly of the States at *Amiens*, with a design to seize him; but *Richard*, who was on his Journey, being informed of the Conspiracy by some unknown Gentlemen, returned home, and stood upon his Guard: He also avoided another Snare the King had laid for him near the *Epte*, whither having sent for him to do him Homage, he thought to seize him; but he withdrew from hence likewise betime and so escaped.

Treacherous Designs against the Norman.
959.

To pass over that the Western Empire was about this time revived again in the Person of *Otho* King of *Germany*, to which Country the Title hath ever since remained annex'd; we are to observe that divers Quarrels were still troublesome to *France*; the two great being about the Archbishoprick of *Rheims*, and the hatred of the Counts *Thibault* of *Chartres*, and *Arnold* Earl of *Flanders* against the *Normans*: The latter indeed might have been compos'd by restoring *Hugh Vermandois* to his Dignity in *Rheims*, *Arnold* the Archbishop being dead in 962, if the Queen could have secured it; but far from that, she brought it so about that the Council of *Soissons* referred it to the Pope who declared him excommunicated.

unable for two years to come. But in
11 *Thibault* supported by the King, went
ed before *Roan*, from whence he could not
it by the Assistance of the Infidel *Normans*,
King of *Denmark* sent to his Kinsman *Ri-*
having forced him to retreat, made Incur-
very Gates of *Paris*.

969.

peror *Otho* the Great dying at this time,
ed by his Son *Otho* the Second, tho not
ie Fortune, for his Country was distract-
Wars, particularly *Lorain*, of which the
g's Brother *Charles* was created Duke. But
ould not forget the Remembrance of their
he to *Lorain*, and therefore King *Lothar*

973.

Lotair
and Orho
agree.

578.

then committed all the Ravages he could up and do in the Countries. *Orho* on the other hand in revenge hereof with 60000 men, made a great Irruption to *France*, sacked all *Champagne*, and the Isle of *France* even to *Paris*, sending word to *Hugh Capet* who was there, and Count of that City, that he would have an *Alleluja* sung upon Mount *Martre* by some Priests, that it should be heard at *Nostre-dame*. At the approach of Winter he was obliged to retire, *Lotair* with *Hugh Capet* having drawn their Forces together, cut off all his Rearguard as they were going to the *Aisne* (which was overflowed) and put him fighting to the *Ardennes*: Now in this retreat the Earl of *Anjou* let the *Germans* know, that the Quarrel being between the two Kings, it were better to decide it singly, rather than shed the Blood of so many Innocent Men; but the *Germans* replied, That they did not doubt their King's Courage, yet they would not consent he should expose his Person singly: *Orho* was roughly handled, sought an Accommodation with the *French*; and *Lotair* and he conferring together at *Rheims*, they concluded a Peace upon condition that *Lotair* should yield him *Lorain* to be held in Fief for the Crown of *France*, at which the *French* King shewed a great deal of discontent. Thus the Sovereignty of that Kingdom remained in *Lotair*, and the Dutchy of Lower *Lorain*, which two years before had been conferred upon *Charles* by *Orho*, reverted to his disposal; but as he must give some part to *Charles*, he agreed he should enjoy that also, which was confirmed at an Interview between that King and *Orho* on the River *Kar*: But *Charles* imagining his Father had yielded him that Dutchy but by Compulsion only, did Homage to *Orho* for it for his greater support. Now this Submission of *Charles* sounded very ill in the Ears of the *French*, and the Augmentation of his Power certainly shocked the Designs of *Hugh Capet*, who was preparing his way to the Throne; we are to consider that *Charles* was the only Obstacle since *Lotair* had but one Son, and he weak both in Age and Understanding, and of very small hopes: Besides, the aboad of *Charles* in those Countries with his coming into *France*, the too great Affection he shewed

the *Germans*, who at that time were the Capital
of *France*, as likewise some Rencounters with
his Brother, and amongst therest one about
ty of *Cambray*, which he defended against *Lo-*
who would have plundered the Churches, as he had
those of *Arras*, gave his Enemies occasion to de-
him amongst the *French*.

by the Emperor *Otho* the second dying this year, 982.
Lotair believing *Germany* would be all in Con-
about the Guardianship of young *Otho*, he en-
Lorain, took *Verdun*, and *Godfrey* the Earl there-
et when he understood *Otho* was crowned by the
ent of all the Nobility, he returned home. Two
after he restored *Verdun*, and caused his Son *Lew-*
be crowned to reign with him, he having alrea-
carried him to *Blanche* a Princess of *Aquitain*:
his Couple were ill matched, for the Woman
Courageous and Gallant, the Husband wanting
of Mind and perhaps of Body, insomuch that
elpised him, and carrying him into her own Coun-
under colour that she could procure the conquest
by the Assistance of her Friends she planted
there, and the King was forced to go and fetch
hence again. This was a great misfortune in the
Family, and yet a greater, that *Lotair* died
self of *March* the following year, of some

Lotair
takes Ver-
dun.

983.

985.

The Reign of Lewis V.

Lewis's
Death.

The Carlo-
vinian
Race at an
End.

upon him, as it seems, refo to
June to his Grandmother . a V
tho I. an Heroick Prince ti in
ther of Kings; but t poor prince
effected, ended his Lite in the
ther had done, and by the in mery
Blanche. An Author of those th
Kingdom to *Hugh Capet*, and another, ti
ed it to his Wife, upon Condition l know
him: His Reign in all was about t e y
20 Months with his Father, and six v
with his Reign ended the () l
had lasted 236 years, in a Succession or 11
cluding those only of *West-France*.

There were sprung up three Brاند of
one in *Italy* by the Emperor *Lotair I.* a
many by his Brother *Lewis*, and a third n
by *Charles the Bald*, and all three ended
with a *Lewis*; That of *Italy* by *Lewis II.* G
son of *Lotair*; That of *Germany* by *Le*
Arnold; and That of *France* by this *L*
ant. The Causes of the Ruin of this Race
tributed to several Particulars: As 1. T
the State into several Kingdom 2. 1
Love the *Debonnaire* had to l n C s
3. The Imbecillity of most or ti P
Ravages and Inroads of the A s for
years together, which favoured the At
Great Lords. 5. The Multitude of c
natural Children, who played the Sovere
Countries allotted them. 6. We may add,
Tree bearing no more good Fruit, the Alm
pluck it up to plant another in the room c
fair and fertil; whose Duration has been exten
longer; but I will not say with some *Fr*
ans, it will be to the final Period of T ;
Glory to the ends of all the Earth.

The Third and Capetine Race.

C H A P. III.

The Reign of HUGH CAPET.

THE only Person of the *Carlovinian* Race remaining was *Charles* Duke of *Lorain*, but he being abandoned and ill favoured by the *French*, and *Hugh Capet* the contrary in the heart of the Kingdom, powerful and esteemed, he was more like to prevail; he held *Dutchy of Burgundy* by his Brother *Henry*, that *Normandy* by his Nephew Duke *Richard*, and that *France* with the Counties of *Paris* and *Orleans* in own Hands; besides, having made a strong Party, assembled the Lords at *Noyon*, he was chosen King *May*, and crowned at *Rheims* without any Opposition, which is very strange, considering the clearness *Charles's* Title, for whom no one present claimed; on the contrary all gave their Oaths in writing, well as by word of Mouth, to his Enemy; and what Title soever *Hugh* might pretend to come.

being rejected, he had recourse to Arms, and the Assistance he had was from *Arnold* Earl of *Flam* and *Hebert* Earl of *Champagne*; but the first dying year, the other durst hardly stir; however *Ch* by the means of *Arnold* his Bastard Brother, who a Clerk at *Laon*, seized upon that City, and the *A* Bishop of *Rheims* therein, who being a cunning *M* presently pretended to be wholly his Friend, thereby so managed the Prince, that he made him Chief of his Council. In the mean time *Capet* was idle, but quickly laid Siege to *Laon*; yet his *T* being careless of their Guard, *Charles* in a brave *S* routed them, and destroyed their Works, then himself Master of *Rheims* and *Soissons*; but suffice this heat of good Success to cool, few People decl

989.

for him. It was highly conducive to *Hugh's* Inten to gain *Arnold* the Natural Brother of *Charles*, therefore the Archbishoprick of *Rheims* becoming vacant by the Death of *Aldaberon*, he conferred upon him; but *Charles* was sometime after introduced thither, as supposed by the Concurrence of the *A* Bishop, tho he ever denied it, and remained a *P*ner in *Charles's* Hands: At the same time *William* of *Poitou* and Duke of *Aquitain* refused to acknowledge the two Kings *Hugh* and *Robert*, repulsed sharply at *Poitiers*, pursued them to the *Loire*, had a bloody Engagement with them there, but Conclusion was to the advantage of the *French*.

Charles be-
trayed to
Capet.

On the other hand *Charles* living, in two great security at *Laon*, was betrayed with the Place into Hands of *Capet*, and sent Prisoner to *Orleans*: Brother *Arnold* having been taken with him, he by a Council of Bishops at *Rheims* degraded, and imprisoned with his Brother; *Gerbert*, so learned a *P*son in respect to those times, as to be reputed a *g*ician, being chosen in his Place.

993.

This year *William* Duke of *Aquitain* made *P* with *Capet*, and owned to hold of him, but another *William* Duke of *Gascoigny* kept himself still independent: Now many are of opinion, tho without certain Proofs, that *Capet* confirmed the Inheritance of the great Estates, Dutchies, and Earldoms to the Lords that had usurped them; and 'tis probable, t

the

we had first given such as depended upon them
own Vassals, thereby to engage them to main-
tain in their Usurpations ; however 'tis certain he
to the Crown, that had scarce any thing left,
loss of *Paris*, the Dukedom of *France* con-
all between the *Loire* and the *Seine*, and the
of *Orleans* : Now amongst the Great Lords,
there were many, the most Considerable were
of *Burgundy*, *Normandy*, *Aquitain*, and
y (*Bretagne* then holding of *Normandy*) the
Flanders, *Champaign*, and *Tholouze*, and

Barcelona and *Anjou*. As for *Lorain*, *Bra-*
d the several Divisions made out of the Ruins
Kingdom of *Arles*, they held of the Emperor,
ome not under our Cognizance : Indeed the
s of the Kingdom thought that *Capet* ought to
all from them, because they had put the Crown
Head ; so that nothing but his Patience and
e could keep them from Extremity, and sustain
n the Throne : The Count *de la Marche* and
was one of the most unruly, and *Fulk Ner-*
g some Pretensions to *Tours*, the other besie-
his behalf, and refused to desist at the King's
nd ; nay he was so high, that when asked,
was that made you a Count ? he replied, *the*
it made you a King ; and so going on with his

are not perfect Barbarians, was Religious, Devout, and a Lover of the Churchmen, gave up all the Abbys held, and surrendered his Right of Election to the Clergy and Monks; and by his Example those Lords that possessed Church-Lands as their own Patrimony not only restored them, but by way of reparation founded Monasteries which they filled with reformed Monks, such was the Devotion or rather Superstition of those Times. And now the Thred of *Capet's* Life being spun out, he ended his days on the 29th of *Aug* this year, tho others will have it to be the 22^d of *Nov*. being about five and fifty years old, after he had reigned nine, and some Months, and was buried at *St Dennis*: He had by his Wife *Adeleide*, *Robert*, and three Daughters, *Hadvige*, or *Avoyde*, Wife of *Renik IV.* Earl of *Mons* and *Haynault*, *Adelais* Wife of *Renaud I.* Earl of *Nevers*, and *Gisle* married to *Hug I.* Earl of *Poitou*. The same year died *Richard Sans Peur*, or the fearless Duke of *Normandy*, aged sixty four years, of which he had reigned nine, and was succeeded by his Son *Richard II.*

Hugh Capet's
Death.
996.

The burning
Sickness breaks
out again.

About this time the sacred Fire, which they termed the burning Sickness, that had formerly made great havock, broke out again, cruelly tormenting *France* especially for two Ages: It seized People on a sudden burnt the Entrails or some other part of the Body which fell off piecemeal, and happy were those that escaped with the loss of a Leg or an Arm. This Calamity in *Aquitain*, *Angoumois*, *Perigord*, and *Limousin* Anno 994, swept away above 40000 Persons in a few days time, and wrought at least this good effect, that the Great Ones who had tormented the Province by the intestine Feuds, fearing the Divine Indignation, made a solemn Oath among themselves to do Justice to their Subjects, and for this end formed a holy League which drew other Provinces by their Example to do the like. And this Century is no less remarkable, for having obtained the Name of the Iron-Age, which may have arisen from the continual and bloody Wars between the Western Princes, and from the terrible Devastations of the *Normans*, *Hungarians*, and *Saracens* but if they called it so from the Ignorance and Irregularity of Mens Manners, this was done rather in respect

The Reign of Robert.

131

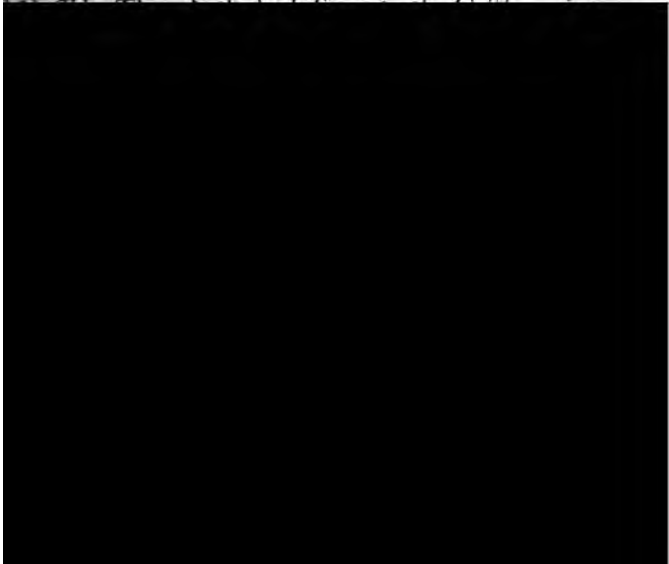
the Church of *Rome*, where, according to *Menguenius* Confession, there were in Truth hor-
mes and Disorders.

C H A P. IV.

The Reign of ROBERT.

S. King, compleat both of Body and Mind,
a handfom Stature, a sweet and grave Air,
and sage Humour, having had very good
education, became very knowing for that Age, much
religious and Zealous for the Service of God,
Charitable and *Debonnaire* towards his Peo-
ple, a Prince that ever wore a Crown; and in
his Reign was favoured with the choicest Blef-
[] mean a long and happy Peace, which after
light and petty Wars he enjoyed near thirty

it hapning that the Earl of *Poitou*, and Duke
of *Brittain* having War with *Boson II.* Earl of *Pe-* 997, and
Robert was obliged to assist him as his King- 98.



in those days punish Gentlemen with Death
bellion or Felony, unless they committed it
and in that Case they hanged them on some
Place, that Crime degrading them of all Nobility.

Degrees of
Marriage
appointed.
1002.

About this time the Degrees of Consanguinity
in Marriage was prohibited, having been extended
the seventh Kindred, caused many Broils, especially
among Princes and Great Men, who commonly
akin to one another, even within that Degree
as soon as Man and Wife fell out, or that
had a mind to trouble them, they needed but
Oath they were of Kin within the forbidden Limit
and produce Witnesses upon it, and then the
Court or Assembly would do the work. Queen *Lutgar*
Robert's first Wife being dead, he was politic
vised to marry *Bertha*, Sister to *Rodolph* the Late
of *Burgundy*, the Widow of *Endes* I. Earl of
Artois, and Mother of *Endes* II. then young. Being
being akin in the fourth Degree, and besides that
having held a Child with her at the Font; he
he might prevent the Inconveniency of Nullity
Marriage by the Authority of the *Gallican*
and the Assembly he called for that purpose was
it; only *Abbon* the Abbot of *Fleury*, a violent
not having been able to dissuade the King from
Match, bestirred himself with much Vigour
it dissolved; and the Pope excommunicated
shops that had authorized it, as also the two
that were contracted, if they did not forthwith
rate; but the King not obeying the Sentence,

K. Robert
excommunicated.
1003.

by an unheard of Procedure, put the whole
under an Interdiction, to which the blind King
humbly submitted, that all the King's Domesticks
except two or three forsook him, and threw what
was left at his Table to the Dogs, no body then
lawful to eat of that Meat he had but touched
were these Hardships, and not a monstrous
punishment by his Wife, who, the Miracle-mongers
delivered of a Child, whose Neck and Feet were
a Goose, that constrained him to part with
not till two or three years after; and we find
upon, that they made a Journey to *Rome* either
to defend their Cause, or crave the Pope's Pardon.

here, the Marriage remained null; to that the Power of the See of *Rome* was now at that nothing must withstand it, of which take

Example more: *Guy* Viscount of *Limoges* had gained the Bishop of *Angoulesme* Prisoner, he led for it to *Rome*, where the Pope *Silvester II.* sentenced *Guy* to be tied to the Necks of two horses, and his Body thus torn and bruised to be on the Dunghil, and the same was to be put in three days after: In the mean time the himself moved with Compassion, pardoned and stealing away in the night, generously con-
vinced him to *France* again along with him.

At this time *Henry* Duke of *Burgundy*, and the of *Hugh Capet* dying without Issue, he by left the Dutchy to *Otho-William* surnamed the Great, who being already Earl of *Burgundy* now the *Franche Comte*, and assisted by the Earl

of *Langres*, he by virtue of a Grant took possession of all *Burgundy*: But *Robert*, to whom this Dutchy did of Right belong to his Uncle, marched with a great Army, together with *Richard* Duke of *Normandy*, to suppress the same, took *Auxerre* by Articles, and *Avalon* by the Walls, as they said, miraculously falling before him; and at length he expelled *Otho-William* confining him beyond the *Soane*, where he be-

1006.

Robert recovers Burgundy.

Robert
first.

1013.

1015.

Pr. Hugh
crowned
King.
1017.

his Table, to touch their Ulcers, and to make the Sign of the Crois over them, whereby they pretend they were oftentimes healed: He was a Prince also that delighted to sing in the Quire, and composed Words and Notes for the Songs and Responses, some of which the Church has preserved, and makes use of to this day: But for all this the King having conferred the Arch-bishoprick of *Bourges* upon his natural Son *Goslin*, Abbot of *Fleury*, the Clergy opposed it much, alledging the Canons admitted no Bastards to the Prelacy, which occasioned so many Tumults that they were not allayed till five Years after: However the King was not wanting to justify the Rights, and undertake the Protection of the Clergy as occasion offered. For *Raynard II.* surnamed the Bad, Earl of *Sens*, using much violence against *Leoteric* his Arch-bishop, and all the Clergy within his Territories; *Robert* besieged and took his City, deprived him of his Earldom, and re-joined it to his Demeans, and then suppress the Rebellion of the *Burgundians*, destroying and pulling down their Castles and fortified Places, that they might no longer be the Receptacles of such Persons.

And now *Hugh* the King's eldest Son being a Prince of great Accomplishments both in Body and Mind, and of early hopes, tho he were not yet 10 Years old, his Father caused him to be crowned at *Compeigne*, on the day of *Pentecost* this Year, and his Name was made use of in all Publick Acts with that of his Father.

In the mean time the *Danes* and *Normans* had not quite forgot their Custom of Piracy, for they landed now in *Walden*, where all the Country armed to expel them; and the Duke of *Aquitain* going to attack them, 20 or 30 of his most considerable Men fell into Holes covered over with Branches and green Turfs, which the *Normans* had digged about the Avenues to their Camp, and this disheartned the rest from advancing against them; however the *Normans* fearing the worst, retired to their Ships in the Night, but demanded what Ransom they pleased for the Prisoners they had got.

Now a War breaking out between *Richard* Duke of *Normandy* and *Eudes* Earl of *Compeigne*, the latter raised

raised so many other Enemies against the *Norman*, that that Prince fearing to be overwhelmed, sent for Assistance to the King of *Sweden* and *Norway*, who sacked the City of *Dele*, and marched towards *Chartres*: Upon which all *France* thro a remembrance of former Desolations, fell into an extreme apprehension of danger, and the King so bestirred himself to quench this Flame, that he brought the two Princes to an Agreement, and the *Northern* Kings to retire home. But tho the King had conquered this difficulty, yet the proud and imperious humour of *Queen Constance* made him perpetually uneasy; he used all means to mollify her, and the Queen one day being offended with a Favourite of his, named *Hugh de Beauvis*, and complaining of him to her Cousin *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou*, with desires he would revenge her; the Earl sent 12 of his Country Gentlemen to seize *Hugh* as he was hunting with the King, and cruelly cut off his Head in his Presence without any regard to his Intreaties. The King was not only forced to put up this Affront for fear of a greater mischief, but withal to endure this Step-Mother to treat his Son *Hugh* with the greatest Indignity, even to the reducing of him to the want of all Necessaries; but the young King did not long survive to bear them, for he departed this Life on the 17th of *September* this Year, in the Flower of his Age, his Death being lamented by all *Europe* for his rare and lovely Qualities, which had acquired him so great Reputation, that he could hardly have made it good if he had long survived. King *Robert* had three Sons more, *Henry*, *Robert* and *Endes*, which last, some said, was the eldest of them all: However it were, the Father now caused *Henry* to be crowned, tho the Queen by a depraved Appetite had undertaken to advance *Robert* to the Throne, and for that Reason caused a great many Tumults to the great mortification of her Husband, but she failed to carry her point against him.

*The Queen
proud and
revengeful.
1025.*

*K. Hugh's
Death.
1028.*

*Henry
crowned.
1029.*

But his Troubles did not arise alone from this Woman, other Accidents gave him some uneasiness; more particularly, the King having allowed the liberty of electing Bishops to the Clergy, yet upon the Death of the Bishop of *Langres*, he by his absolute Authority sub-

devout.

1013.

1015.

Pr. Hugh
crowned
King.

1017.

the Croſs over them, whereby they pretend to oftentimes healed: He was a Prince alſo that ed to ſing in the Quire, and compoſed W Notes for the Songs and Responses, ſome the Church has preſerved, and makes uſe of day: But for all this the King having conſ Arch-biſhoprick of *Bourges* upon his natural Son Abbot of *Fleury*, the Clergy oppoſed it muching the Canons admitted no Baſtards to the which occaſioned ſo many Tumults that they allayed till five Years after: However they not wanting to juſtify the Rights, and under Protection of the Clergy as occaſion offered *Raynard II.* ſurnamed the Bad, Earl of *Sens*, uſed violence againſt *Leoteric* his Arch-biſhop, and a Clergy within his Territories; *Robert* beſieged took his City, deprived him of his Earldom joined it to his Demeans, and then ſuppreſſed bellion of the *Burgundians*, deſtroying and down their Caſtles and fortified Places, might no longer be the Receptacles of ſuch P

And now *Hugh* the King's eldeſt Son being of great Accompliſhments both in Body and of early hopes, tho he were not yet old, his Father cauſed him to be crowned at on the day of *Pentecoſt* this Year, and his made uſe of in all Publick Acts with that other.

In the mean time the *Danes* and *Normans* quite forgot their Cuſtom of Piracy, for they now in *Poitou*, where all the Country armed pel them; and the Duke of *Aquitain* going to them, 20 or 30 of his moſt conſiderable Men Holes covered over with Branches and gr which the *Normans* had digged about the their Camp, and this diſheartned the reſt from ing againſt them; however the *Normans* ſe worſt, retired to their Ships in the Night manded what Ranſom they pleaſed for the they had got.

Now a War breaking out between *Richard* of *Normandy* and *Eudes* Earl of *Campaigne*,

so many other Enemies against the *Norman*,
 at Prince fearing to be overwhelmed, sent for
 aid to the King of *Sweden* and *Norway*, who
 the City of *Dele*, and marched towards *Char-*
lpon which all *France* thro a remembrance of for-
 elations, fell into an extreme apprehension of
 t, and the King so bestirred himself to quench
 lame, that he brought the two Princes to an
 ment, and the *Northern* Kings to retire home.
 to the King had conquered this difficulty, yet
 ous and imperious humour of Queen *Constance*
 him perpetually uneasy; he used all means to
 y her, and the Queen one day being offended
 a Favourite of his, named *Hugh de Beauvis*, and *The Queen*
 maining of him to her Cousin *Fulk* Earl of *Anjou*, proud and
 desires he would revenge her; the Earl sent 12 of *revengeful.*
 country Gentlemen to seize *Hugh* as he was hunt-
 1025.
 ith the King, and cruelly cut off his Head in his
 ce without any regard to his Intreaties. The
 was not only forced to put up this Affront for
 f a greater mischief, but withal to endure this
 Mother to treat his Son *Hugh* with the greatest
 nity, even to the reducing of him to the want
 'Necessaries; but the young King did not long *K. Hugh's*
 e to bear them, for he departed this Life on the *Death.*
 f *September* this Year, in the Flower of his Age, 1028.
 ath being lamented by all *Europe* for his rare

1030, &c.

Robert's
death and
character.

1033.

substituting another in his place, the Canons poisoned him; and the King putting in another, this excited so great a trouble among the Clergy of that Diocese, that he was forced to send his Son to instal and secure him from their Attempts. Now whilst *Henry* was in this Country, there happened a great Eclipse of the Sun; and *Robert* his Father was seized of a Distemper whereof he died on the 20th of *July* this Year, after he had lived 61, and of them reigned 45 and a half, viz. 9 and a half with his Father, and 36 since his Death. It was no fault of his Government that *France* was not compleatly happy, he gave his Subjects what depended upon him, I mean Peace and Justice, but had the unhappiness to see a Famine three times; after which a Plague made a great destruction in his Dominions in the Years 1007, and 1010, and from 1030 to 1033, which last was so severe in this Country, that many People were seen to dig up dead Carcases for Food, to go a hunting after little Children, and lie in wait at the corners of Woods like Beasts of Prey to devour Passengers; nay, there was one so possessed with the covetous desire of Gain, more cruel than Famine it self, that he exposed human Flesh to Sale in the City of *Tournus*, but that detestable Prodigy was expiated by the People in the Flames.

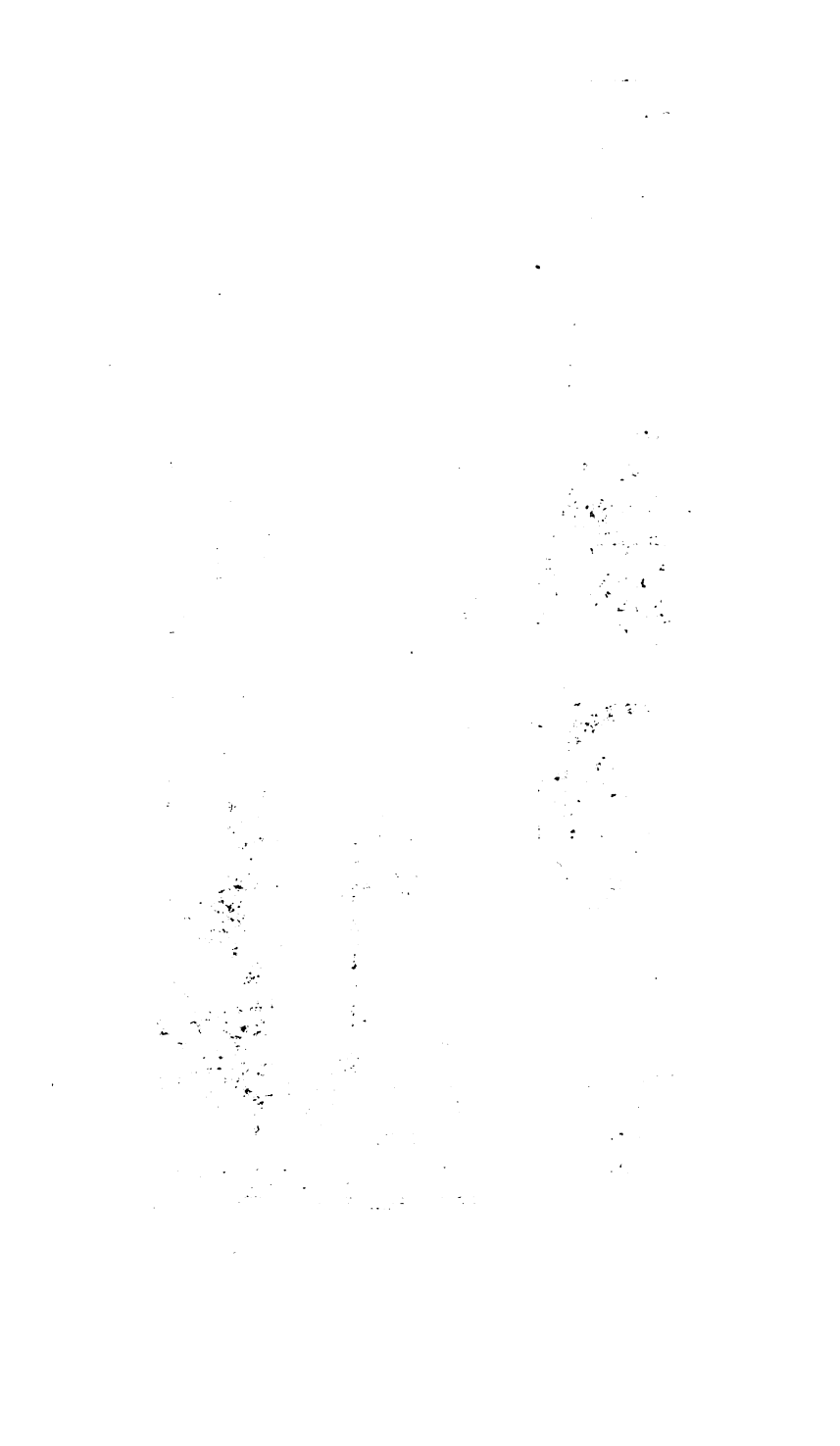
C H A P. V.

The Reign of HENRY I.

THIS King's first and most capital Enemy was his own Mother, who to advance her beloved *Robert*, made a good Party among the Nobility, and more particularly engaged *Baldwin* Earl of *Flanders*, and *Eudes* Earl of *Champagne*, on which last she conferred the City of *Sens*; but *Henry* showing a vigour both of Body and Mind above his Age, with the Assistance of *Robert* Duke of *Normandy*, gave her and her Party so many Defeats, that he reduced her in spite of all her Projects to live quietly with him. After which he gave his Brother *Robert* the Cities of *Chaumont*

and





use, and the French Vexin, and at the same Henry's
 erred the Dutchy of Burgundy upon him, Grant to
 m issued the first Race of the Dukes of Bur- Robert his
 the Blood Royal. In the mean time the Brother.

Champagne did not look upon himself van- 1035-
 y the Defeat of the Party, so that the King
 him lay down his Sword was forced to
 Army twice, and the third time not only
 Troops, but caused him to fly away naked,
 himself.

his Earl after many other Adventures against
 the Emperor about his Pretensions to the
 of Burgundy, dying, his Sons in 1040, &c.

do Homage for their Territories to King
 cause he had not assisted their Father against
 error. However they had also another Pre-
 ledging the Crown belonged to his Brother
 and in short they encouraged him to set up for
 but Henry did not give this Conspiracy time
 any Progress, for he besieged his Brother in
 whither he had retired, took him and sent

her to Orleans, and so we hear no more of his Brother
 done, he marched against the Earl of Cham- Eudes
 routed him; from whence turning his Arms Prisoner.
 the Earl of Meulon their Ally, he deprived him 1041.

Earldom: On the other hand he animated
 armed Mortel against Thibault: whereupon

Henry
assists the
Normans.
1041.

Rodolph de Gale his Constable for his Guardian; the Lords were very loth to obey him, because the Defect of his Birth, and they were headed *Guy of Burgundy*, the Son of *Reynold* Earl of *Franche Comte*, and *Alix* the deceased Duke *Robert* Sister; and indeed the Faction was so strong, that they had like to have ruined *William*, but *Henry* espoused his Cause, and both of them engaging the Enemy in the Valley of the Downs near *Caen*, the King was beat down with a Lance by a Gentleman *Constance*, but recovered again without any hurt, and so the Rebels were entirely defeated.

The Earl of *Anjou*, who had been once in great favour with the King, I know not from what coldness grown betwixt them, let fall some Words, which highly offended *Henry*, that he undertook to chastise him; and therefore he being accompanied with the Duke of *Normandy*, entred into his Territories, but they were soon reconciled: And now Duke *William* having attained to Years fit for Matrimony, espoused *Matilda* the Daughter of *Baldwin* the Pious, Earl of *Flanders*, and of *Adeloida* the Daughter of King *Robert*; so that she being of kin to him, they were forced to obtain a Dispensation of the Pope for it; but the Church opposing this, the Earl of *Arques* heads the Malecontents, but was presently repulsed by the Duke who besieged him in the Castle of *Arques*: The King who changed sides either according to his Humour or Interest, highly undertook his Defence, and went in Person to the Relief of the Place; but tho he put some Provisions into it, the Duke was resolutely bent to keep it blocked up; so that the Earl at length was forced to give it up, on condition he might enjoy his Life without loss of Members, and have some Land for his Subsistence. Hereupon the broken Remains of the Party fled to King *Henry*, who growing somewhat jealous of *William's* Prosperity, and pushed forwards by the Earls of *Anjou* and *Poitou*, the Duke's Enemies, promised to turn him out of his Dutchy in order to which being advanced towards *Roan*, the Normans had the good Fortune to cut his Vanguard to pieces, between *Escony* and *Mortemer*, where which check the King delivered up the Castle of *Tallevres* to the Duke.

Henry
worsted by
the Normans.
1047.

5. *The Reign of Henry I.*

139

1048.

Year the Emperor *Henry III.* called the *Black,*
King of France had an Interview in the
 of *Messin,* where they revived their antient
 : After which we find nothing material

Country till 1054. when *Thibald* Earl of *Char-*
ing it to Heart, that the King should thrust
 of the Earldom of *Tours,* and not being able
 satisfaction, he went and waited upon the Em-
Metz, who made him a Knight, and promised
 Protection: But to prevent any jealousy and
 that this Journey might sow between the Em-
 and the King, they thought fit to set all things
 a mutual Interview, at the same place where
 d formerly met, where the King complained

Governor had contravened the Articles of Al-
 and finding no satisfaction he conceived some
 sions of an ill Design upon his Person, and so
 from thence by Night. *Normandy* having still
 marks of division in its Bosom, the King think-
 make advantage of it attempted to bring it to
 w by a second Expedition, which was no more
 ate than the first, his Army having been defeat-
 the Plains of *Varaville,* after which he made a
 with the Duke.

Henry de-
 feated in
 Norman-
 dy.

1058.

King not long after finding himself broken
 he Toils of Government, tho he was not above
 rs of Age, called together the *Grande*es of the

Hugh was Earl of *Vermandois*; the King left the three under the Guardianship of the Earl of *Flanders* who had married his Sister, and entrusted him with the Regency of the Kingdom.

C H A P. VI.

The Reign of PHILIP I.

1060, &c. EVERY Body quietly submitted to the Rule of Earl *Baldwin*, only the *Gascoigns* refused obedience, apprehending as they pretended, that he should by that Title destroy his Pupil, and invade the Crown, under the colour of his being married to his Daughter: The Earl for the present wisely dissimulated the Injury, but two Years after marched with his Army towards the *Pyrenees*, under a shew of a War upon the *Saracens* in *Spain*, who when he passed the *Garonne*, he stopp'd in the Rebels Country and brought them to their Duty without striking a Blow.

Baldwin
dies.

1067.

From henceforward *Baldwin* governed *France* with great Tranquillity to the day of his Death, which opened in the Year 1067. and left two Sons behind him, *Baldwin* of *Mons*, and *Robert* the *Frisson*; who quickly fell out one with the other; for the eldest King to divest the youngest of *Friezland*, was beaten and slain, leaving two Sons *Arnold* and *William*, about the Guardianship of whom there was a Contest between their Uncle *Robert*, and *Richilda* his Mother; but she being supported by the Duke of *Lower Lorain*, defeated *Robert's* Army, and threw him out of part of his Country, which made her so proud and haughty that the *Flemings* forsook her. King *Philip* would have made himself Arbitrator between the Parties, but *Richilda* coming to *Paris* with rich Presents gained his Council, and engaged him open to espouse her Quarrel.

K. Philip
defeated.

1070.

The King inflamed with the Heat of Youth, needs go in Person to make his first Essay in War, but the same proved unsuccessful, for he was

ted, and *Richilda* taken and carried Prisoner to
; but as he was retreating towards *Monstre-*
e Earl of *Bologne*, who had a great Body of
s, took *Robert*, and carried him to *St. Omers*;
commanded the Place surrendred it to deliver
s, at which the King was so enraged that he
and burnt the City. The same Year she lost
Battel, tho still assisted by the *French*, where-
ce Earl of *Bologne* being taken Prisoner, his
the Chancellor of *France*, and Bishop of
to obtain his Liberty, brought the King to inter-
no farther with that Affair; nay what is more,
de him marry *Bertha* the Daughter of *Florent*
Holland, whereby he was engaged to main-
s Father-in-Law's Cause, who with his Assistance
ed *Richilda's* Army a fourth time, and so re-
d Master of *Flanders*.

g *Philip* being pretty well grown up, ran into
Disorders and Branglings with his Subjects;
which Pope *Gregory VII.* wrote to the Duke of
ain, that he together with the Nobility of the
dom should make him some Remonstrances, and
e if he did not amend, he would both excom-
ate him and all the Subjects that obeyed him, and
place the Excommunication upon *St. Peter's* Altar,
aggravate it every day.

properly the Thred of our History, we shall c
it.

K. Philip
puts his
Wife away.
1086.

King *Philip* being a very voluptuous Prince, growing disgusted with his Wife *Bertha*, he made of the Pretence of Consanguinity, to have his riage made null by the Authority of the Church he had a Son by her named *Lewis* about five Year and a Daughter whose Name was *Constance*.

William
the Con-
queror's
Death.
1088.

two Years after this *William* the Conqueror being der a Course of Diet at *Roan*, to reduce the grown fatness of his Body, and *Philip* by w railery sending to know when he would be up after his lying in, the other answered, when he abroad he would visit him with 10000 Lances in of Candles, and he was in reality as good Word soon after, for he destroyed all the *French* and forced and burnt *Mantes*, but over-heating self in the Action, he fell sick, and died at *Roan* long after.

Now *Fulk le Rechin* of *Aquitain*, after having ed off two Wives under pretence of Consanguinity and in 1089 married *Bertrade* the Daughter of *de Montfort*; the Appetite of this young, beautiful gay Woman not suiting with the Age of her band, she after three Years time forsook him, to her self into the Arms of King *Philip*, who lover of Women, and not above 35 Years but tho *Bertrade* was kin to *Philip* in the fifth or Degree, and was not divorced from her former band, yet the Bishop of *Bayeux* for his own endertook to marry them, wherein he was hotly opposed by the Bishop of *Chartres*. In the mean time was not a little Lord in the Kingdom, that did not King *Philip* rocked asleep in the Arms of his be *Bertrade*.

1095.

The Croi-
sade.

This Year came *Urban II.* for Refuge into *F* the Emperor having got him deposed in the Cou *Clermont*, where *Peter* the Hermit, and Native of *dy* near *Amiens*, appeared with his Remonstrances cite them to undertake the Croisade against the the Heat whereof lasted for above 200 Years, proved indeed the ruine of the Nobility and mon People; for the Popes and Kings in the

and great opportunities towards making themselves absolute : Among the chief Commanders of the Forces for this Expedition, we may reckon *Hugh the Great, King Philip's Brother, Duke of Normandy, the Earls Raymond of Toul, Stephen of Chartres, Baldwin of Haynault, Hugh of Flanders*, with a great many more ; but of this Holy War (they call it) we shall hardly enter into a detail, unless it be in somewhat very particular : And we will here only observe, that it gave birth to the use of Coats of Arms ; every Nation had some Symbol or other in their Ensigns, the Legions were distinguished by the different Colours of their Shields and Bucklers, particular Men likewise adorn their Shields with Devices which denote their Birth, brave Actions, Wit or Humour. In these Expeditions those that had such Symbols, were therefore, made them more proper for them, and those that had none contrived and chose such as might make them conspicuous and remarkable in Battell. Armour for the Head hindring them from being seen by their Faces) as well as to distinguish them from others, and likewise that those Coats of Arms serve them as it were for Surnames, for in those times they had few or none : Some therefore took Devices in their Shields, whereof there was infinite

Absolved.

1102.

the Consent even of *Fulk* her Husband, and so strangely enchanted with that Woman, that often seen at her Feet, there to receive all Commands as if he had been a Slave; but *Belgick* Bishops honoured the King's Adultery Name of a Marriage, yet the Pope's Legate to communicate with him, and convened a Council at *Poitiers*, where he was once more excommunicated. However the King was so fixed in his Affection, he solicited the Pope's Favour so earnestly, that some Legates to review the Cause, which was *Baugency*; and the King and *Bertrade* promised to abstain from each others Company till the Pope's Satisfaction, the Council broke up without giving Judgment; at length having obtained the same at *Rome*, he was absolved at *Paris*, and his Marriage confirmed, so efficacious is Constancy, even in the most commendable.

Lewis
goes to
England.

1103.

About this time young *Lewis* whom they named Prince of the Kingdom, and who was designed King by his Father, took the Government of France upon him; and the first difficulty he had to encounter was from *Bouchard* Lord of *Montmercy* against whom he took the part of the Monks of *Clugny*, whose Lands that Lord had pillaged; and when he appeared according to a Citation in the King's Court of Justice, he refused to obey the Sentence against him therein; but *Lewis* by burning and destroying all his Villages, forced him to sue for Peace; he also humbled divers others, but he would not or would not intermeddle with the Quarrel between the two *Norman* Brothers, *Robert* and *Henry*; the Year he went over into *England* to King *Henry* I. his Mother-in-law *Bertrade* solicited to send for him into the World; but this Artifice failing, she got Poison given him at his Return into *France*, which much endangered his Life; and the Year following he was contracted to *Luciana*, the Daughter of the Lord of *Rocheport*. In the mean time *Ebles* and *Ronci* a famous Captain, that had often made Raids into *Spain*, vexed all *Champagne*, to the Annoyance of whom *Lewis* came with so much celerity, that he forced the Plunderer to lay down his Arms, and

The Reign of Philip I.

145

forbear his farther Robberies; but the Pro-
 e-gave *Thomas* Lord of *Marle* against *En-*
de Boves his Father, was not so just: *Thomas*
 eans of his Castle of *Montagne* in *Laonnois*
 d so many Devastations and Insolencies,
 Father was forced to besiege him; upon
 his revictualled the Castle, and this so en- 1106.
 e Father and some other Lords, that they
 they would own him no longer for their
 , but this at last was amicably composed;
 y swore to be faithful to him. After
Paschal II. going into *France*, at the Council
 pronounced the Dissolution of Prince *Lew-*
 rriage, which had not yet been consum-
 mated. *Luciana*, whose discontented Father
 arms; but he and his Confederates were
 defeated by *Lewis*, who afterwards took *Gour-*

Philip, at length quite wasted with excess of *K. Philip's*
 , died at *Melun*, on the 26th of *July*, at the *Death and*
 56 Years, whereof he had reigned 48 and *Character*
 , and was buried in *St. Bennet's* Abby upon 1108.
 , according to his own desire. He was a
 f good Shape and Stature, but his Softness
 orous Delights had rendred his Body un-
 d heavy, and stupified his Conscience and
 By his first Wife *Berthe* he had *Lewis*

C H A P. VII.

*The Reign of LEWIS VI. surnamed
the Gros.*

THIS Prince, no less massive of Body than his Father, but brave, active, and vigilant, exposed himself boldly to all Labours and Dangers, and undertook to suppress the Licentiousness of the Nobility who had formed several Leagues against him, the chief Promoter of which was Guy Earl of Rochefort, who had perhaps been the Instrument of hindring him, he was crowned in his Father's Life time: The fear of the League made him hasten his Coronation, which was effected five days after his Father's decease at Orleans by the Arch-Bishop of Sens and his Suffragans; he would not have it at Rheims, because Rodolph chosen by the Clergy, and confirmed by the Pope, had not his Approbation.

1109, &c.

For all the King's Coronation, the War raised at Rochefort and his Adherents went on; and the King at the same time had War with Henry I. King of England, and Duke of Normandy, by reason, as the French alledge, Henry upon his doing Homage to Normandy, did not keep his Promise to demolish the Castle of Gisors upon the Epte, the Boundary between the French and Normans. The Difference was left to be decided by Commissioners on both sides, but the Parties being not able to agree, King Lewis offered to prove it by single Combat, and some jesting said, the two Kings had best fight upon a Bridge that shook and was ready to fall, but Henry refused the Challenge; whereupon they came to a Battel where the English lost, and the broken Remains of their Army fled to Melun; but Robert Earl of Flanders, rashly pursuing them, he was slain and succeeded by his Son Baldwin.

The Malecontents under the favour of this War drew Philip the King's Brother to be of their Party who had two strong Holds Mantes and Montleher

first of which the King took, and the other also he
 need to *Milon* Viscount de *Troyes*, who had some
 hit to it: Then he attacked *le Puiset* in favour of
Count Earl of Chartres, and took the Place toge-
 with *Hugh de Cressy* the Owner who was therein;
 this War begat another, for *Thibault* being re-
 quired to build a Fort on the Limits of the Country of
Normandy, under pretence that the King had promised to
 give him leave to do it, the King opposed, and the o-
 ther offering to prove it by Combat, proposed his
 Chamberlain for his Champion, himself being but
 young; while the King on his part appointed *An-
 toine de Gorlande* his Grand Seneschal; but the Cham-
 pions could find no Court nor Judge in the Kingdom,
 so could secure to them the Field of Battel, tho this
 perhaps underhand was obstructed by the King.

The Earl therefore with the Assistance of *Henry I. R. Lewis*
 King of *England*, his Mother's Brother, and the Duke at War
 of *Bretagne*, declared War against King *Lewis*; for with his
 you must know the Nobility, according to the Cust- Lords, &c.
 men of those times, believed they had Right to do it,
 when they apprehended Justice was denied them; and
 several other Lords joined in with them. In short,
 they gave the King a great deal of Trouble, and he
 made them suffer so much on his part, that he brought

1117.

the Refuge of King *Lewis* ly troubles
 Revolts, with French say t French King of
 Source and of them
Lewis by way of retaliation
William Son of the deceased
 admitted him to do him homage
Normandy, and gave him the first
 first occasion of this Quarrel: This
 troublesome to King *Henry*, that
 with *Lewis*, and promised to leave all
 his Mercy.

Councils in
 France.

1119.

The Cardinals that followed Pope
 to *France*, whither he retired for
 King *Henry* I. and died soon after,
 Archbishop of *Vienne* to succeed
 of *Calixtus* II. the whole Kingdom or
 part, and therefore he held a Council at
 and another at *Rheims*, wherein divers
 made for taking away Simony, the Ir-
 regularities from Laicks, Concubines from
 selling of Sacraments: The French King
 and the Emperor *Henry* refusing to be
 to part with the Right of Investitures,
 nicated. There were also the same Co-
 the Popes and the Kings of *France*, the
 the Election and Provisions of the Po-
 pish without their Consent; but the
 not fit to deal with these so rudely, for fear
 making too many Enemies at once, but
 them as a Refuge against the Emperors.

War be-
 tween
 France
 and Eng-
 land.

The Peace between the Kings of
 land was of no long Duration; the
 Duke *Robert* and his Son *William*
 and the Earls of *Anjou* and
 him, as *Thibault* Earl of *Champagne*
 who was his Uncle: *Balwin* of
 received at the Castle of *Bures*, and
 his Nephew *Charles* the Good; at last
 of Ravages, Conflagrations, Si-
 Plunderings, and two great Battels
 two Kings, one in the Plain of

the *French* were worsted, and the other near
lle, where the Success was doubtful, Pope *Ca-*
rent on purpose to *Gisors*, and brought them to
 reement, upon condition they should restore
 had taken from each other; and so the Dut-
 mained to *Henry*, who gave it to his eldest Son ^{Wars in}
 surnamed *Adelin*, to the prejudice of *Wil-* ^{Norman-}
 Nephew: But this Peace did not put an end ^{dy.}
 ry's Troubles, for soon after he lost his three
 Shipwrack, and at the same time his Nephews
 stirred up new Commotions in *Bretagne*, and
 aged the *French* King to support them, which re-
 the Desolations of that Province; and the War
 hotter and hotter, and was carried on with va-
 uccess.

Emperor about the same time being reconciled 1124.
 Pope, and having laid down the Investitures,
 ill boiling with Anger, would needs discharge it
 France: He had married *Maud* Daughter to the
 of *England*, and for that reason as well as from
 resentment he conceived, because *Lewis* had pro-
 Pope *Calixtus*, he raised a great Army to lay
 where *Calixtus* had held a Council against
 flat with the Ground. *Lewis* on his part resolved
 aw together all the Forces of the Kingdom; inso-
 that he had in a short time in all 200000 men, out
 e Isle of *France*, *Picardy*, and *Champaigne* only.

the Duke of *Aquitain* came to his Vassals Reli having viewed the King's Power from the Mountain, he sent to offer him all due Ob and brought the Earl as far as *Orleans*, to su all that should be enjoined him.

Lewis
makes

William of
Norman-
dy Earl of
Flanders.

1127.

While *Charles* the Good prudently govern ders, he was basely murdered at the Instigatio *Bastard William* of *Tpres*; at the Horror c Fact, and the Intreaties of the Nobility, I mediately mounted, and having most severely ed the Parricide, he adjudged the Earldom to of *Normandy* Duke *Robert's* Son, as being ne without any regard had to *Baldwin* Earl *riault*, and *William* of *Tpre*, who pretended a the Succession, and obstinately struggled to ca force; but the King handled him so roughly t vested him of *Tpre*, and all the Lands he held ders; and *Stephen* Earl of *Bologne* had as l cefs therein, tho supported by the King of *E* Uncle. However *William* out of a covetous disoblighing his new Subjects by Taxes laid up and the Sale of Offices, the principal Cities and invited *Thierry* Earl of *Alfatia* to cor their Prince, and indeed he was of the Blood Earls by the Female Side. The King advanc as *Artois*, undertook to serve *William* again, ing things otherwise disposed than he expecte turned. *William* for all this lost not his Cou fought and routed *Thierry* near *Alost*; but his Victory, he received a Wound in his Arm being ill drest proved fatal to him, so that Death all the Commotions raised in *Norman* Party wholly ceased.

William's
Death.

1128.

In this King's Reign there were four Broth Family of the *Garlands*, who had the greatest the King's Favour. *Anseau* had the Office c Seneschal, which he held in Fief of the Ea *joit*; *Stephen* Arch-deacon of *Paris* was C *Giselbert* Butler, and *William* succeeded Senes the Death of *Anseau*, and *Stephen* came in he proved a Monster whom all People abhor his Pride ascended to that height as to p cope with Queen *Allix*, but she would not be

this was the reason he would have surrendered
 ice to *Amaury de Montfort* his Niece's Hus-
 ut the King not thinking that convenient, *Ste-*
 so bold as to take up Arms against him, and
 league with the King of *England*, *Thibault* Earl
pagne and others: The King vigorously attack-
 castle of *Livry*, which they had fortified, from
 he was wounded with an Arrow in the Thigh,
 which he took the Castle, and forced *Stephen* at
 enounce the Office of Seneschal; but the Party
 rong, he thought fit to leave him that of Chan-
 And now much Toil and Fatiguing more than *Pr. Philip*
 ed Age, making King *Lewis* old, he took care *crowned*
 his eldest Son *Philip* set upon the Throne, which *King.*
 rformed at *Rheims* on the 14th day of *April*, in 1129.
 ng of *England's* Presence.

g *Lewis* who had defended the Churches, and
 ted the Clergy towards the latter end of his
 changed his Language, because they carried
 selves too haughtily, and would not allow him to
 meddle with the Nomination to Benefices, for
 he turned some out of their Sees and seized
 Lands, and the Bishop of *Paris* and Arch-bishop
 endeavoured to excommunicate him for it;
 ope *Honorius* made their Censures void. *Innocent*
 ceeding *Honorius*, and making War upon the
 of *Papal*, they elected another Pope at *Rome* in

The Reign of Lewis VII. Book

assistant at those Ceremonies to twelve only, Ecclesiasticks, and so many of the Laity; tho at the same time they did not divest other Peers of the Privilege of being judged only by their Peers in Feudal as well as in Civil and Criminal Matters.

And now King *Lewis* having admitted *Thierry Alsatia* to do Homage for *Flanders*, and approved the Will and Testament of *William IX. Duke of Guienne*, whereby he ordained his eldest Daughter *Eleanor* should marry the young King *Lewis*, and she bring him all his Lordships in Dowry, he fell sick of *Diarrhea*, which seized him in his return from the Castle of *St. Brieux* upon the *Loire*, the place whereof used to rob Merchants; and he departed Life at *Paris* on the first of *August* in the 30th year of his Reign, and the 58th of his Age. Before Prince his Reign, nothing in a manner ruled but violence, the People, Merchants, Clergy, Widows and Orphans being exposed to Rapine and Plunder; but he proved very active to bring things every where to good Order and Security: He had by his Wife *lix* Daughter to the Duke of *Savoy*, six Sons and a Daughter, *Lewis* who succeeded him, *Henry* a Gyman, *Hugh*, *Robert* Earl of *Dreux*, *Peter*, and Archdeacon of *Paris*; and the Daughter's Name *Constance*, first married to *Eustace* Earl of *Burgundy* and then to *Raymond V.* Earl of *Tholouse*.

C H A P. VIII.

The Reign of LEWIS VII. (surnamed the Young.

LEWIS the Young was married a little before his Father died; and when he had taken Possession of *Guyenne*, he brought his Queen to *Paris*, where he deavoured to establish the Publick Tranquillity, but some petty Tyrants began to disturb afresh; and the Cities to defend themselves from their Oppression created popular Magistrates who had power to

8. *The Reign of Lewis VII.*

153

izens, for which they obtained the King's Let-
tent, as also many goodly Privileges, thereby
ose them against the overgrown Power of the
; but some Citizens of *Orleans* using their Pri-
to the prejudice of the Royal Authority, and
ying, he quickly brought them to their Duty. Now
ing, as he was Sovereign in *Normandy*, inter-
between *Geofrey Plantagenet* Earl of *Anjou*, and
d the Empress's Husband, and King *Stephen* of Eng-
; and first taking *Geofrey's* Part, he received Ho-
of him, but *Stephen* going over, and having gain-
ame Advantage over *Geofrey*, *Lewis* changing his
y, put his Son *Eustace* into Possession, and gave
his Sister *Constance* in Marriage: However *Ge-*
y recovered a great Part of the Country soon af-

1138.

1139.

This year the Clergy of *Bourges* having chosen one
Gerard de la Chastre, a Person of singular Learning and
ety, for their Arch-Bishop, the King, for what reason
not certain, refused to give his Consent. *Peter*
ould thereupon have desisted, but Pope *Innocent* en-
amed him to perform his Duty, which the King ob-
mulating, the difference grew to that height, that the King ex-
ing was excommunicated by the Pope and put under communi-
Interdiction. Now *Thibault* Earl of *Champagne*, cated.
ving intermeddled somewhat too much in this Busi- 1141.
the King was offended with him for it: but his

K. Lewis
takes Vi-
tri.

1142.

takes *Vitri*, where he put all to the Sword, and fir the Church, wherein 300 poor innocent People w burnt; but the King becoming mightily afflicted Conscience for this Fact, he was easily persuaded der that Circumstance, to restore the Arch-Bish of *Bourges* to his See, and to grant the Earl a Peace.

K. Lewis
takes the
Croisade
upon him.

1147.

King *Lewis* now, as well as the Emperor *Conrad*, king the Croisade upon him, set forward after *W* *fontide* this year for the Holy Land; and marchi thro *Hungary* and *Thrace* with a great Army, pass the *Bosphorus*; so that by the following Lent he got to *Syria*, while on the other hand his Navy was to Sea to meet him there. The Government of Kingdom during his Absence he left by the Advice his Parliament held at *Estampes*, to *Rodolph* Earl of *V* *mandois*, and *Suger* Abbot of *St. Dennis*: There w not that wicked nor mean Artifice, but the perfidi *Manuel* Emperor of *Greece* made use of to desti both Armies, which had but too much effect u that of *Conrad's*; but for the *French* they were sa more by good Fortune than Prudence, and they a Battel in their Passage over the *Meander*, tho reaped but little Benefit by it; for afterwards not st ing upon their Guard, they received a notable Re in a narrow Pass thro the Mountains: At last the arrived at *Antioch*, where *Raymond* his Queen's U then held the Principality, and with whom he dic long continue at good terms; but proceeding forw on his march to *Jerusalem*, the Emperor and he ved upon the Siege of *Damascus*, tho with but ill cels; so that both Princes thought now of not more than to return home; and therefore the having gone on board his Fleet, met with the Nav the *Greeks*, that lay in wait for him; and some thors say, that as they were carrying him away soner, by good Fortune the Fleet of *Roger* King *Sicily*, their mortal Enemy, arrived, who qui made them quit their Prize, and destroyed many them.

Lewis re-
turns.

1149.

During this Expedition, *St. Bernard*, as they him, was wholly imployed in *Languedoc*, to op one *Henry* a Monk, and a Disciple of *Peter de B* whose Opinions were almost the same as the *Zuingl*

8. *The Reign of Lewis VII.*

155

vinists: And a certain rich Citizen of *Lyons* made likewise about ten or twelve years after the same thing in *Lyonnois* and the adjacent *es*, and his Followers were called the Poor of *Vandois*, as those of *Henry* and *Peter de Bruys* named *Henricians* and *Petro-Bruysians*. Now the effects of the King's Expedition, which had made many Widows and Orphans, and ruined many Families, great murmurings against *St. Bernard*, who had promised them a quite contrary Event; so when the Pope, two years after, would have had them march up another *Croisade*, the Monks of *Cisterciens* broke those measures.

1150

King *Lewis* at his return into *France* finding the War still continued between King *Stephen* of *England* and *Maud*, he joined his Army with *Eustace* King *Henry's* Son to lay Siege to the Castle of *Arques*, to the relief of which *Geofrey Maud's* Husband and his son *Henry*, to whom the year before he had resigned the *Duchy*, directed their march; but the two Armies being come in sight of each other, the Lords of both Parties mediated an Accommodation, and managed that the King agreed to admit Prince *Henry* upon paying him Homage as Duke of *Anjou*. Not long after this died *Eustace* Earl of *Bologn*, which in time made way for *Stephen*, now become Childless, to agree that *Henry* should succeed him.

King of *Castile*. It was not allowed the *Prance*, says *Tves de Chartres*, to marry *Ba* and there being a Report that *Constance* was *Lewis* two Years after being desirous to be therein, under pretence of going on Pilgrimage to *St. Jago* in *Galicia*, he took her Father's Counsel, who quickly removed that suspicion, and retained him most Royally at *Burgos*.

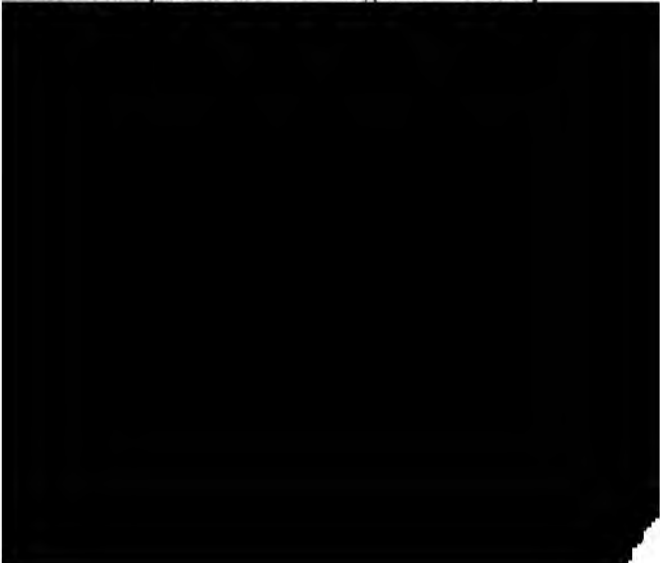
1159. *Henry* II. being now King of *England*, his *Geoffrey* demanded *Anjou*, *Toumain* and *Manche* him, according to his Father's Will; but he was far from that, that he took *Loudun*, *Cherbourg*, *Mirebeau* from him: But whether revived from the War or from other Causes, the Enmities between *Henry* and *Lewis* were ready to burst out, when they found a way to prevent them for a while by a Marriage between *Henry's* eldest Son and *Margaret*, *Lewis's* Daughter by his second Wife, tho both of them were Children. The Princess was put into the Father's Hands, and *Lewis* for a Portion promised to give her *Gisors*, and other places in the *Norman* *Vexin*; which in the *Interim* were entrusted to the keeping of the Grand Master of the Knights Templars, to be delivered up to *Henry* when the Marriage was consummated.

War renewed. 1160, &c. But this Alliance did not make their Friendship any long duration; for *Henry* II. besides holding the Duchy of *Normandy*, which had a part of *Bretagne* depending upon it, the County of *Maine*, *Anjou*, *Toumain* and *Aquitain* in France, whereby he seems to have been the greatest King of this time in our *Western* parts of the World, being not content herewith, he would take care to revive the Title his Wife had to the County of *Tholouse*, and therefore having confederated with *Raymond* Prince of *Arragon*, and Earl of *Burgundy*, he raised an Army of *Aquitani*ans and *Roman* *Veterane* Soldiers, amongst whom was *King* of *Scotland*; he entred *Languedoc*, took *Cahors*, and some other Places. *Lewis's* jealousy of his growing Greatness, which moved him at least as the Intreaties of Earl *Raymond* his Brother, he marched that way, and threw himself into

had so few with him that *Henry* might if he have taken it ; but here they were reconciled, King of *England* would not let fall his Claim old of the Earldom, till he had bestowed his sister *Jane*, the Widow of *William II.* King of *Normandy* on Earl *Raymond*.

the most potent and factious Family in all was the House of *Campagne* ; and therefore to divide them from the *English*, and gain them self, marries a younger Sister of the Family ; for the two Daughters of his first Bed, he gave them to *Henry*, the eldest of the four Brothers, of *Troyes*, and the other to *Thibault* the second, of *Blois*.

In the mean time Pope *Alexander*, for fear of the Emperor, being fled to *France*, and having held a Council at *Clermont*, wherein he did not forbear to put out his Excommunications against his Enemies, he went to *Torcy* on the *Loire*, where the two Kings of *England* and *France* received him with great submission ; and each taking one of the reins of his Horse's Bridle, conducted him to the place appointed for him. But now the Emperor *Frederick* coming a second time with Pope *Victor* to *Burgundy*, where the *French* King had refused to meet with him, he desired he might do it now,



King forced both their Earl and them to beg Pardon and dissolve their Corporation. *Lewis* also the first Year went in Person to fight the Earls of *Clermont* and *Du Puy*, with some others of *Auvergne*, who would not forbear robbing of Churches; he overthrew and brought them Prisoners to *Paris*, from whence after a considerable time they were released, upon giving their Oaths and Hostages for their Fidelity. In like manner he punished the Earl of *Chalons* with the loss of his Country; however this Man's Daughter re-entred upon her Matrimony.

1165. King *Lewis* this Year had a Son born, whom he believed to have been sent from Heaven in return of his Prayers, and for that Reason he was surnamed *Dieu-donne*, i. e. the Gift of God, and afterwards the *Conqueror*, from the brave Actions performed by him. Some few Years after this, the Feuds between the two Kings were renewed, upon several occasions, particularly one was from the Earl of *Auvergne*, whom *Lewis* as his Sovereign Lord took into his Protection against King *Henry*, to whom the Earl was a Vassal as holding of him Lands in *Aquitain*; another was the supplication *Lewis* gave to *Thomas Becket* Arch-bishop of *Canterbury*, who had fled into *France*: The War thereupon broke forth, and lasted two Years; however it was carried but slowly on, and as the Respect both of the Kings had for Pope *Alexander's* Mediation was considerable it brought them for some time to an Agreement; but having personally had a Conference at *St. Germain Laye*, they concluded a Peace, and there the Kings of *England's* Sons did Homage to *Lewis* for those Lands their Father secured to them by Advance of Inheritance; *Henry* for the Duchy of *Normandy*, Count of *Anjou*, and the Office of Grand Seneschal, as also the Earldoms of *Maine* and *Touraine*; *Richard* for the Dukedom of *Aquitain*; and *Geoffrey* having *Brittany*, owed Homage to none but the Duke of *Normandy*: At the same time *Lewis* prevailed with King *Henry* for leave for *Thomas Becket* to return to *England*.

But this Greatness proved not very durable, for there was some Rupture almost every Year, between Peace or Truce between them, either concerning the

King of
England's
Sons do
Homage to
Lewis.

1170.

own proper Interest, or that of their Friends
Vassals. *Lewis* indeed had this Advantage, that
the Sovereign Lord he had the right of hearing
Complaints of *Henry's* Vassals, and of making
himself their Judge; he had stirred up many in *Aquitain*
Normandy, but this Year he armed his own Children
against him; the eldest with his Wife *Margaret*
returned to his Father's Court, and staying
some time, had a fancy put into his Head, that
if he was crowned he ought to reign, and to require
of his Father the Possession either of the Kingdom of
France or Dutchy of *Normandy*: With this Dispo-
sition, and fretted because his Father had removed
the evil Counsellors from about him, he stole away
one Night, and went to throw himself into the
arms of the *French* King; he was favoured by the
Queen, his two Brothers, and all the young Nobility
were taken into the *French* King's Protection; the
King of *Scotland* likewise declared for them: But
as *Henry's* Fortune for all this prevailed to the over-
throw of all his Enemies, for tho *Lewis* had taken
Normanvil au Perch, he durst not keep it, but fled from
before *Henry*; add to this his great Success in *England*
against the *Scots*, and that *Philip* Earl of *Flanders*,
son to *Lewis* had brought along with him, received a
great Repulse at *Rothom*, *Lewis* thought it best to ob-

have his Son *Philip* crowned; but the young Prince falling ill upon a Fright, for having lost his way in Wood as he was hunting, the Ceremony was put off and performed the following Year. In the mean time the Peoples Superstition increasing towards the Relicks of *Thomas Becket* at *Canterbury*, from the Example of King *Henry*, who of his Persecutor became his Adorer, King *Lewis* went into *England*, praye upon his Tomb, and left rich Presents behind him.

1179.

At last Prince *Philip* being crowned on *All Saint's day*, *Philip* Earl of *Flanders* procured his Niece *Isabella*, *Alix* his Sister, and *William* Earl of *Hainault* Daughter, to be married to the new King; and treating her as his own Daughter, since he had no Children of his own, he in favour of this Match bestowed upon her all the Country of *Artois*, and the County along the *Lys*. But the Joy of this Festival was hardly over, when King *Lewis* died of the Palsy at Paris the 18th or 20th of *Sept.* at the Age of 63 or 64 Years whereof he had reigned 43, and was buried at *St. Denis*.

R. Lewis
his Death
and Character.

1180.

He was a Prince not very happy in his grand Designs and too effeminate or mild in his Affairs that require Vigour, but as Pious, Good, Charitable, Just, and Liberal, as any Prince of his time; he can be taxed but with two Faults, the one against Prudence, for divorcing his Wife, and the other against the Laws of Nature for supporting the Rebellion of the King of *England's* Children against their Father. By his first Wife he had two Daughters, *Mary* married to the Earl of *Campagne*, and *Alix* to the Earl of *Chartres*; by his second came *Margaret*, first married to *Henry* the young King of *England*, and then to *Bela* III. King of *Hungary*; by the third *Alix*, betrothed to *Richard* King of *England*, but afterwards married to the Earl of *Pontieu*; *Agnes* married to *Comnenus* the Son of *Emmanuel* of *Constantinople*, and a Son named *Philip*.



have his Son *Philip* crowned; but the young Prince falling ill upon a Fright, for having lost his way in Wood as he was hunting, the Ceremony was put off and performed the following Year. In the mean time the Peoples Superstition increaseth towards the Excommunications of *Thomas Becket* at *Canterbury*, from the Example of King *Henry*, who of his Persecutor became his Adorer; King *Lewis* went into *England*, prayd upon his Tomb, and left rich Presents behind him.

1179.

At last Prince *Philip* being crowned on *All Saints day*, *Philip* Earl of *Flanders* procured his Niece *Isabella*, *Alix* his Sister, and *William* Earl of *Hainault* Daughter, to be married to the new King; and treating her as his own Daughter, since he had no Children of his own, he in favour of this Match bestowed upon her all the Country of *Artois*, and the County along the *Lys*. But the Joy of this Festival was hardly over, when King *Lewis* died of the Palsy at Paris the 18th or 20th of *Sept.* at the Age of 63 or 64 Years whereof he had reigned 43, and was buried at *St. Denis*.

K. Lewis
his Death
and Character.

1180.

He was a Prince not very happy in his grand Design, and too effeminate or mild in his Affairs that required Vigour, but as Pious, Good, Charitable, Just, and Liberal, as any Prince of his time; he can be taxed but with two Faults, the one against Prudence, for divorcing his Wife, and the other against the Laws of Nature for supporting the Rebellion of the King of *England* Children against their Father. By his first Wife he had two Daughters, *Mary* married to the Earl of *Campagne*, and *Alix* to the Earl of *Chartres*; by his second came *Margaret*, first married to *Henry* the young King of *England*, and then to *Bela* III. King of *Hungary*; by the third *Alix*, betrothed to *Richard* King of *England*, but afterwards married to the Earl of *Pontieu*; *Agnes* married to *Comnenus* the Son of *Emmanuel* of *Constantinople*, and a Son named *Philip*.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

Reign of PHILIP II. surnamed the Conqueror, or Augustus.

HIS Prince being advised to pursue the Methods of Justice and Piety, by which his Father and Grandfather had strengthened their Authority, he immediately undertook the Protection of the Church, and with a high Hand reduced the Lords of *Charenton, Beaujeu, &c.* and others who oppressed the Ecclesiasticks; at the same time he dissolved a powerful League formed by the Nobility against him, published an Edict against Heresy, burnt those that were reputed Hereticks, expelled all Players, Comedians and Buffoonry, and perswaded, as *Rigord* his Historian says, that

1180.

them; and this made such an impression upon mens mind that a Man with that Sham-Badg was not only secure but held in Veneration amongst his mortal Enemies.

The Earl of *Flanders* declining now in favour of Court, the King summoned him to give up *Vermandois* which brought both of them to take the Field; and drawing near to one another at *Boves*, a Peace was concluded, upon condition the Earl quitted all *Vermandois* except *Peronne* and *St. Quintin*; and for accomplishing of this Agreement the King called all the Bishops, Abbots, Earls and Barons that served in his Army, with their under Vassals together, such then were the Rights of the *French*, but how much since altered for the worse, is evident to all the World.

To pass over some minute Occurrences at this time not worth relating, I would not here omit that 1185. *Geofrey* Duke of *Bretagne* coming to wait upon the King, who tenderly loved him, he died at *Champeaux* leaving one Daughter behind him, named *Alienor*, and a Son of three Years old, whom the *Bretons* in memory of the famous King *Arthur* would dignify with that Name: This Prince remained under the Guardianship of his Mother, and the *French* King's Protection, in despite of all the Efforts of *Henry* King of *England* and his Son *Richard*, who made several Attempts to seize his Person, and get Possession of *Bretagne*. As for *Geofrey*, his Memory is still very famous among the *Bretons*, because of that Law made in his Parliament, that was called the Assize of Court *Geofry*, whereby it was enacted that in the Families of Barons and Knights, the Estates should not be shared equally as heretofore, but that the eldest should have the whole, and confer what he thought fit upon the younger; but since they have proportioned the thirds among all the younger during Life to the Males, and an Inheritance to the Females.

1186. Towards the end of this Year a War broke out between *England* and *France*, wherein *Philip* took *Iffoudun*, and then they came to an Agreement; and on the fifth of *September* in the next, *Lewis* *Philip* first born Son came into the World, for which *Paris* made great rejoicings for a Week together; and the *Saracens* having now put a Period to the Kingdom

ofalem, *Henry* and *Philip* were so concerned at they had a Conference at *Gisors* and *Trie*, dved to take up the Cross for the recovery of of those Infidels Hands, in remembrance of they set up a Cross in the Field, and mutually d to leave all Disputes in the same Posture as re till their Return; in order to which *Philip* reb called a Parliament at *Paris*, and raised a lled *Saladin's Tithe*. In the Interim *Richard* *Saladin's* on the Earl of *Tholouse*, and *Philip* to disengage *Tithe* rais es all the Places the *English* possessed in *Berry*, ed. used King *Henry* as far as *Normandy*; but 1188. r brought a Truce, and *Richard* falls out with *Philip* her, while *Philip* the following Spring conquer *stakes di*- Country of *Maine*, and the City of *Ans*, *vers places* re, and the City of *Tours*; and at the same *from the* in King *Henry's* third Son takes up Arms against *English*. her, but not knowing which way to turn him- the Application to *Philip*, who reconciled him and, upon condition that one of them should ny him to the Holy Land. Soon after King ed, and being succeeded by *Richard*, *Philip* her in Law gave him up all he had conquered, *London*, and the Fiefs he held in *Auvergne*, *Gisors*, and all the *Vexin* for his Wife's Por-

some pernicious Artifice, shewed King *Richard* some Letters, which he affirmed to have been written to *Philip*, whereby that King offered him all his Force to attack *Richard*, and seize him in the Night, if he would at the same time fall upon him. *Richard* believing the matter to be fact, made a great stir about it, and was mightily exasperated against the other upon which he acquainted *Philip*, he could not for certain Reasons marry his Sister, but that he was betrothed unto another. *Philip* dissembling his Resentment, appear'd to be satisfied, provided he would restore those Lands he had given him for her Dowry and also consented to a Truce for those Countries during the time they should remain abroad. *Philip* hereupon made the best of his Way to the Siege of *Ptolemais*, while *Richard* having seized on the Kingdom of *Cyprus*, for the ill Reception he met with there, came not to the *Leger* till about two Months after, and then there were such continual Jars between these two Princes, that they rather retarded than promoted the Siege, tho the Place was at last rendered, upon condition the Garison obtained *Saladin* the Release of all the Christian Prisoners and the giving up of the true Cross; but he not performing the same, *Richard* put 7000 of them to the Sword.

R. Philip
ick, re-
turns from
the Holy
Land.

1191.

A great many brave Men perished in this Campaign by the Sword and Sicknes; nay *Philip* himself was afflicted with a tedious Distemper, proceeding as was supposed from Poison, since his Nails and Hair fell out and therefore he resolved to return home, but first made an Oath to King *Richard*, he would not in the least disturb his Territories, till 40 days after he was certain of his being arrived in *France*: He left behind him with King *Richard* near six hundred Horse and ten thousand Foot, under the Conduct of the Duke of *Burgundy*, where we leave them.

In the mean time *Philip* being returned to *France* and remembring that the Earl of *Flanders* had promised him upon his Marriage with his Niece *Elizabeth* the County of *Artois*, after his Decease, and the likewise some part of the Inheritance of that Unbelonged to her, he directed his March for *Flanders* to seize

zed *Artois*, and got Homage done him for the Counties of *Bologne*, *Ghisnes* and *St. Pol*, which till then had ever held of the Earls of *Flanders*, and extended it as far as *Neuf-Fosse*; and this was the first even of the mortal Hatred and Wars that happened afterwards between the *Flemings* and *French*.

King *Richard* also after many heroick Acts and Fatigues in the Holy Land, being desirous to return home, and so designing to pass thro *Germany*, he was seized by the Duke of *Austria*, and basely delivered up to the Emperor *Henry*, who kept him a Prisoner 14 Months; and to help on the matter, *Philip* was no sooner informed of it, but he dispatched Messengers into *Germany* to engage the Emperor to detain him as long as he could, and some Months after ungenerously declared War against him, incited his Brother *John* under-hand to seize upon the Kingdom of *England*, and at the same time falling himself into *Normandy*, he took *Gisors* and some Places in the *Vex-K.* *Philip* in; then proceeding forward with his Conquests, he in February this Year took the Town of *Evreux*, which he bestowed upon *John*, keeping the Castle in his own Hands, and went and laid Siege to *Roan*, but there *lost his labour*. *Philip* *takes di vers plac from th English.*

1193.

Queen *Elizabeth* having been now dead for about two Years, *Philip* married the King of *Denmark's* Sister, and after he had lain with her one Night would never touch her after: however he kept her for some time at length

To do no more than mention the terrible overflowing of the *Seine* this Year, which made *Paris* and the Isle of *France* fear a second Deluge; we are that the Peace between the two Kings lasted but Months: *Philip* renewed the War against the upon pretence that he had built a Fort in the *Andely* upon the *Seine*, and because he had taken the Castle of *Vierzon* in *Berry* from its own Lord. *win* XI. Earl of *Flanders* joined with *Richard* War, which amounted only to Burnings and Devotions; and the Pope proving an Intercessor to *Richard* for the Liberty of the Bishop of *Dreken* therein, and whom he entituled his dear Son King sent him his Coat of Mail all bloody with wounds to the Bearer to ask him, *Behold holy Father whether this be your Son's Coat*: Upon this the desisted.

Philip covetous.

1198.

These bloody and destructive Wars did much chief to *France*; but the greatest was, that *Philip*, covetous, under pretence of a Necessity there to have a Standing Army, and indeed he was the King of *France* that kept Men in pay: He also obliged himself to make great Exactions upon the People for forming or taxing the Churches, and recalling those who were the Introducers of Usury: But at the same time he was frugal in his Expences, reserving in for a time of need. At length after a War of years, the Pope procured a five years Truce, which King *Richard* having Intelligence, that a Gentleman of *Limosin* had found a vast Treasure, carried it into the Castle of *Chalus*, he presented a Siege to it, and was there wounded from a Bow, and died on the 11th of *April*, being succeeded by *John* his Brother in prejudice to *Arthur* the Duke of *Bretagne* who was *Geofrey's* Son, and than *John*.

Richard his death.

1199.

1200.

In the mean time the Earl of *Flanders* with his allies recovered the Cities of *Aire* and *St. Omer*; upon Ascension Day this year, Peace was concluded by a solemn Conference between the two Kings at *Vernon* and *Andely*, and warranted by 12 Barons each side, who made Oath to take up Arms against him that should violate it; and the same was

co

confirmed by the Marriage of *Blanche* Daughter of *Alphonso VIII.* King of *Castile*, and *Alienor* King *John's* Sister with *Lewis*, *Philip's* eldest Son, to whom King *John*, in favour of this Alliance, made a Resignation of all the Lands and Places which the *French* had taken from him: Each of them took care to secure their Friends, *John* was obliged to receive his Nephew *Arthur* into Favour, who did him Homage for the Dutchy of *Bretagne*, and *Philip* pardoned the Earl of *Bologn*.

But before all this had come to pass, *Philip* upon the repudiating of the King of *Denmark's* Daughter, having married *Agnes* Daughter to the Duke of *Merania*, and *Dalmatia*, Pope *Celestine III.* pronounced a Sentence of Interdiction upon the whole Kingdom, which so enraged *Philip* against the Ecclesiasticks, that he drove the Bishops from their Sees, cast the Canons out of their Churches, put Curates from their Parishes, and confiscated all their Goods: He was not also backward to oppress the Laity with unheard of Exactions, by taking away the third of their Revenues, and Goods: As for the Interdiction, that having lasted now seven Months, the Pope at length upon *Philip's* earnest Solicitation took it off, upon condition he should take Queen *Isenburg* again, and in six Months, six Weeks, six Days and six Hours, he would have the Case of her Divorce decided by his two Legates Philip

ter, to marry *Isabel* the Earl of *Angoulesme's* only Daughter, whom he ravished from *Hugh de la Bruie*, Earl of *de la Marche*, to whom she was betrothed; the said Lord sought all the ways he could to be revenged on him for that Injury, and therefore began to hold a private Intelligence with *Philip*, and endeavoured to make an Insurrection in *Poitou*, while his Brother *Rodolph* committed Hostilities on the Frontiers of *Normandy*; but *John* having chastised their Rebellion, and seized their Lands, they address themselves to *Philip*, as Sovereign for Justice: Hereupon the two Kings met near *Gaillon*, where *Philip* in high terms summoned *John* to appear in his Court, that Justice might be done not only upon the Complaint of *Hugh*, but also Prince *Arthur*, who demanded *Maine*, *Arjou*, and *Tourain*. *Philip*, to provide for his intended War, endeavoured to accustom the Clergy to furnish him with Subsidies, but all he could get was their Promise to assist him with their Prayers; yet their Lands having been ravaged by some Lords of the Country, the Prelates applied themselves to the King for Redress, and he replied, that Souldiers could not be kept without Money; they understood his meaning, and were forced to make their Purfes bleed, that they might be protected. In the *Interim*, King *John*, summoned three several times to answer the Accusation in *Philip's* Court, endeavoured to gain time, while *Philip*, now well provided of Men and Money, and having no counterpoise in his Kingdom, resolved to push on against him; he therefore gave some Forces to Prince *Arthur* to pursue his Right, and at the same time he entered into *Normandy*, where he forced five or six Places to surrender, and received the most considerable Lords of the Country into favour, and particularly *Hugh de Gournay* and the Earl of *Alençon*, who assisted him of their Service and their Towns. *Arthur* on his part attacked *Poitou*, and besieged his Grandmother in *Mirebeau*, whither King *John* made such haste that he surprized him one Morning in his Bed, and sent him Prisoner to the Castle of *Falaise*; and after the Death of Queen *Alienor*, having removed him to the Castle of *Roan*, the poor Prince was cruelly made away with, tho not certainly known after what manner.

ther *Constance* did thereupon demand Justice of *K. John* *sentenced*
Philip for that Parricide committed in his Terri- *to lose his*
 and upon the Person of one of his Vassals; and *Lands in*
 Default of appearing was by the Peers con- *France.*
 of Parricide and Felony, and to lose all his Lands *1202.*
 ee, which should be forfeited to the Crown,
 those that defended them were reputed guilty
 ason.

the Prosecution of this Sentence, *Philip* this year *1203.*
 most all the *Upper Normandy* from him, while
 away his time, and was every way betrayed;
 the next all the *Lower Normandy* was conquered,
 without striking a Blow for it, and *Rouen* it
 ter forty days Siege, was forced to capitulate
 render; so that in short *Philip* in less than three
 became Master of all *Normandy*, which had
 Dukes of that Nation, (whereof *John* was the *Philip con-*
 who had governed them about 316 years. *Atquers Nor-*
 the time *William des Roches* who had quitted *mandy.*
 Party to join with *Philip*, secured the Coun- *1204.*
Anjou, Maine, and Tourain; and *Henry Cle-*
areschal of France, conquered all *Poitou*, ex-
 ly *Niort, Tours, and Rochel*; and in 1205. the
 ook the Castle of *Loches*, and some Places that
 ed in the Hands of the *English* in *Tourain*.

he mean time King *John* not attributing his
 ings to his Crimes of Imprudence or Negli-

A Croisade
against the
Albigen-
ses.

The Pope all this while being not able to reduce Hereticks of *Languedoc* (as they termed them) upon *Raymond* Earl of *Tholouse* the chief Incourager of them, who had massacred one of his Legates: excommunicated the Earl, absolved his Subjects their Allegiance, and gave his Lands to the first Opiar, but without prejudice to the King of *France* Sovereignty, which brought the Earl to an intire Submission, and to give up eight strong Places to the Church of *Rome* for ever; and the following year that he might obtain Absolution, he suffered him to be scourged with Rods at the Gates of *St. Giles* Church: However the Croisade preached by the Pope Order against the *Albigenses* went on, and the People engaged therein wore a Cross upon their Breast, to distinguish themselves from such as went to the Holy Land who wore that Badg upon their Shoulders. King *Philip* would have engaged himself in this Expedition had he not feared the *English* would land in *Britany*: he went not therefore beyond the *Loire*, but commanded the Nobility that held of him, to assist themselves, and take the Fort of *Garlie*, which he did.

In the mean time the number of these new-croisaded Soldiers being no less than 500000, they rendezvoused at *Lyons* about the Feast of *St. John*; thence marching into *Languedoc*, attacked *Beziers*, one of the strongest Holds of the *Albigenses*, and having taken it by Assault, they put all, even above threescore thousand Persons, to the Sword, which so terrified the people of *Carcassonne*, that they surrendered at discretion. Then the Commanders of the Army chose *Simon* Earl of *Montfort* to be their General and Governor of their Conquests, who notwithstanding the Disaffection against him, maintained himself by a more than heroic Valour, and conquered *Mirepoix*, *Pamiers*, &c. *Alby*.

In those times the School at *Paris* flourished more than ever, and they gave it the Name of an University; and because they thought *Aristotle's* Metaphysics lately brought them from *Constantinople*, had introduced Heresy amongst them, the Council of *Paris* prohibited either the reading or keeping of them u

in of Excommunication.

All this while came fresh Troops of the Cross to the Earl of *Montfort*, even from *Flanders* and *Germany*, who slipped away again within six Weeks or two Months; however the Earl carried all Places belonging to the *Albigenses*, and to some other Lords; which made the King of *Arragon*, of whom many in those Countries sold their Lands in under-Fiefs, write to the Pope against it; nay the Earl of *Tholouse* went to *Rome* in person, but at his return proposed an Agreement with *Montfort*, which he refusing, the other endeavoured to defend himself as well as he could. *Montfort* laid siege to *Tholouse*, but being untimely deserted by his reinforcements, he was forced to raise it, and retire to *Chastaneuf*, where in his return he was besieged by the Earls of *Tholouse* and *de Foix*; but their Numbers were defeated and forced to a shameful Retreat.

The King *John* had been excommunicated the preceding year by the Pope's Legate, yet he laughed at the Censures; but he was much surprized to understand, that the Pope by a terrible Sentence had absolved his Subjects from their Allegiance, and that King *Philip* made great Preparations to invade him; which was really so, and all the Lords of the Kingdom in a Parliament held at *Soissons*, promised to assist the King therein with their Lives and Fortunes; but first he resolved to punish *Ferrand* Earl of *Flanders* for refu-

1211.

1212.

Wars be-
tween the
English
& French.
1213.

rand re-entered, and as soon became Master of *Tenay* and *Liste*, in revenge of which *Lewis* burnt *Cray*. *Philip* goes a second time into *Flanders* to see his Conquests, but as soon as he was gone, the Earl *Bologne* took the Field with some Forces out of *England*, attempted two or three Sieges in vain, yet sed *Henry* Earl of *Lorain* and Duke of *Brabant*, who had married one of the King's Sisters, to join with him. On the other side, King *John* landed with great Army at *Rochel*, and crossing *Poitou* made himself Master of some Places in *Anjou*, and began to build the Walls of *Angers*: *Philip* upon this recalled his Son out of *Flanders* to oppose the King of *England*, whose Soldiers making Excursions to the very Suburbs of *Nantes*, surprized the Earl of *Dreux* his eldest Son, who was got over the Bridge to attack them, cut his Men in pieces, and took him Prisoner.

1214.

French
successful.

This Year *France* was severely attacked by King *John*, and on the side of *Flanders* by the Emperor *Otho*, *Ferrand* and *Renauld* of *Bologna*; but *Philip* making head against *John*, he was so unfortunate, as to be forced to abandon all *Anjou*, and the new Fortifications of *Angers*, which were presently demolished: Neither was *Philip* less successful than his Son, against the Emperor and his Confederates, whose Army of 150000 men he encountered on the 28th of *July* with less than half the Number. King himself did indeed run a great hazard in his Person, having been beaten off his Horse, trod upon his Feet, and wounded in the Throat; but at last his Enemies were every where worsted, *Otho* put to flight, his Standard being a Dragon with an Imperial Eagle over it taken, and the Chariot that bore it broken in pieces, and five Earls among whom were *Ferrand* and *Renauld*; with 22 Lords that carried Banners, taken Prisoners.

Philip made a pompous Entry into *Paris*, and the Citizens celebrated the Victory for eight days together; and now the Lords of *Poitou*, that had saved the *English*, finding *Lewis* to be victorious, sent to tender him all manner of Submission, to which he went himself with an Army into the Country, and the Viscount de *Tours* the most consider-

obtained his Pardon with much ado by the
 son of Peter Duke of Bretagne; the rest were
 off, and King John who was then at Paternay
 ve been taken, had not the Pope's Legate
 ed for a Truce, which could not as times went
 d him, and the same was agreed on for five

e Lewis now takes the Croisade upon him a-
 ne Albigenses, and went to Languedoc; thence
 pelier and Beziers, where he ordered the
 of Narbonne and Tholouse to be demolished: In
 n time the Lateran Council, notwithstanding
 monstrances of the Count of Tholouse and his
 ho were there present, adjudged the Proprie-
 is Lands to Montfort, reserving only those he
 Provence for his Son, and four hundred Marks
 er yearly for his Subsistence; from which time
 d, Montfort took upon him the Quality of Earl
 onse, and went to receive the Investiture there-
 n King Philip in the City of Melun.

1215.

le Lewis was in those Parts, the English made
 offer of their Crown, which brought King
 o submit to be Tributary to the Pope, who now
 to divert Lewis from the Enterprize, and desi- Prince
 og Philip to put a stop to it, but that would not Lewis
 nd so Lewis went for England, and was so- crowned in
 England.

Lewis expelled.

1220, &c.

Philip sick of an Ague.

1222.

His Death.

In the mean time King *John* dying by Poison, Hatred of the *English* expired with his Life, and they began generally to declare in favour of his Son *Mary*; so that for the present *Lewis* had no better expedient than to make a Truce with the young King for six Months, during which he returned to *France* to consult with his Father, who would not see him: However he adventured back into *England*, where he found his Enemies Party much stronger than before. His Army was afterwards defeated near *Lincoln*, and himself after that Overthrow, besieged in *London*, from whence he was glad upon the Promise of a Truce to have Liberty to go into *France*; whither *Mary* sent Ambassadors to challenge him with his Promise and redemanded the Dutchy of *Normandy*, tho' to little purpose; so that it was most expedient for the present to renew the Truce, whereby *France* enjoyed Calm for three or four years. During that time *Philip* applied himself to the walling, enlarging and fortifying of Places, building Bridges, making Causeys and the like Conveniencies in all the Cities, that were his Demesnes, the expence whereof he bore himself. Soon after this a prodigious Comet appeared in the Heavens, but I will not say, neither indeed do I believe, it was either the Sign or Cause of a Quartan Ague that seized King *Philip*, which continuing to wait on him for near a year together, did at last bring him to his Grave. In the mean while the Pope and all the Clergy were eager for the Destruction of the poor *Albigenses*, so they called a General Assembly of Prelates and Lords to be held at *Paris*, where *John* King of *Jerusalem*, and the Pope's Legate assisted, and *Philip* as sick as he was would needs be there; but he could get no farther than *Mantes*, for his Distemper so increased upon him that he gave up the Ghost on the 25th of July in that Place, at the Age of fifty eight Years, and the fourth of his Reign: He left 50000 Livres by Will towards the payment of those he had wronged 10000 Franks to Queen *Isenburg*; ——— to his Son *Lewis* for the defence of the Kingdom, and no other use; 58500 Marks of Silver to the King of *Jerusalem* 2000 to the Templars, and as much to the Hospitalers towards the Recovery of the Holy Land; 21000

of *Paris* to the poor Orphans, Widows and Le-
 ; and 20000 to *Amaury de Montfort*, for the Re-
 tion of his Wife and Children out of the Hands
 the *Albigenses*. He married three Wives, *Isabella*
 ighter to *Baldwin IV.* Earl of *Haynault*, by whom
 ad only *Lewis* that survived; *Isenburg* Daughter of
Ademar King of *Denmark*, who bore him none;
 lastly *Agnes* Daughter to the Duke of *Merania*,
 whom he had *Philip* afterwards Earl of *Bologn*,
Mary first married to *Philip* Earl of *Namur*, and
 to *Henry IV.* Earl of *Lorain* and Duke of *Bra-*
 : He had also a natural Son, named *Peter Charlot*,
 was Treasurer of *Tours*, and afterwards Bishop
Noyon. Of all the Kings of the Third Race he an-
 ed most Lands to the Crown, and most Power to
 Successors, wresting *Normandy*, and almost all
 held in *France* from the *English*; neither did he a
 contribute on his Part towards pulling down the
 of *Tholouse*, whereby he took away the Counter-
 that ballanced his own Power in the Kingdom,
 which he more easily brought the Great Ones
 to honour and fear him, and the People to bear
 er Burdens and Taxes than they had done under
 redecessors.

e was a Prince well shaped and without any bodily Philip's
 ct, saving that one of his Eyes was half obscu- Character.



C H A P. II.

The Reign of LEWIS VI.

PHILIP, for what reason is not
 caused his Son to be crowned
 divers of his Predecessors thought
 thought his Family so well provided,
 no need of such a Precaution to secure
 him; he was therefore crowned
 Wife *Blanch*, on the 10th of
 the King of *England*, in Quality
 being not present at the Coronation, he
 dours to summon *Lewis* according to the
 taken at *London*, to make a Surrendry
 and all the Countries that had been to
John his Father; they received for An
 had been confiscated by a Sentence of
 that they pretended to have the Re
 he held, so far were they from giving
 demanded. On the other side, as the
guedoc easily returned a to their
mond Earl of *Tholouse*; able to keep his Station there,
 his Right and Title he had to King
 him High Constable for it, the
 Employment that lasted no longer
 that we sometimes find Persons on whom
 conferred two or three times; whereas
 misgiving entire Obedience to the Church
 sufficient Security to the Clergy for
 and Enjoyment of their Goods and B
 Extirpation of Hereticks throughout
 the Pope hereupon received him to
 owned him Earl of *Tholouse*. But
 and Opposition made by his Subjects
 from making good his Promises, the
 gate to the King, to persuade him to
 which he the more readily agreed to,
 with his Zeal and Interest.

ut waving this Expedition for the present, the King
 he had conferred at *Vauconleurs* with *Henry King*
Germany, the Emperor *Frederic's* eldest Son, about
 the differences between the two Crowns, concerning
 which they could come to no Conclusion, pursuant to a
 resolution, that had been taken to drive the *English* *Lewis suc-*
 wholly out of *France*, he entred *Poitou*, won a Battel *cessful a-*
 here from *Savary de Mauléon*, General of the *English* *gainst the*
Guyenne, made himself Master of the Cities of *Ni-* *English.*
ort and *St. John d'Angeley*, and generally of all Pla- *1224.*
 ces as far as the *Garonne*, receiving the Homage of all
 the Lords of those Parts; so that the *English* had now
 nothing left but *Rochelle*, where *Savary* bravely defen-
 ded himself for a long time in expectation of Relief
 from *England*; and at last being basely disappointed
 and deceived by the Ministers, who sent him Chests
 full of old Iron instead of Silver to pay the Garison,
 he was forced to give up the Place; and afterwards
 putting his old Master, he went over to the King of
France. The rest of *Guyenne* had been gained by the
French, if *Richard* Brother to King *Henry* had not
 landed at *Bourdeaux* with a great Army, which rai-
 sed up their drooping Spirits; he quickly took *St. Ma-*
ears near that City, but *la Reoule* gave him a great
 Repulse; and being informed that the *French* Army
 was at the *Garonne*, he went on board again, and left

with the Viscount de Montfort, the only one yet opposed him in *Poitou*; shortly after the Viscount went to *Paris* to render Homage in Presence of the King of *England's* At And now King *Lewis* his Army marching *vignon*, and that City refusing them Passage, resolved not to decamp from it, till he had besieged to reason, which he effected at them to give up 200 Hostages, pulling down filling up their Moats and Grafts, and demolishing Houses that had Turrets, being Gentle such as they had at *Tholouse* and other great From hence the King went into *Provence*, and surrender'd to him within four Leagues of the Weather proving bad, and the King of a that was somewhat tender, he returned his Army under the Command of *Imbert de*

Lewis's
Death.

The King upon his return was poisoned by the Grandees of his Kingdom, whom History name, of which he died at *Montpencier* in after he had lived nine and thirty years, had reigned three and about four Months buried at *St. Dennis* by his Father. The Vice of his Piety and Chastity, gave occasion to proceed from his too great Continency (which did not go with him) and that he chose rather than to make use of an unlawful Remedy presented to him for his Cure: As he found in a Posture meeting great Troubles after he took the Communion and Seal of the Holy

. As for the surviving Daughter *Isabella*, she became a Nun in the Monastery of *Long-champ*, which King her Brother founded for her.

C H A P. III.

The Reign of Saint LEWIS.

THIS is the third Minority in the *Capetine Race*, *Queen* and the first wherein a Woman had the Regency ; *Blanche* or *Blanche* the Queen Mother took it upon her, and *Regent.* as much assisted by *Romain* the Cardinal Legate and the Lords, who attested it was the King her Husband's Will it should be so upon his Death-bed. Immediately upon this, she wisely to secure herself, drew the Forces she could together, and then caused *mis* to be crowned at *Rheims* ; the Duke of *Bre-*
gne, Earls of *Bar*, *Marche*, *Champagne*, *St. Pol*, and divers others refusing to assist thereat ; but indeed the contrary, they were forming a League, and demanding that the Regent who was a Stranger should have Security for her good Administration, that what-
 er had been taken from the Lords during the two

bring them back with joyful Acclamations to
ty : The Earl of *Champagne* was the Man t
the Queen this Intelligence, whose Pret
Love to her she made a Mien to favour.

The King of *England* would needs concei
with this Quarrel, and promised the Lords t
and the Earl of *Tholouse* taking this Oppo
got possession again of all his Places, upon v
Queen, fearing this Flame would blaze too
newed a Treaty with the Princes of the
whereby she put a stop to their farther Proce
that Year ; and in the mean time confirmed an
with the Emperor *Frederick*, made a Truce
land for a Twelve-month, and came to an
with the Duke of *Bretagne*, who gave his I
be married to her Son *John*. Thus the Earl
louse being left alone, *Imbert de Be.* j
ceived a good Reinforcement, he so ravaged
Country about *Tholouse*, and disheartened it
to that degree, that both they and t r
forced to submit upon what Condition ne
that indeed the Earl was deprived of all his
cept some small Fragments left him merely for
And it was ordered they should devolve to
ter *Jane*, who should be married to the l
ther *Alphonso* ; that the Earl should pay 17c
of Silver ; that the Walls of *Tholouse*,
more Cities should be demolished : For p
of all which he should give Hostages, and
time should himself remain a Prisoner ;
should be an exact Search after Here is
and that for Penance he should go on
years against the *Saracens*. The Earl conti
ner for a short time, had Liberty to return
accompanied by the Legate who settled
there, whereby such great Severities were e
proved to be the Cause of many Massacres
bles.

All this while the Malecontents, not c
the Government should continue in such
in the Earl of *Dreux*, Brother to the l
tagne, and *Philip* Earl of *Bologn*, t
Uncle, to whom they promised

The Re-
gent's nota-
ble ma-
nagement.

The Earl
of Tho-
louse re-
duced.

1228.

and now a second time to surprize the King, but have fallen into their Hands, had not the *Champagne* with 300 Horse very opportunely him off: This made the Conspirators in the turn their whole Power against the Earl, and misrepresented him amongst his Vassals, that sided with his Enemies against him. The Earl rest, and his City of *Troyes* besieged, the Request the King to his Relief, and commanded they had any thing to offer against the Earl, could come for Justice to her Court: But they refused to acknowledg her Regency, chose the Lord to be King, which easily broke the Earl of (to whom the Crown had been promised) from party.

Things went very well also on the side of *Bretagne*, D. of Ex the Duke both in this and the succeeding Year *tagne do* but to it by the *French* Arms, that he was forced to do the King Homage for his Dutchy, which *Homage* France. the *Bretons*, who pretended they owed but fin- 1229. nage only, name him *Mau-Clerk*, or the Wit-

Earl of *Champagne* was but ill rewarded by the for his good Services; however after all these there ensued a Calm for four years together, was only a little disturbed by the Tumults of joining *Albigenses* and the Scholars belonging

1237.

fortunes did not make him much wiser, for he still persisted in his foolish Passion for the Queen, who had ruined him, and retired to his Castle of *Provins* to write Songs and Poems, for the entertainment of his amorous Dotage; from which however he was soon diverted by the Death of *Sancho VIII.* King of *Navarre*, without Heirs Male, who therefore left him the Kingdom as next Heir, and Son of his Daughter *Blanche*. About this time the Country of *Artois* was erected into an Earldom-*Pairrie* in favour of *Robert* the King's Brother, on whom his Father bestowed it by his Will: Some place this Erection in the time of *Philip Augustus*, but however it were, 'tis to be presumed to be the first of that Nature. I shall say nothing of the Croisade undertaken at this time, which had no better Success than the rest, nor of the Relicks brought by the Emperor *Baldwin* from *Constantinople* to *France* (who sued for the King's Assistance against the *Greeks*) because I have but little Faith concerning such Trinkets: And therefore we'll proceed to observe, that the Quarrels between Pope *Gregory IX.* and the Emperor *Frederick* growing hot the Pope sent to *St. Lewis* King of *France*, to propose him the Empire for his Brother *Robert*; but the Noble opposed the Proposal, alledging it was sufficient for *Robert* to be a King's Brother, who was more excellent in Dignity and Nobility than any Emperor whatsoever.

An odd
Story of
Montagne.

It's an odd Story to relate in this Place, that the old *De la Montagne*, for so they called the Prince of the *Assasines*, a People that were settled in the Mountainous Canton of *Syria*, had dispatched two of his Murderers into *France* to kill the King, but soon after, by what Motive 'tis not known, he repented and countermanded them by some others, who before they could find them gave the King notice to have a care of himself; and 'tis farther said of this old *De la Montagne* that he bred up a great number of Youths in pleasant and delicious Palaces, and the hopes of eternal Happiness in the other World, if they obeyed his Commands blindfold; and that to make them the fitter to execute his bloody Commands in all Countries, made them learn all Languages. But of this eno-

he will return to the Pope and Emperor, whose Interests were not at all compatible; and therefore Gregory now in the Chair, lets fly his Ecclesiastical Thunderbolts against *Frederick*; and his Legate having called the Prelates of *France* together at *Meaux*, ordered several to go to hold a Council at *Rome*, where they pretended to degrade the Emperor, who complained of this in *France*, and intercepting the Bishops in their Voyage, he put them into divers Prisons, and for a while slighted the King's Intercession for their Liberty, which wrought some alteration in that good Correspondence that had for some time continued between the Empire and *France*.

This Year King *Lewis* having assembled the Flower of the Barons and Knights of his Kingdom at *Saumur*, he knighted his Brother *Alphonso*, who had a little before consummated his Marriage with the Daughter and Heirefs of the Earl of *Tholouse*, and also conferred upon him the Counties of *Poitou* and *Auvergne*, and all that had been conquered from the *Albigenses* in *Languedoc*; while the Earl of *Tholouse* sought out all means under-hand to repair the dishonourable Treaty he had made with the King; and therefore he contrived with *James* King of *Arragon*, now at *Montpellier*, and with the Earl of *Provence*, tho King *Lewis* his Father-in-Law, to get a Divorce from *Sanchia*, under pretence of Consanguinity that he might

1240.

The Reign of L

thence retreated as far as *X*, and
 This brought *De la Mar* and
 submit, who tho she had nired
 to murder *Lewis*, yet he pardoned
 Husband, and kept only three or four
 Hands, till he should be better satisfied
 delity.

1244. Not to enter into a detail of the Jealousy
 between the *Franciscans* and *Dominic*
 wrought some uneasiness in *France* as well as
 we are to take notice that this Year was very
 the Holy Land, upon which the *Chorasi*
Posis or *Arabia* fell with so much Fury
 tion, that they laid it quite waste, and ru
 Holy Places of *Jerusalem*, drowning them in
 of the Christians: This dismal News w
 St. *Lewis*, while he lay sick towards the latter
December, at *Pontoise*, where all those ab
 despairing of his Life, he made a Vow if
 him to Health, he would go in Person to
 against those Infidels, which in due time he
 plish.

Lewis
 takes a
 vow.

But some other things first intervened,
 as succinctly as we can. And now *Ra*
Tholouse failing to obtain a Dispensation in the
 of *Lyons*, for the marrying of *Beatrix*,
 Daughter to *Berenguier* Earl of *Provence*,
 1245. concerted; and *Berenguier* now dying, and
 having constituted *Beatrix* his Heiress, *J*
Aragon caused some Troops to march into
 to secure so good a Party for his Son: But Ki
 loth to let a Stranger run away with such
 drove the *Arragonians* out, and by the
 Mother's Consent, with that of her Uncle
Savoy, and the Archbishop of *Lyons*,
 mis'd in Marriage to the King's Brot
 of *Anjou*, and the same consummated
 Year.

In the mean time *Jane* Countess of *Flanders*
 without any Issue by either of her H
 ands, Earl of *Savoy*, and *Ferrand* of *Portugal*,
 ceeded by her Sister *Margaret*, who
 two Husbands, *John* and *Baldwin* by b

and *William, John and Guy* by *William de Dam-*
 ; which last Sons pretending that *Bouchart's*
 ren ought not to inherit, because it had been
 out, their Father was in holy Orders when he
 ried their Mother, and consequently that the
 riage was null ; and those of the first Bed ob-
 ing the Mother favoured the last, they had re-
 se to King *Lewis*, who sent both Parties to a Par-
 ment held at *Peronne*, wherein it was enacted, that
 e Sons by the first Husband should have *Haynault*,
 the other *Flanders*.

ut to return to King *Lewis* his Croisade, the Pre-^{Lewis goes}
 ations for War and other matters detained him till ^{for the Ho-}
 ay in this Year, from accomplishing the Vow he had ^{ly Land.}
 de three Years before ; and it cannot be written in
 racters so great as it deserves, how this pious King
 g perswaded that Sovereigns are responsible for the
 arriages of their Officers, put forth a Proclama-
 throughout his Kingdom, that whoever had suf-
 any wrong or damage by any belonging to him,
 should make it known, and he would give them
 faction out of his own Estate, which was punctual-
 erformed.

his done, and the King having constituted the
 en his Mother Regent of the Kingdom during
 bsence, he was conducted out of *Paris* by all the
 ers in Procession : and taking his Queen and his

1248.

of *Iconium*, to

The King on the drawn all his Forces *Reinforcement* under off to Sea, and on *4th* of *Damiata* in *Egypt*, w *Saracens* there ready to receive him, that they forfook the Town next set it on fire in several Places, Families and the best of their whose overflowing, which inf before the Summer Solstice, hin vancing at that time to take *Caire*, and back almost to the middle of *August*, Idleness, that they grew extremely deb dissolute.

He lands
in Egypt.
1249.

In *September* the King's Brother a new *Reinforcement* to him (his *Farnmond* the last Earl of *Tholouse* dying in time) and the King on the 20th of the advanced towards the whole *Saracen* Army, about *Massoura*: He incamped on *Nile*, called *Raschit*, which was not the Enemy gave the Command of the valiant *Farchardin*, till the Arrival of Sultan *Meledin*, whose Death

Lewis o-
verthrows
the Sara-
cens.
1250.

time. At last the *French* havin two several days gained two del, wherein St. *Lewis*, *Sampson* ders against them; but in the first too inconsiderately pursuing the flyin City of *Massoura*, was slain. The being incamped near *Pharamia* to *Melech Sala* the Son of *Meledin*, wi Army so hemmed them in on all side and the Scurvy reduced them to a mis so that the Christians endeavouring to retreat *miata*, they were *April 5th* utterly March, and the King himself with *Jo* and *Charles*, with almost taken Prisoners; the King here *Sala* took a particular care of him, tl not only recovered his Health, but they ca

Over-
thrown
and taken
Prisoner.

a ten Years Truce, tho it had like to have no
 t, for the *Emirs* having murdered the Sultan
 frer, the King was in danger of perishing by the
 Storm: However *Targernier* being elected Sultan,
 aved him, and generously confirmed the Treaty,
 hereby both he and all the Christian Prisoners had
 ir Liberty, and leave to take all their Equipage
 ng with them, as also all left them that they held
 the Holy Land, upon condition they surrendred
miata, and set the *Saracen* Slaves free, and gave
 in 400000 Livers in ready Mony; the Mony was
 d accordingly, and the King was so punctual, that
 en he was informed the *Saracens* had mistold the
 m, and taken less than had been agreed on, he im-
 mediately sent them the rest. The King sailed from
 ypt to *Ptolemais*, but of above 30000 fighting Men
 t followed him in this Expedition, there were hardly
 50 left, a number too small for any Enterprize;
 ever upon the earnest Intreaties of the Christians
 those Countries, the King resolved to stay some
 ewith them, and in the mean while sent his Brothers
Blonso and *Charles* into *France*. Upon the News
 the Captivity of King *Lewis* in *France*, an Apost-
 e Monk, named *Hungary*, affirming he had a par-
 ular Mission from Heaven, went up and down the
 gdom to pick up Men, as he pretended, to go and

7 Reign of Le

they ned themselves 1 fters.
 was o tin ay de ed for five Y
 St. A got the better at I
 bei tra erred to Rome, his son v c
 not as Heretical, but as scandalizi to
 thers, who now got great credit in . C
 so much the more easily obtained large Priv

But to leave the branglings of these Ec
 at the beginning of which *Robert de* i
 the College of the poor Masters of Sor
 since grown very famous: You must i
 St. Lewis having been now absent near ix
 France destitute of a Pilot by the Death of
 ther, earnestly desired his Return; and
 King taking shipping at *Ptolemais* on St. m
 he landed at *Marseilles* on the 11th of July
 And now the King of *England* who was
Gascoigne, desirous to avoid a long Voyage
 got leave of the *French* King to cross *Fri*
 on board at *Bologne*; he was met by *Lewis* at
 from whence he conducted him to *Paris*,
 was treated with the greatest Magnificence
 Joy and Splendor was so much the grea
 the four Sisters, Daughters of the Earl or
 the eldest whereof was married to K
 next to the King of *England*, the third to
Richard, and the fourth to *Charles* Earl
 met here altogether.

K. Lewis
 returns
 home.

1254.


K. Lewis
 his good
 Deeds.

1256.

And now King *Lewis* having settled i
 Calm throughout his Dominions, applied
 good and wholesom Laws to regulate all
 he banished all Oppression and Violence,
 others by his own good Example, and all j
 Works, undertook the Protection of the
 Widows and Orphans, did all he could to
 the Religion of those times, provided for t
 of the Poor, the Marriage of decayed
 the Maintenance of the Church, and au
 ease of the People, by the Revocation of
 extraordinary Subsidies and Taxes, which
 nity or necessity of former times had
 The Titles of the Chamber of Accounts i
 mong many other rare and curious thi

spared nothing for the Conversion of Infidels, to this end that he took up all the *Jewish* Children that were Fatherless or in want, and caused them to be bred up in the Christian Faith; that these were called the *Baptized*, as those who embraced Christianity when adult, were stiled the *Converted*; that the Duke of *Burgundy*, King of *England*, and some others practised the like in their Countries; and that King *Lewis* his Successors imitated him herein till the reign of King *John*: Farther, that when St. *Lewis* made progress any where, there was always a Prelate, who was usually the Archdeacon of *Paris*, or some eminent Prelate that followed some days after the Court, making Inquiry at the Stations, and in all the Countries and Places they had passed thro, what Injury had been done to the People or their Lands, for which the King made Satisfaction out of his own Pocket, without any Complaint made by the Party aggrieved; but this was not so good as his Brother *Charles* was cruel to the Citizens of *Marseilles*, who not giving him the Obedience he expected, he blocked them up, and being forced the Place to surrender at discretion, this cruel Prince caused several of the principal of them to be beheaded.

This Year King *Lewis* at an Interview with *James* 1255.
Aragon at *Montpelier*, treated of a Marriage be-



mon Montfort Earl of *Leicester* was t
their King, that they agreed to sub
nation, for which end he called a Par
and pronounced the Sentence in King
however the Barons found some
ceptions, and would not stand to it.

We will not enter upon a Narration of C
of *Anjou's* setting up for, and carryi
of *Sicily*, nor the Turmoils that did
proceed and inform you, that the A
of the Court of *Rome* were c
1269. that tho the King St. *Lewis* was y
Holy See, yet he this Year made a Pra

e to fall upon the Kingdom of *Tunis*, he set
 s in order at home, left the Administration of
 ernment in the Hands of *Matthew* Abbot of
is, and *Simon* Earl of *Nesse*; and set out the
March this Year, accompanied with three of
Philip, *Tristan* and *Peter*, his Brother *Alphon-* *St. Lewis*
ephew Robert II. E. of Artois, *Thibauld* King *goes for*
erre, *Guy* Earl of *Flanders*, and a great Num- *Tunis.*
 he Nobility: Having landed with his Army in *1270.*
 in the Month of *July*, they immediately took
 le and City of *Carthage*, built upon the Ruins
 famous Rival of *Rome*, but had nothing now
 s great but its Name: From hence they mar-
 d sat down before *Tunis*, where after five
 time, the excessive Heats, scarcity of Wa-
 e-Air, and the Fatigues endured by the Army,
 the *Saracens* continually upon them, bred a
 ial Fear and Dysentery amongst them, where-
 at many Persons of Note died, of which *St. Lewis's*
 were Prince *John Tristan de Nevers*, and *Death and*
Ville Beon, the King's Chamberlain and Fa- *Character,*
 But what was still worse, the good King him-
 g seized with a Flux, was some days after ta-
 a continual Fever, which put an end to his
 Labours, by a happy End, the 25th of *Aug.*
 5th Year of his Age, and the 44th of his
 He was a Prince of excellent Virtues, but

ming, Drinking and Women, we Practice as they were yet in t Bo be omitted, that he never intert k I any Persons to Bishopricks and :ys, Liberty of Elections intirely free, of his Ambassadors having bro 'it Rome, that conferred upon him R tion, he was so angry that he .it and for the other Benefices, he ever it on such as best deserved them, never that were already preferred, unless they fir red their own Living. This King founded a ny Churches and Monasteries; and they : him the Institution of the University and ament of *Tholouse*.

This Prince had eight Children, viz. four Daughters; the first was *Philip* that him, *John Tristan* Earl of *Nevers*, *Alençon*, and *Robert* Earl of *Clermont*; ters were *Isabella*, *Blanch*, *Margaret*, The first married to *Thibauld II.* King the second to the Prince of *Castile*, t Duke of *Brabant*, and *Agnes* to the D of

C H A P. IV.

The Reign of PHILIP III.
the Hardy.

1270. **T**HE Christian Army being t I discouraged upon the Death lnc Spirits were again raised up upon t Brother *Charles* King of *Sicily*, who lanceda very time the King gave up the Ghost; Flesh to be all taken from his Bones, then was when any died in I reign and that he carried along with h o s King *Philip* kept the Bones, which aep *Dennis*. In the mean time C es, IC chief Command, since *Philip* w sp 1 on of *Tunis* with great Vigour; c

his, when their taking of the Place was most incertain, tho not till Winter was over, King's Impatience to return home, and *Charles* his covetousness of Money, made them give ear to the proposals of the King of *Tunis*, to whom they granted a Truce of ten Years, upon condition he would take the whole Charge of the Expedition, annually pay as much Tribute as he did the Pope, set free Christian Captives at Liberty, grant a free passage, and exempt Merchants from paying any duties, but suffer them to live in *Tunis*, and have the Exercise of the Christian Religion.

He even seemed to be angry at the King's return. The Turkish Fleet, indeed part of the Ships, wherein *Philip* was, was blown off his Coast, and landed safely at *Trapani* in *Sicily*, but *Charles* was obliged to return with a dreadful Tempest, which destroyed many of his Vessels, with the loss of 4000 men. The King of *Navarre* died at *Trapani*; the French Queen, being big with Child, so hurt herself by a Fall from her Horse, that she died at *Cosenza*; *Alphonso*, St. Philip's Brother, was taken off with a Pestilential Fever at *Sienna*, and soon after his Wife *Isabella* in the same Place: So that King *Philip* in Mourning for the Death of his Father, Wife and near relations, after so much Labour and Expence, brought nothing home but empty Coffers, and Coffins.

Complaint hereof to King *Philip* the Sovereign Lord *Guyenne*, he summoned a Parliament to decide the matter, and the same was carried in favour of King *Edward*.

Council at Lyons. There were a great many things required the conducting of a Council about this time, which was agreed to be held in the City of *Lyons*; whither the Pope came in Person, and where there appeared no less than 500 Bishops, 70 Abbots, and 1000 Doctors and Divinities: Besides the Ambassadors of King *Philip*, the Emperor *Rodolphus*, and divers Western Princes, there came thither also those from *Michael* Emperor of *Greece*, who presented some Letters from him, by virtue whereof they were admitted to an Abjuration of their Schism, and to make Profession of their following the Faith of the *Roman Church*, especially about the Procession of the Holy Ghost. After this the haughty Pope owned *Michael* for Emperor of the East, and forbade *Baldwin* to bear the Title any longer; the Election of *Rodolph* was here likewise confirmed: Besides, there were several Constitutions made concerning Elections, Provisions, and Residencies of Benefices, with other necessary and useful matters; but for the Indulgencies and Privileges granted unto those that went into the Holy Land, I have no opinion of the Expedition and Design, as so I'll leave it.

Philip marries.
1276.

Philip tired with being a Widower four years, took to Wife *Mary* the Daughter of *Henry*, and Sister to *John* Duke of *Brabant*. And now *Lewis* the King's Son, and his eldest by the first Venter, being dead, *Peter de la Brosse*, a Person whom the young Queen did not care for, would needs make use of this Opportunity to ruin her. He was a Man that rose from nothing, having been St. *Lewis's* Barber, was taken in *Philip's* Favour, and so highly preferred by him, that having nothing to fear but the too great Affection the King had for his Wife, he found out one to accuse her of having poisoned the Prince: Indeed the Child lost his Life that way, and if we believe one Author of this score, she had been in danger of being burnt alive, had not the Duke of *Brabant* her Brother sent a Gentleman, who offered to prove her Innocency by

The Queen accused of Murder.

bel against the Accuser, who wanting Courage to
justify his Words, was condemned to be hanged.

There were in the Kingdom at this time three false
prophets, the Vidame of *Leion*, a wandering Monk,
and an old Nun, whom *La Brosse* 'twas thought had
consulted and instructed to prognosticate somewhat
that might alienate the King's Affections from his
Queen; and *Philip* was so simple, that he sent the Ab-
bot of *Vendosme*, and the Bishop of *Bayeux* to dis-
course the old Nun upon that Subject. Now the Bishop
who was akin to *La Brosse's* Wife, going before, had
some private talk with the Nun, in order to inform
her what to say, and brought the King word, she
would discover nothing to him but at Confession:
The King not pleased with this Procedure, sent the
Bishop of *Dol* and a Templar to her, who returned
with this answer, that the Queen was innocent and
faithful to her Husband, and that all that had been
said of her was false, and nothing but mere Calum-
ny; so that from hence forward the Queen's Interest
was much confirmed, and that of *la Brosse* began to
decline.

In the mean time *Ferdinand de la Cerde* Prince of *Cas-
tile*, dying in his return home from *Navarre*, and
leaving two Sons behind him, by *Blanch* the French
King's Sister whose Names were *Alphonso* and *Fernando*

1277.

La Brosse
hanged.

management was such that there were neither Provisions nor Ammunition to be had for them, only a Party of them advanced into *Navarre*, under the Conduct of *Robert de Artois*. The King was still at *Bearn*, and the *Castilian* to amuse him, demands a Conference with *Robert*, whereby having made him lose five Weeks time, he suddenly decamped and marched towards *France*, of which the *Castilian* informing *Robert* by a Traitor, he was much surprized at it. Now you must understand that the Suspicion of this Treachery fell upon *Peter de la Brosse*, for *Jacobine* delivered into the King's own Hand a Packet at *Melun*, which he said he was enjoined to deliver to a certain Person who died in that City, but the Contents thereof were not known, only that there was a Letter sealed with *La Brosse's* Seal, at which the King upon the reading of it, seemed much amazed, and the same was supposed to have been some Intelligence he should give to the King of *Castile*: However it were, he was made a Prisoner in the Castle of *Jarville Beausse*, then some days afterwards brought to *Paris* and hanged on a common Gallows; and the Consequence of this was, that all his Creatures suffered by his Fall, but the Bishop of *Bayeux* his Brother-in-law, made his Escape to the Pope, where he remained a long time in Exile.

1279.

'Tis not compatible with this Design to treat of the Affairs of any other Country, any farther than they interfere with those of *France*; and therefore to pass over the ambitious Designs of *Charles* King of *Sicily* in respect to *Italy*, the *Grecian* Empire, and the like, we are to observe that this Year he had like to have lost *Provence*; for Queen *Margaret*, *St. Lewis's* Widow, and *Charles* his Sister-in-law, disputed it with him as being the elder Daughter of *Raymond*, and implored the Emperor's Assistance, of whom that Court held, because of the Kingdom of *Arles*. Nevertheless the matter being fully examined, the Count was left to *Charles*, upon condition of Homage to the Emperor. In the mean time *Edward* King of *England*, with his Queen *Alienor* crossing the Seas, had an Interview with *Philip* at *Amiens*, where it was agreed King *Edward* should have the Earldom of *Agenor*.

which belonged to Queen *Alienor* of her Mother, was given up to him ; while on the other hand renounced his Pretensions to the County of *Normandy*, but retained 30 Livres on the Exchequer or Court of Judicature belonging to the Province.

it was that the fatal *Sicilian Vespers* hapned, the *French* in that Island on Easter day, upon the ringing of the Bell to Vespers, had their Throats cut in a most inhumane and barbarous manner to the number of 8000 People in two hours time. *Charles* then in *Tuscany*, with all the Assistance he could procure, closely besieged *Messina*, which defended it self, till the King of *Arragon* arrived and crowned King of the Island, who finding himself an unequal Match for *Charles*, he cunningly offered to decide this great Contest by a personal Combat between them, assisted by a hundred choice Knights on either side : *Charles* more than wise accepts the Challenge, and *Edward* of *England* who was related to both, undertook to secure the Field for them at *Bourdeaux* on the 1st of *July* the following year ; so that *Charles* by the Word of his perfidious Enemy imprudently gave up the Siege, and agreed to a Truce. When the appointed day was come, *Charles* entered the Field at *Bourdeaux* with his hundred Knights, and remained

1282.

children before-mentioned to be unjustly put by, and in case of their decease without Issue, *Philip* King of *France* was to succeed, who had indeed some Right already to *Castile* by *Blanch* the Mother of *St. Lewis*; but *Sancho* had artifice enough to maintain himself on the Throne.

lip
ges war
inst Ar-
on.
1285.

The Pope having all this while excommunicated *K. Peter* of *Arragon*, and his Legate having caused the Croisade to be preached against him, *K. Philip* himself would go upon this Expedition, in order to install *Charles* his second Son in that Kingdom. His Army consisted of no less than 20000 Horse and 80000 Foot: Part of the Infantry were put on board fourscore Vessels, which he took along with him to carry his Ammunition, Provision, and Artillery; and he was attended by *James* King of *Majorca* and *Minorca*, whom *Peter* his Brother had dethroned. The Army broke up from *Narbonne* in *May*, and attacked *Perpignan*, which was quickly surrendered to *James*, and received the *French* in. *Elna* was taken by Storm, and all therein destroyed, except the Bastard *de Roussillon*, who shewed them a Passage over the Mountains; so that the *Arragonians* who guarded the narrow Passes, finding the *French* at their backs, quitted their Posts, and left them free entrance into *Catalonia*, where they quickly became Masters of divers small Places, and laid siege to *Gironne*. *Peter* used his endeavours to relieve it; but being beaten and grievously wounded in an Ambush he had designed for intercepting the Convoy that was marching from *Roses*, the Place after two months Siege was given up for want of Provisions; and three months after the Fight King *Peter* died, being succeeded by *Alphonso*.

But the *French* were not so successful the remaining part of the Campaign; for they, in order to the saving of Charges (tho imprudently enough) having sent back the Vessels belonging to the *Pisens* and *Genouese*, that were in their Service, the *Arragonian* Admiral *Lauria*, taking the advantage of it, fell upon the Remainder of their Fleet, and defeated them all, except such as escaped into *Roses*.

In the interim the Scarcity of Provision, and Sickness, brought this huge Army to dwindle almost to nothing

ing; and K. Philip himself falling sick, was carried
 to *Perpignan* in a Litter, where being inform'd,
 that *Gironne*, and his other Acquests in *Catalonia* were
 recovered by the Enemy, he grew melancholy
 on it; and the Agitation of his Journey increased
 his Sicknels so much, that he died there on the sixth
 of *October*, in the beginning of the 45th year of his
 life, and the sixteenth of his Reign; his Flesh and
 Jewels being interr'd in the Cathedral of *Narbonne*,
 and his Bones brought to *St. Dennis*. If we consider
 his Prince's Qualities, we shall find him to be valiant,
 good, liberal, just, and very pious, but too simple,
 and easy to be deceived: If his Conduct, it was not
 ever successful in his foreign Enterprizes; but for his
 domestick undertakings, they could not prove better
 for the benefit of his Kingdom, since it grew rich and
 flourish'd by a Peace of fifteen years duration, with-
 out vexing the People with Taxes, and with maintain-
 ing an exact and speedy Course of Justice. By *Isabella*,
 daughter of *James I.* King of *Arragon*, he left two Sons,
Philip and *Charles*; the first succeeded him, and the o-
 ther was Earl of *Valois*, and Father of a *Philip* that came
 to the Crown. By his 2^d Wife, *Mary* of *Brabant*, he
 had one Son and two Daughters; the Son being *Lewis*
 Earl of *Euvreux*, from whom sprang the Branch of
Euvreux, to which the Crown of *Navarre* devolved
 by Marriage: The Daughters were *Margaret* and

Philip's
 Death and
 Character.
 1285.

C H A P. V.

*The Reign of PHILIP IV. surnam
Fair, King of France and Navarre*

Philip
crowned.
1286.

Philip having brought the remainder of the back into *France*, he was with his Queen c at *Rheims* on the 6th of *January*; and the sar having sent several Lords to receive *Edward I* England at *Amiens*, he was from thence condu *Paris*, where he was magnificently treated, and in the Parliament held after *Easter*, after w went by land to *Bordeaux*; but he forgot not press earnestly that he might have some reparat *Normandy*, and those Countries which his Fat himself had renounced claim to, tho without any and therefore while he was at *Bordeaux*, he r solemn Embassies from the Kings of *Castile*, and *Sicily*, all Enemies to *France*, which gav *Philip* no small Cause of Jealousy; but for all th that *Philip's* Vice-roy in *Navarre* continued t against *Aragon*, *Edward* used all his Endeav compose the Differences between *France*, *Arag* *Sicily*; and therefore having first conferred w *phonso* and *Oleron de Bearn*, he afterwards t pains of making a Voyage into *Sicily*, to trea *James*, *Alphonso's* Brother, who had seized that

The Treaty was carried on so well, that *Cha* *Lame*, Son to the late *Charles* King of *Sicily*, at liberty, and a promise made that the Earl of to whom the Pope, upon his Excommunication late King, had given the Kingdom of *Aragon*, renounce all his Pretensions to it, and that th should give the Investiture of *Sicily* to *James* in possession; for the security of all which gave his three Sons and fifty Persons of Quality stages. But for all this, when he had obtained berty, and was got into *France*, he exhorted not to lay aside his Pretensions of Right to th



of *Aragon*, and going afterwards into *Italy*,
 of himself to be crowned King of *Sicily* by the
 both on this side, and beyond the *Phare* of *Mes-*
 and so the War went on between him and *James*
rragon with various Success, and the same termi-
 at last in a Truce for two years.

this while *Don Sancho* King of *Castile* was very
 us to have a Peace with *Philip*, and for that rea-
 e would have given him up the two Sons of *Al-*
de Cerda before-mentioned; to which end he
 voured to get them out of the hands of the *Ar-*
ian who kept them. Now the *Arragonian* deny-
 is, he entred into a Treaty with *Philip*, to oblige
 lf to give the Kingdom of *Murcia* to the eldest of the
 ers, and some Lands to the other. Hereupon *Alphonso*
 em at liberty, that they might be so much the more
 d to him, and continue Enemies to *Sancho*, which
 very ill advifedly did, refusing to stand to the
 ment made by *Philip* their Cousin-German for
 and so took up Arms against the *Castilian*, who
 ly making use of the *French* King's Displeasure *Philip* re-
 t them, had an Interview with him at *Bayonne*, nounces his
 ere made a Treaty, whereby *Philip* was obliged Pretensions
 f to abandon the Interests of his unhappy Cousins, to *Castile*.
 uthal he renounced to *Sancho* all the Pretensions 1290.

ght have to the Crown of *Castile*.

the other hand, *Charles* the Lame, notwithstanding

this Inquiry, which in it self was just and need was converted into a most odious Robbery.

French
and Eng-
lish quar-
rel.

1292.

The Peace between *France* and *England* had till now, to the great satisfaction of both Nations, when an accidental Quarrel between an *English* knight, and one of *Normandy*, upon the Coast of *Gu* where they had gone ashore to take in fresh V set them at variance, and brought on a kind of War, or rather Privateering; and the *English* had been damaged thereby, *K. Edward*, seeing the no open Rupture, demanded Restitution of the of his Subjects, while *Philip* on the contrary sued him to appear in his Court of Parliament. *Vassal*, whither *Edward* sent *Edmund* his Brother. But *Philip* not satisfied therewith, caused him with much severity to be declared contumacious, and sold his Lands to be seized, in pursuance of which *Robert de Nesle*, Constable of *France*, seized several Castles in *Guyenne*, and even *Bordeaux* it self, the Capital in the following Year. Thus these little Sparks of contention between private Men, broke out into a Flame. War, that may be said to have proved very fatal to *France*, as upon other accounts, so more particularly since it made way for the Overthrow of her ancient Laws and Liberties, and the introducing and establishing divers Burdens and Taxes upon the People, the increase whereof is usually attended with Revolts and Seditions, as it fell out this Year by a great commotion at *Rome*, tho at last it ended in hanging the Ringleaders, and the Banishment and Ruin of the rest.

1293.

1294.

In the mean time the King of *England* being distressed for the Losses sustained in *Guyenne*, solicited the Emperor *Adolphus*, and the Earl of *Flanders* and *France*, the first of whom sent a defiance to *Philip* in a haughty Stile, to which they made no other Answer but a Sheet of white Paper; and the Emperor upon went no farther than Threats: But for *Gu* of *Flanders*, he being cunningly allured by Letters from the King to go with his Wife and Daughter to *Paris*, he was basely imprisoned there. 'Tis true, and his Wife had their liberty about a year after, but the Daughter they still detained to break the Me

a Match between her and the Prince of *Wales*, which
 ould be of too pernicious a consequence to *France*.
 However *Edward* having two weighty matters before
 a, which was the Conquest of *Scotland*, and the Philip
 recovery of his Losses in *Guyenne*, he thought he had finds K.
 advanced the first; and therefore to bring about Edward
 second, he prepared a mighty Fleet, and strength- a Diver-
 ed himself with Friends and Allies: But *Philip*, to sion.
 break his Measures, induced the *Scotch* Homager, al- 1295.
 ready menaced by his Subjects, to break his Treaty
 with *Edward*, and make an Alliance with *France*; and
 the farther cementing of the same, he promised to
 give the Earl of *Valois* his eldest Daughter in mar-
 riage to his eldest Son Prince *Edward*. But still not
 being here, the *French* King caused an Insurrection in
Gascony, where the People made such Devastations in the
 County of *Pembroke* and thereabouts, that it broke
 King *Edward's* Measures; so that he was forced to
 go in Person into that Country, and for the present lay
 to the Affairs of *Guyenne*.

Boniface, a proud, haughty and imperious Priest,
 now in the Papal Chair, thought all the Prin-
 ces of the Earth must submit to his Commands; and
 therefore ardently pursuing the Design he aimed at of
 bringing all Kings to go to the Holy War, he sent to
 demand both *Philip* and the King of *England*, that
 they must make a Truce, upon pain of being excom-

the Earl of *Artois* :

by *John Earl*

Brother. It will be to little

Detail of every petty Act

won two signal Victories by the Earls

Warlike *Artois*. Indeed *Edmund* was by

Exploits. retreat to *Bayonne*, where he died ;

1295, 96. *Lincoln* that succeeded him in the Cor

having lost many Men before *Dags*, dr

treated. In the mean time a most da

A Confede- was forming against *France*, there hav

racy a- made at *Cambray* by the Interest of the r

gainst *land*, wherein he engaged the Duke of *Bi*

France. of *Holland*, *Juliers*, *Luxemburg*, *Gi*

Albert Duke of *Austria*, the Emper

the *Fleming* himself, who all se

Cartels of Defiance to *K. Philip* ; I no

so much as that from the Earl of *ru*

The Earl of *Bar* began the work by rav

paigne ; but his own Country by way

being plundered by the King's Troops, a

advancing into *Champagne*, he was so d

surrender himself to her without making

trious or Defence, and was not released

hard Terms of doing Homage for his E

he ever pretended to hold in free Tenure,

condemned by a Decree of Parliament

Arms in the Holy Land, till the King

recal him.

The greatest Burden of the War fell

into which Country *K. Philip* marched w

inv, to whom the Queen joined Forces, a

subdued the Earl of *Bar*. He took *Li*

of three Months, and *Courtray* and

much difficulty ; while on the other ha

Artois won the Battel of *Furness*, w

Juliers was so severely handled, it

Wounds. *Adolthus* was detained ;

Germany by the Imbroilments of the

found a way by the mighty Power of

off the Duke of *Austria*, who brought

him the Duke of *Brabant*, and *Ea*

burgh, *Gueldres*, and *Beaumont*.

French
successful
in Flan-
ders.

1297.

d, who was there in Person, and had his Fleet
 in, and his Land-forces in the Country-Towns,
 rather an Inconvenience than an Assistance to
 ming. Besides, we may observe, that the great-
 ies in *Flanders*, as *Ghent* and *Bruges*, had been
 making this War, and amongst them a Faction
 clared for the *French*, who called themselves
mer de luce Bearers. All these matters being put
 to, the Confederates, by the Mediation of the
Savoy and King of *Sicily*, obtained a Truce
 the 10th of *October* till Twelfth-day for *Guyenne*,
 St. *Andrew's* day for *Flanders* only.

In the mean time *Edward* making use of the oppor-
 tunity fell upon the *Scots*, took *John Baliol* Prisoner,
 resolved not to release him, till he had made an
 end of his Wars with the *French*. This done, and the
 Truce expired, he prepared for *Guyenne*; but to
 stop to any further Action, their Ambassadors at
Arras prolonged the Truce to the end of the *Truce*
 and it was agreed the Allies of both Kings *concluded*.
 should be comprehended, and so consequently *John* 1298.
 should have been so, but they could never ob-
 tain Liberty; and that all the Places conquered in
 the War should remain in *Philip's* hands during the
 Truce. It was also agreed that *Edward* should marry
 the daughter, *Philip's* Sister, and that his Son *Edward*

Paris, that he might treat with the K
assured him, if within a year he c
Peace, he should be set at liberty, i
to the same Place where they had tak
King ungenerously, without any re
Uncle had done, detained the *Fl*
Sons, which so stuck to *Valois*, that
and went into *Italy*, where he
the Daughter and Heiress of .
ror of *Constantinople*, and the rope gave
pire, and made him his Vicar over all t
Territories, hoping thereby to carry on
a Holy War.

re to cement a Union, they treated of a
age between *Rodolph Albert's* Son, and *Blanch*
ughter of *Philip*, which was not consummated
following year.

the other hand *Boniface*, growing obstinate in
sign of an Expedition into the Holy Land, and
g he had a Right to oblige all Christian Princes
it leastwise acting as such, he sent the Bishop of
t to King *Philip*, with a charge to exhort him
Undertaking, as also to summon him to make
ord good to the Earl of *Flanders*, by setting his
ter at liberty; the Bishop discharged his Com-
n in such high Terms, and the King was inform-
t his Discourses upon several Occasions were so
us to his Person, and conducive to disturb the
and Quiet of the Kingdom, that he caused him
eized and imprisoned. This and other Inciden-*Pope and*
ude their hatred run up high, and the Pope dis-*French K.*
d the Archdeacon of *Narbonne* to command *at vari-*
ing to set the Bishop at liberty, and let him *ance.*
there was a Bull, importing that the King was *1301.*
his Correction for the Sins he committed in the
ement of his Government, as well as for others;
he conferring of Benefices did not belong to him,
at the Regalia was an Usurpation: By another
e suspended all the Privileges granted by his

revolts.
1302.

BUT TO LEAVE THESE EMPLOYMENTS FOR THE PRESENT, we are here to take notice that *Flanders* revolted and was as lost the *French*: Those People unable to endure the heavy Taxes and Imposts imposed on them by their young Governor *James de Chateau*, the Instigation of *Peter Flote*, a violent, and one-eyed Man, they invited in *William* the Earl of *Fuliers*, and a Daughter of Earl *Robert* to be their Head, whose younger Sons with the Brother *John*, came into the County of *Flanders* to support the defection. The Fire began at *Mons*, and broke out more fiercely at *Bruges*, where the Garrison being all knocked on the Head, the *Furnes*, *Bergh*, *Bourbourg* and *Castell* follow

eat Men more, but particularly *Peter Flota*,
as the chief cause of this misfortune. The King
sueve the loss, and revenge this bloody Affront,
he Field in Person with above 100000 Men ;
Assurance of the *Flemings*, and the Intelligence
n by the Queen of *England* his Sister, that if
rded a Battel his own Men would betray him,
him from proceeding any farther than *Doway*,
the Autumnal Rains rendred his March very

this War, which was very troublesom in it self, 1303.
ave been much more so, had the King of *Eng-*
he ought to have done, intermedled with it ;
r Troubles helped to advance his Affairs, and
s having prolonged the Truce two or three
ith the *French*, he at length converted it to a
and the Treaty was concluded at *Paris* on the
May, whereby it was stipula d, that *Philip*
restore to King *Edward* all that ne had taken
n in *Guyenne*, and grant him a Patent for the
ire of that Dutchy. *John Baliol* was set at
but the *Scots* would not own him, and so he
d, and died a private Man in *France*.

Courage of the *Flemings* being not to be sur-
d, their old Earl grown weary of his Imprison-
obtained a Truce by the means of *Ame* Earl of

the *French* side of the *Lys*, and the Cities and *Doway*, which were to remain to the King. The Earl had more fully settled matters with them, that the *Flemings* paid down the Sum of 800000. The Earl who was now fourscore years old, long enjoy his Liberty, but died, and was followed by his eldest Son *Robert de Betune*.

1303.

But before these things were fully transacted, convoked a second General Assembly at *Paris*. *Du Pleffis* offered to prosecute the Pope before the Council adhering to the Appeal heretofore against him by *Nogaret*; the King promised to cure the Convocation, and in case *Boniface* should ways proceed against him, formed his Appeal. *Du Pleffis* had done: Besides, fearing his People much oppressed with Taxes, and dissatisfied with the Ministry, should chance to fail him in time of need, he found it necessary, in order to prevent all dissent, to have Letters or Writings from all the Prelates, Cities, Corporations, Churches, Religious Prelates, and Lords of his Kingdom, to approve his Design, and concur with him therein. In these Proceedings *Nogaret* was gone into *Italy*, to see the Pope's Person, under pretence of bringing him back fair or foul means to the Council, and that he did at *Anagnia* the place of his Nativity, where he had retired for his greater security; but the Pope, of *Anagnia* repenting they had joined with the

secession, four days after drove the *French* Soldiers out of the Town, whereby the *King* regained his liberty, but soon after died at a burning Fever, and was succeeded by *XL.* who carried things with a better Temper, he dying on the 7th of *July*, 1304. the *King* was a long time before they could elect one who at last by the Management of the *Bishop* of *Bordeaux* was chosen in the spring of the year 1305, who instead of going to *Italy*, as the Cardinals desired, sent for them, to assist at his Coronation; the *King*, his *Charles*, with a great many Princes and Nobles, besides a multitude of People, being present at the Ceremony; the *King* for some time held the bridle of the Pope's Mule, but then left it to be held by his Brother *Charles*, and the Duke of *Bretagne*; the *King* then caused an old Wall overcharged with people to be pulled down, which overwhelmed the Duke of *Burgundy*, and a Brother of the Pope's, grievously hurt; the *King* somewhat lightly, and beat the Duke of *Burgundy* from the Pope's Head, a Presage of the troubles which the Translation of the See into *Avis* was to bring upon the Nation, and all *Christen-*

Pope fixed his Residence at last in 1308 at *Avignon*. *Pope* sent *Charles* King of *Sicily* his letters at *Avignon*.

his Master, did not forget to fill his own Coffers to enrich his Family with more Lands, Impositions and Benefices, than a faithful and disinterested ought to do; besides which the People mightily aggrieved with the changing of Money which being made light, weak, and of too base alloy; they put too high a value upon it; but thinking to lower it, which made the loss great, the Knights mutinied, plundered and demolished the House of the Treasurer *Barbet*, from whence they went to the Temple where the King lay, and committed many Insolencies; but the Sedition being over, many of the Mutineers were hanged. The Knights were indeed observed to contribute to this Disorder which was thought to have proceeded from their giving a great deal of Money, and their Loss upon the Reduction of its value: However it were, the King who never forgot an Injury, kept this in mind, and was one Motive which induced him to revenge himself upon the whole Order. Indeed the vast Numbers of these Knights, their intolerable Pride, and disobliging Carriage towards the Princes and Men that went into the Holy Land; the great account they made either of the Temporal or Ecclesiastical Authority, their dissolute and licentious lives had rendered them obnoxious and very dangerous, and supplied their Enemies with a specious pretence to root them out. It was now therefore, upon the discovery and Confession of some Villains among themselves, to which the Greatness of their Crime and Desire of the King's Mercy and Reward had persuaded them, that *Philip* by the Pope's Consent whom he had newly had a Conference at *Poitiers* ordered them all to be seized on the 12th of May throughout the Kingdom, their Estates to be confiscated, and their Temple with all their Treasures and Writings to be possessed for his own use. In the same time the Grand Master *de Molay* being writ to the Pope to come from *Cyprus*, where he valiantly fought War against the *Turks*; he with sixty Knights of the Order was no sooner arrived at *Paris*, but they were all seized at the same time, and without delay judicially proceeded against, except *Guy* Brother

The Templars put down.

1307.

phin of *Viennois*, *Hugh de Peralde*, and another
 cipal Officer, whom the Pope reserved to his own
 gment, fifty of them were burnt alive on a slow
 , who denied at their Deaths what they had con-
 d on the Rack: Not content herewith, *Philip*
 his Importunity, got the Templars likewise sei-
 in all the States of *Christendom*, and severely pu-
 ed, tho not with Death in many Places.

ere we might take notice of the Death of *Ed-*
 the first King of *England*, and the Assassination
 e Emperor *Albert*; also of the decease of *Charles*
 ame, King of *Naples*, with the particulars that at-
 d these Adventures; but these being not peculiar-
 Subject, we proceed to shew, that there being
 a Council to assemble at *Vienne*, the Pope, to pre-
 he King's Subjects in their pursuit of the Me-

*Council of
 Vienne.
 1310.*

of *Boniface*, granted them all the Bulls he
 desire for the Justification both of the King and
 inisters; nay, for fear *Nogaret* should blow the
 up again, he granted him Absolution. This
 ore being done, and the Council opened on the
 of *Octob.* the Pope declared it was convoked for
 rocess of the Templars, the Recovery of the Holy
 Reformation of Manners and Discipline, and
 e Extirpation of Heresy: *Philip* himself went
 r in *Lent* with a great Court, and assisted at the
 of the second Session, taking his Seat on the

sons, and in many Particulars; besides, there were *Catalonian* Gentlemen that offered to justify it by combat, but none would take up their Gantlets; but the Pope and Cardinals made a Decree, that this should never hereafter be reproached for anything he had done against *Boniface*.

1312.

But to say no more of the Proceedings of the Council, we are to observe in this Place, that the City of *Lyons* had for a long time held of the Arch-Bishop of *Arles*, who had conferred the Temporal Jurisdiction thereof upon its Arch-Bishop; but since the Kings of *France*, taking advantage of the weakness and indolence of the Emperors, who were Kings of *Aragon*, by degrees attracted the Sovereignty of that Kingdom to themselves, and the City of *Lyons* began to revolt from them: Now during the War between *Savoy* and *France*, the Citizens fearing they might be persecuted, had recourse to *Philip*, who gave them a War against whom the Arch-Bishop, as thinking himself aggrieved, stirred up the People; and this quickly brought *Prince Lewis Hutin* with an Army thither, who made the Bishop Prisoner; and he never got off, till he made a Surrendry of his Temporal Jurisdiction to the King, who afterwards *Philip* the Long restored him again.

A new
War with
Flanders.

1313.

Soon after this, *Robert* Earl of *Flanders* again needs have his Cities of *Lisle*, *Doway* and *Calais*, affirming he had paid the Money agreed upon with *Marigni*, who absolutely governed both the Kingdom: The *Flemings* also refused to disarm their Towns, or to pay either the Principal or Interest of those Sums they owed the King, and so were forced to begin another War. To provide for the King summoned the chief of the People of *Flanders* and from a high Theatre set forth unto them the necessities, upon which the Deputies suffered to be persuaded to grant him six Deniers in the pound, besides other more grievous Subsidies; but the Nobles of *Picardy* and *Normandy* highly opposed it, the rest invoked the Divine Vengeance to overthrow *Marigni*, the Author of all these Exactions: 100000 Moans and Execrations were so far from deterring him, that on the contrary he aggravated it

making new Money, of too base an Alloy, Gold and Silver : However the Money being in the King to the Oppression of the People, led with his Army over the *Lys*, and incamped of the *Flemings*; while *Marigni*, who had his own business, took the advantage of the Legates Interposition, and persuaded the King to a Truce; and so that great Army, which about to have conquered all *Flanders*, vanished in smoke.

The disgrace of King Philip was succeeded by one far greater, for *Margaret*, *Jane*, and *Blanch*, ^{Adultery severely punished.} three of his three Sons, were accused of Adultery; the Wife of *Lewis Hutin*, and the third his Wife, being convicted of that Crime with *Gautier de Lannoy*, who were Brothers, *man* Gentlemen, they were by Decree of Parliament in the King's Presence, confined to the *Casailard de Andely*, and both the Gallants fled when being brought into the Field of *Maubuisson*, newly mowed, their privy Parts were cut off, their Heads, and their Bodies fastned under the cross to a Gibbet : As for *Jane* the Wife of *Philip*, after she had been confined for almost a year her Husband was willing to take her for honest, and to live with her again, being happier, or at least as happy as his two Brothers.

R. Philip
his Death.

lip about the end of the year, being seized
grievous Fit of Sickness, which put a Period
Life on the 24th of Nov. at *Fontainbleau* the
his Nativity, in the 48th year of his Age, and t
of his Reign : His Monument is at *St. Dennis*.
Prince being on his Death-bed, and smitten wi
ry late Remorse, he took pity on the poor
put a stop to the raising of the new Taxes, and
Son Orders to moderate them, to coin good
and to have a care of the Justice and Polity
Kingdom.

His Cha-
racter.

He had by his Wife Queen *Jane* of *Navarre*
Sons, viz. *Lewis Hutin*, *Philip* the Long, and
the Fair, who succeeded one another, and left
Male behind them : He had likewise three Da
Margaret married to *Ferdinand* King of *Casti*
bel Wife to *Edward II.* King of *England*, and
who died young. He was the handsomest
best shaped Prince of his time ; he had a pro
haughty heart, a lively and quick Spirit, a fir
resolute Soul ; was magnificent and liberal, and y
greedy of Money ; severe even to hard-hearted
and more inclined to revenge than to forgive :
the rest, the severe Taxes laid upon his People, a
many Exactions wherewith they were tormente
frequent Change and Alteration of the Coin, a
little Progress he made in *Flanders* with the vast
he had raised, the absoluteness of his insolent
greedy Prime-Minister, his Proceedings agai
Daughters-in-law for Adultery, and his bitt
penitance at his Death for having so much opp
Subjects, demonstrate what his Reign and C
were.

C H A P. VI.

Reign of LEWIS X. surnamed Hutin.

As *Philip* was dead his eldest Son *Lewis* succeeded him, tho he could not get to be crowned till the 3d of *August* in the following year as well because he tarried for the Arrival of his new Spouse *Clemence*, the Daughter of *Charles* the King of *Hungary*, as because the whole Kingdom was in an uproar about the Taxes, and alteration of the Coin. Now this Prince, tho at full Age, and hitherto employed for many Years in publick Affairs, *Charles de Valois* his Uncle assumed the Authority, and displacing what Officers he thought fit, he put his own Creatures into their room; and there being money to be had for defraying the Charge of the Coronation, he took the opportunity to inquire and examine the Officers of the Treasury, and especially *Marigni*, with whom before he had some differences.

Accordingly *Marigni* being sent for into the King's presence, to give an Account of the Treasury, had

this being tried in an Assembly at *Senlis*, was
and restored ; and afterwards his Innocency
more fully appear, in that four Women w
victed, and punished for poisoning his Predec
is The Truce with the *Flemings* being at an e
the very time of the King's Coronation, he
Forces together ; and whilst *William* Earl of
ravaged the Country along the *Scheld*, he laid
Courtray, but the unseasonable Weather effe
which the *Fleming* durst not undertake, an
him to raise the Siege ; so that we find nothi
memorable concerning this Prince, who ne
the end of *May* began to feel the Effects

K. Lewis

with Child; by his first Wife *Margaret*, Daughter of *Robert II.* Duke of *Burgundy*, he had a daughter named *Jane*, to whom belonged the Kingdom of *Navarre*, and the Counties of *Brie* and *Champagne*; but *Philip* the Long, and *Charles* the Fair, without Pretences to detain them.

When *Lewis* left this World, his Brother *Philip* the Third, Earl of *Poitiers*, was at *Lyons*, where in pursuance of his Orders, he laboured to make them chuse a Pope, to supply the See which had been vacant for three Years; and having got all the Cardinals together, he shut them up in a Conclave in the *Jacobin's* convent, and they had been there some days, when the news of his Brother's Death made him return with all haste to *Paris*, after he had entrusted the Earl of *Forces* with the Guard of the Conclave, who after 40 days did come to no other Conclusion about the Election, but to refer it to the single Vote of *James Dossa* Cardinal, and Bishop of *Oporto*, who without mincing matter, named himself, to the Amazement of them present, and so it passed, and he assumed the Name of *Clement*; he was a poor Cobler's Son of *Quercy*, but well learned for those times.

France at this time seemed to be at a difficult Pass in respect to the Succession, which was established in favour of the Males, not by any written Law, but by custom only; however because in most if not all

C H A P. VII.

The Reign of PHILIP V. surnam
the Long.

THE Queen being brought to bed of a Son
15th of November, who was named *John*,
same going out of the World eight days after,
buried in *St. Dennis*, and in the Funeral Obsequy
declared King of *France* and *Navarre*, which
given some Modern Authors occasion to increase
number of the Kings of *France*, and to call
John I. Hereupon the Dispute about the Crown
with greater heat than before; *Charles Earl*
lois seemed to favour little *Jane*, as well as that
of *Burgundy* her Uncle; but the Nobility of the
Kingdom, and the Peers assembled at *Paris*, declared
the Right of the Males, and gave Judgment in
favour of *Philip*, who on the 9th of *January*
crowned at *Rheims*, the Gates of the City were
the same time shut, for fear any opposition should
made to it. Now the Estates being assembled at
where were present not only most part of the Nobility
but also the Deputies of Cities and Corporations
above all the Burghers, and the University of *Paris*
they swore before the Chancellor, to acknowledge
no other King but *Philip* and his Heirs Male to the
exclusion of Females.

And here 'tis to be observed that *Robert II.*
Artois had had a Sister named *Mahaut*, and
called *Philip*; the Sister was married to the
Burgundy, by whom he had two Daughters,
Philip the Fair gave unto two of his Sons
Philip dying before his Father, left a Son who
was *Robert*, as his Grandfather's was, and to whom
Earldom of *Flanders* of Right did belong,
Fair adjudged it to *Mahaut*, upon pretence it
a Masculine Fief, and that according to the Custom
those Countries, Representation did not take

Philip
crowned.

117.

'artial
'udgment
f Philip.

Robert having by force got into Possession during the Agency of *Philip* the Long, the matter now to be examined, the Lands sequestred into the

Hands, and at last very partially adjudged to *John*, whose Daughter *Philip* had married, which was the occasion of much mischief; for three several times in less than 18 Months they began a War against *Flemings*, and the same ended as many times in a

the mean time the Duke of *Burgundy* could not bear insisting upon the wrong done to young *Jane*, detaining the Kingdom of *Navarre* with the He keeps
Doms of *Brie* and *Champagne* from her; and *Philip* *Navarre*.
Thus to appease him, gave him his Daughter, also
and *Jane*, in Marriage, with the Earldom of *Bur-*
gundy; notwithstanding which *Eudes* still persisted so
upon the Right of his Niece, that the King was
obliged to marry her to *Philip* Son of *Lewis* Earl d'
Artois, *Philip's* Paternal Uncle, with the Rights
which he had to the Kingdom of *Navarre*, and the
Doms of *Brie* and *Champagne*.

Now the great danger *France* was in after the Death
of *Hutten* about the Succession, and a cruel War
afflicted *Scotland* about a matter almost of the
same Nature, after the Decease of *Alexander IV.*
occasioned the renewing of the Alliance between

Peace with
Flanders.

1320.

chosen Arbitrator, should go to *Paris* the 1st Spring, to accommodate all matters between
The Peace was concluded the 20th of *May*,
Cities of *Doway*, *Liste* and *Orchies*, confirme
King's Possession; besides the *Flemings* were
thirty thousand Florins of Gold, and swor
assist their Earl, in case he contravened the Ag
while the King on his part promis'd his
Margaret to *Lewis* Earl of *Nevers* and *Retel*,
of another *Lewis*, the eldest Son of Earl *Robe*
condition he should succeed his Grandfather
Earldom of *Flanders*, in case his Father sh
before his Grandfather. Indeed *Robert de C*
Earl of *Flanders* his second Son, having at
time accused his elder Brother *Lewis*, as tho h
have poisoned his Father, *Lewis* was imprison
tho his Servants and Confessor were put to t
ture, and that they could not make out any
gainst him, he was not set at Liberty, but up
dition of never returning into *Flanders* again.

A like Frenzy to that we gave an account o
time of *St. Lewis*, began to seize the Peasa
Shepherds of this Country for the Recovery
Holy Land, upon the Instigation of a certai
put out of his Cure; they rendezvouzed in th
Clerks at *Paris*, marched into *Aquitain*, from
to *Languedoc*, massacring the *Jews* and pl
their Stores, wherever they met with them;
Earl of *Foix* pursued them so closely, that he
dispersed them.

Having done with these strange Adventure
come now to the Lepers of these times, who n
were a horror to the World, but also becam
envied, because of their great Wealth, and th
some Distemper did not render them incap
enjoying their Pleasures; besides, they paid n
wherewith the rest of the People were lade
whether for these or some other Reasons, th
accused for having by an Agreement with th
who had been re-admitted into the Kingdom
Reign of *Lewis Ist Min*, and holding Intelliger
the *Turks*, cast some of their Ordure or
Poison into the Wells and Springs, thereby

Lepers
punished.

those that were in health with their foul Disease, or to poison them. Besides which they were guilty several unnatural Crimes, so that great numbers of them were condemned to the Flames, and the rest confined very close within their Hospitals. As for the rest, the Mob did Justice upon them themselves, and put a great many of them, upon which the King banished their whole Race out of his Dominions.

This Year the King's Council having resolved to alter the same Weights, Measures and Coin over the whole Kingdom, they would, under pretence of some expence and Charges they should be at, take the fifth part of the Subjects Goods. In the mean time the Princes and Prelates, who had a right to coin Money, would not suffer the King's Commissaries to go on with their Reform; but they appealed to the States of the Kingdom, and confederated with the great Cities for their Defence; so that the Tax being not raised,

Reglement was laid aside. During these Disturbances, *K. Philip* laden with the Curses of the People, hated by the Clergy, by reason of his too frequent exacting of the Tenth from them, fell sick of a violent Ague, wherewith having languished for five months together, at last he died on the third of January at *Bois de Vincennes*, after he had lived one and forty years, and of them had reigned five, and six

1321.

*K. Philip's
Death.*

C H A P. VIII.

*The Reign of CHARLES IV. surnam
the Fair.*

1322.

III Mini-
sters pu-
nished.

THE Succession of the Males being well established, Charles came to the Throne, and was crowned the 11th of February at Rheims, without opposition all the Peers assisting thereat, except the King of England, and Earl of Flanders; and the first work of his Reign was to make an Inquisition into the Misadministration of the late Reign, and punish the Authors of it. Gerard de la Guerre, a Person of mean Extraction, had been the chief Manager of the Treasures under Philip, and therefore being now taken up, was put upon the Rack, examined, and used so severely that he died in the midst of those Torments. But this did not prevent their dragging his Body thro the Streets and hanging it up on the Gallows at Paris. Then they made a general search for all the Farmers, and as had been any ways concerned in the Revenue who were for the most part Lombards and Italian miserable Usurers and Exactors. The Estates of these were all confiscated, and they sent packing into their own Countries, as beggerly as they came from thence.

As for Charles, he had been indulgent enough, not putting his Wife Blanch to death, who had been condemned for Adultery; but now that he was come to the Crown, the desire of having Children excited him to obtain a Divorce from her, under pretence of Consanguinity, and then he married Mary, Daughter to the Emperor Henry of Luxemburg, who died Anno 1324. in Childbed, and the Infant some days after, he married Jane, the Daughter of Lewis Earl of Evreux his Uncle, for which he obtained a Dispensation.

In the mean time Lewis Earl of Nevers and Rhodoring at Paris, and his Father Robert Earl of Flanders soon after, the eldest Son of Lewis bearing the same

her's Name, enjoy'd all those three Earldoms; but
 bert his Uncle pretending to be one degree nigher to
 bert his Father than *Lewis* the Grandson, applied
 self to the King for the Investiture of *Flanders*;
 ereas *Lewis* making haste to take possession, with-
 rendring that Devoir to the King, this so incensed
 n, that tho the young Prince was his own Nephew,
 summoned him before a Parliament, and detained
 m Prisoner. But the Parliament taking this weighty
 fair into their Consideration, declared in favour of
Lewis, who being set at liberty, did Homage to the
 ng, and took an Oath never to redemand the Cities
Liste, *Doway* and *Orchies*. The King at the same
 ne confirmed the Appennage given by his Father to
 bert de *Cassel*, and likewise made an Agreement be-
 een the Earl of *Holland* and *Lewis*, who desisted
 m contending with him for the Isles of *Walcheren*.

And now *Charles* took occasion to complain of *Ed-War be-*
rd II. K. of England, because he did not assist at his *tween*
 coronation; and that his Seneschal of *Bourdelois* had *France and*
 t a Garison into a Castle built by the Lord of *Mont-England.*
unt on French Ground. Wherefore, after some Ne- *1323, &c.*
 iations, he sent *Charles de Valois* his Uncle into
venne, who so straitned *Edmund* Earl of *Kent*,
Edward's Brother, in the City *De la Reouille*, that he
 ced him to capitulate, and return to *England*, to
 rsuade the King to come to an Accommodation, or

and having mustered up three hundred Person
he carried her back into *England*, where she
assisted by the Barons, that the *Spencers* were
and put to death, the King himself deposed,
Son *Edward* substituted in his stead, who marr
lipa, second Daughter to the Earl of *Haymaule*

But not to digress any farther, divers Bands
coign Adventurers, whom they called *Bastards*,
because their Leaders were so, ravaged *Guyen*
going into *Saintonge*, seized *Xantes*; but perceiv
Commanders sent thither by *K. Charles*, were res
give them battel, they retired by night, after t
first set fire to the City. *Italy* was all this wh

Ch. IV. The Reign of Charles IV.

227

ed this Life on the first of *February*, at the Age *K. Charles*
four years, when he had reigned six, and *his Death,*
enth. This Prince oppressed the People, as his *&c.*
and Brother *Philip* had done, tho he was other- *1327.*
a very liberal and gentle Nature, and loved
Council of those he thought to have the clearest
ts, and most Honesty, having always a-
Noblemen and Prelates of known Prudence.
divorced from his first Wife *Blanch*, and con-
himself to hide her Shame under a Sacred Veil.
ond Wife was *Mary*, Daughter to the Empe-
ry VII. who having hurt her self when with
died with the Fruit of her Womb; and by
el, who was the Daughter of *Lewis* Earl of
r, he had only two Daughters, of whom *Mary*
survived her Father but a few years, and the
which was Posthumous, and called *Blanch*, was
to *Philip* Duke of *Orleans*, the Son of *Philip*
his.

BOOK VI

CHAP. I.

The Reign of PHILIP VI. the Fortunate.

1328. **T**H O our K. *Edward III.* from the Regency during i with Child, yet he did not m cluded from the Kingdom, cels was brought to bed only of a C . agreed that Daughters could not inher *France*, neither did he claim it for his l sisted, that the Sons of Daughters, not becillity of that Sex, were not incap fore they ought to prefer him, being a i Grandson of *Philip the Fair*, before Pl who was his Nephew. The Peers and Great at *Paris*, immediately after the l i i solve this Grand Affair, and both rar Interests with all the Assiduity and C but the Earl of *Beaumont*, who had a gr in that Assembly, siding with *Philip*, at ment Persuasions, the Power of their re Law, but chiefly the aversion the *Fre* ger, determined them to declare in rav culine Line, and that the Crown belong with which Sentence *Edward*, at least seemed to acquiesce, and for some years by several Acts. *Philip* was crowned at i 28th, and was surnamed the Fortunate, had taken his three Cousins out of the W way for his coming to the Crown.

Philip de
Valois
carries the
Crown.

Soon after the States of *Navarre* desist send them back their lawful Queen, and t Husband, he, according to the Advice





plied with it, tho he still retained *Brie* and *Cham-*
gne, for which he gave an Equivalent elsewhere; and
leaving these Princes to go and be crowned at
Compeigne, we proceed to observe in this place, that
ce the time of *Hugh Capet*, there was no Reign so
ch stained with the Blood of War as this same.
e beginnings of it were signalized with the winning
the famous Battel of *Mount-Cassel*; for the great
ties of *Flanders* having now mutinied against their
rl, the King, to suppress them, went in person with
Army of 25000 men into that Country. The *Fle-*
ings posted 16000 men upon a Hill near *Cassel*, and
: King going to incamp in a Valley below, they
re so bold as to go and attack him there, and appoint-
three Bodies at the same time to make their way to
Tent, to that of the King of *Bohemia's*, and to the
rl of *Haynault's*, with a design to surprisè them;
the King, tho at first he was in great danger,
od bravely to it, and so repulsed the Enemy, that
those three Parties not one Man escaped: So that
Flanders being quelled by this shock of Fortune,
mitted to his Mercy, which he did not exercise so
y much upon this occasion; for he caused several
ndreds to be hanged, banished, and their Estates
nfiscated, and the year after dismantled five or six of
ir Towns, which allayed their heat for some time,
t did not extinguish it.

The Battel
of Mount
Cassel.

the Baron of *Bourbon*, this with the Title of a Dutchy, and the other of an Earldom. Then afterwards in several years *Alençon*, *Euivreux* and *Clermont* in *Beauvois*, all for Princes of his Blood, and upon such Territories as were far inferior to the six former Peerages, but as much above those of the present Age, as the Princes of the Blood are above private Gentlemen.

K. Edward by two Lords dispatched to him for that purpose, according to the Custom of *Fiefs*, he promised to go and do Homage to the *French King*, upon which the selling of his Territories in *Guyenne* and *Pontieu* were deferred, and *Edward* in due time went over to *Amiens* with a very splendid Court, where, after he had vainly insisted upon a restitution of what had been taken from his Father in *Guyenne*, he did Homage; but it was only in outward appearance, since this Republic and other matters stuck so close to him, that he ruminated weightier things in his great Mind, which appeared in due time.

1329.

In the mean while there was an Assembly of the Clergy held at *Paris*, upon a Complaint of the King's Judges made by *Peter Cugniers*, Knt. and Advocate General of the Parliament, touching the Usurpation and Attempts of the Clergy upon the Secular Jurisdiction. The business was discussed in a Council held at *Vincennes*, then again in the Assembly of Parliament where *Cugniers* spake notably to the satisfaction of the Nobility, and was answered very eloquently by *Peter Roger* Arch-bishop of *Sens*, and the Bishop of *Autun*; notwithstanding which the Clergy were to have lost ground, and at least a great part of the Jurisdiction, when the King at last, by an Edict the 28th of *December*, maintained them in their Possession, protesting it was his sincere desire to augment the Rights and Privileges of the Church, rather than to fringe or diminish them. For which reason they gave him the Surname of the *Good Catholic*.

France being now in peace, K. *Philip*, in pursuance to the Example of his Predecessors, had an inclination to undertake an Expedition into the Holy Land; therefore in his return from a Pilgrimage to *Marseilles* with a very small Retinue, in pursuance of a V

had made to St. *Lewis* Bishop of *Tholouse*, he visited the Pope at *Avignon*, and had some discourse with him, particularly about that Design; in conformity which, towards the end of the Year he summoned the Estates of the Kingdom, and laid before them the desire he had for the Holy War. By their advice he sent to the Pope for leave to raise the Tenth of all the Clergy in Christendom, and divers other things, so extraordinary, that he could get no favourable answer, and so this Affair ceased; wherefore we proceed to other Matters.

1330.

After the Death of *Mahaut* before-mentioned, the Earldom of *Artois* fell to *Jane* of *Burgundy*, Wife to *Philip* the Long, and, according to the Articles of Marriage, was given to her Daughter *Blanch*, the Wife of *John* Duke of *Burgundy*. *Robert d' Artois*, who would not yet forbear his Pretensions to that Earldom, renewed his Suit, and produced some Grants under the Great Seal, which, he said, he had found out by a miracle. He thought the King, who was his Brother-in-law, and so much obliged to him, would not search so narrowly into the matter; but *Philip*, concerned for the Interest of his Daughter, who was nearer to him than his Sister, caused those Letters Patent to be examined so nicely, that they found them to be false, and a Gentlewoman of *Artois*, that had counterfeited them, was burnt alive for it. *Robert* enraged herewith.

1331.

He had gained to his Party the Earl of *Haynaud* Emperor *Lewis's* Brother-in-law, several *G* Princes, with the Cities of *Flanders*; and to his greater Power in the *Low-Countries*, and over Princes along the *Rhine*, he at a dear rate purchased the Quality of Vicar of the Empire. King *Philip* the other hand was secure of the Earl of *Flanders*, the Duke of *Lorain*, the Earl of *Bar*, the King of *Castile*, *Scotland* and *Bohemia*, which last was his Brother-in-law, and tight to his Interest from many Obligations. Now the Designs of the *English* not yet formed, gave *Philip* no Apprehensions of Danger, and therefore he prosecuted his Design of the Holy Land with the Kings of *Bohemia*, *Nava* *Arragon*, and a great many Persons of Quality, which the Clergy, who were oppress'd with extraordinary Exactions, did not very much rejoice: At the King might have no seeming Interruption intended Expedition, he endeavoured to settle amongst his Neighbours; he brought the Duke of *Burgundy* to an Agreement with the Earl of *Flanders*, the Earl of *Savoy* with the Dauphin of *Vienno*.

Philip designs to go to the Holy Land.

1333.

A false Doctrine of the Pope.

The same year Pope *John XVII.* having preached at *Avignon*, that the Vision or Joys of departed Souls departed, and the Torments of the Damned were not perfect till the last day of Judgment, endeavouring to make this Opinion pass current the Doctrine of the Church; the Faculty of *Theology* at *Paris* stoutly opposed it: He attempted to get them to own it by two several Nuntios, where one was the General of the *Cordeliers*, and the other a famous *Jacobin* Doctor. But *Philip* not trusting the Pope to be infallible, ordered the Question to be discussed by thirty Doctors of Divinity, who confounding the *Cordelier*, a Decree was then made and sealed with all their Seals, and sent to the King exhorting him to believe those who were better in Divinity than the Canonists of the Court of Rome: that *John* now perceiving that his Opinion was not to be entertain'd, said pitifully, to salve his Error, he proposed it only by way of Disputation or Argument.

And now *Edward III.* King of *England*, having obtained to a full Majority, prompted by his own

pretensions of Right, and the Favours Formerly conferred upon him by his Victory at *Sevres*, was easily animated by *Artois* and to recover *France* by his Sword; in order to he thought it convenient to begin with Command and accused *Philip* before the Pope, for having that Crown from him during his Minority; the Pope exhorted him not to disturb a Prince taken upon him the Croisade, yet the young patient of any farther delay, sent the Bishop to defy King *Philip*, and all his Allies in and did the same, except the Duke of *Brabant*, he would do his part at a time convenient. Sir *Walter de Manny* first begun, by the War on the side of *Flanders*, surprizing the *Mortagne*, and after that of *Thin l' Evesque*, kept for bridling *Cambray*, that appeared to the *French*. On the other hand, the King of's Lieutenants begun the War in *Saintonge*, the Castle of *Paleucour*, for which the God lost his Head at *Paris*; and thus King *Philip*'s expedition to the Holy Land being interrupted, he sent his Forces from *Marseilles*; kept the *Genu* were the best Seamen in those days, in his th whom and the Assistance of the *Castilians*, Fleet to the Coast of *England*, which landed Sunday at the Town of *Southampton*, plun-

Edward
defies K.
Philip.
1336.

War begun.

strange, this *Arteville* should almost attain the Government of *Flanders*; insomuch that the *Emperor* self was necessitated to quit the Country, seeing no more than a private Brewer or Beer-Merch that Place.

1338. During all this, King *Edward*, who after Declaration of War was returned to his own Kingdom when he had disposed of matters there, lay at *Sluice* with an Army and Fleet of 400 Ships whence he went by Land to *Cologne*, to confer with the *Emperor*, who confirmed to him the Title of King of the Empire, and promised to attack France with his Forces of *Germany*, provided he might have such Sums of Money as he demanded. *Edward* returned from *Cologne*, lay for him for some time at *Cambray*; then passing the *Scheld* in order to go to *Philip Battel*, the Armies incamped near the mouth of *Iron-Fosse*: The *French* seemed to be much more in number, but *Philip* would not fight, till a *Neapolitan* Astrologer had informed him, that he never he ventured to engage the *English*, but he would lose the Day, and greatly endanger his Kingdom. The remainder of this Year being spent in Inroads upon one another; the *Flemings* and *English* semibly held the succeeding one at *Brussels*, and themselves very forward to acknowledge *Edward* King of *France*, provided he took the Title upon him, and would take care to recover *Low-way* and *Orchies* for them, which stuck much upon their Stomachs; and wherein, as in other Enterprizes, might expect all the Assistances they could give. Be this as it will, I find *Edward* had the year by a Declaration forbid any to call *Philip* by the Name of King of *France*, but only Earl of *Flanders*. *Edward* after this passing over into *England*, the *French* found a way to disengage themselves from his Interest, who revoked the Title of the *Emperor*, but all they could do was to bring the *Flemings* over, altho they were invited by the Pope. In the mean time *John Duke of Normandy*, King *Philip's* eldest Son, made a strong attack in *Haynault*; but *Edward* landing a second time at *Sluice*, overthrew the *French* Fleet that he

K. Edward takes the Title of France upon him.

1339.

1340.

Edward overcomes the French Fleet.

at Coast with a design to prevent his attempt; upon King *Philip* retired, and sent his Army to their respective Garisons, while *Edward*, elated with the Proficiency of his Arms, sent to challenge him to a single Combat, or else to fight with 100 Men on a side, both Armies in a pitched Battel, which *Philip* eluded by answering, that a Lord accepted of no Challenge from his Vassal. Some days after, *Edward* laid Siege to *Tournay*, which made a brave defence, and was reduced to great distress, when *Philip* with his Forces made divers attempts to relieve it, tho vain; however *Edward* on a sudden agreeing to a Truce, whether by the Mediation of the Widow of *Haynault*, or the desertion of the Duke of *Burgundy*, 'tis not certain, this saved it: In the mean time the *Flemings* were cut to pieces before *St. Omer*, and *Albert de Artois*, who commanded them, had much ado to escape there, and afterwards the Fury of the People, tho at last he got away much wounded, and retired into *England*.

A Truce agreed on.

Now *John II.* Duke of *Bretagne* dying, upon his return from attending King *Philip* in *Flanders*; *John Earl of Montfort* by his Liberality secured to himself the best Soldiers, as also the Cities of *Brest*, *Nantes*, *Rennes*, *Hennebond* and *Avray*; then foreseeing his competitor *Charles le Blois* would have recourse to his Uncle for Relief, he goes over into *England*.

1341.

virtue of a Procuration he had left with one of the Peers at length received *Charles* to do His who with his Friends were immediately getting selves in a posture to put the Decree in Execution the Duke of *Normandy* forced *Chantoceaux* to rendry, and besieged *Montfort* in *Nantes*, who took him Prisoner, and he was confined to the Tower of the *Louvre* in *Paris*; but his Wife *Margaret* the Earl of *Flanders's* Daughter, a wise and courageous Princess, did so bestir herself, that she upheld that sinking Party, but raised it up again by her Heroick Virtue; she retired to *Brest*, fortified the Towns, sent her young Son into *England*, and sought some assistance from King *Edward*, which could not arrive soon enough to preserve *Rennes*, *Hennebond*, whither the Princess was retired. *Charles* in the height of his Success, by what 'tis not known, granted her a year's Truce, which she went over into *England*, where she settled her Affairs so well, that she brought a plentiful Supply back, commanded by *Robert d'Artois*, who happily by the favour of a great Wind escaped the *Genuese* and *Spaniards* under *Lewis* of *Spain*, who landed near *Vannes*, which they besieged and took by Assault; but *Robert* having from hence sent the greatest part of his Army to besiege *Rennes*, the enemy attacked him very furiously in *Vannes*, and in the last Assault recovered it, *Robert* having much ado to get himself thro a Postern and get to *Hennebond*, whence he went over for *England*, and died of his Wounds at *London*, detested by all the *French*, passionately regretted by King *Edward*, who promised him to revenge his Death; and indeed he soon landed in *Bretagne*, where with a vast Resolution laid Siege to *Vannes*, *Rennes* and *Guincamp*, protesting he did not intend to violate the Truce with the *French*, but only to defend the Territory as a Minor: While on the other hand, the Duke of *Normandy* did not think he infringed it in attacking *Charles de Blois* his Cousin. At length after many Warlike Exploits on either side by Sea and Land, the Armies were so straitned and incommoded, that they concluded a Truce for two years only.

and the Pope's Legate who brought this about,
Kings to promise to send to the Pope to *Avig-*
here to determine all their disputes by a firm
ing Peace,
rdingly the Duke of *Normandy*, and the Eng- *Cruelty of*
nipotentaries met at *Avignon*, and had like to Philip.
ncluded a Peace; but an unlucky and rash Ac- 1344.
spoiled all, and overwhelmed *France* with a De-
Woes: For *Oliver de Glisson*, and ten or
Lords of the Bretons of the French Party, ha-
companyed *Charles de Blois* to a Tournament at
the King upon a suspicion that they held Intelli-
with the *English*, caused them all to be seized,
on after beheaded without any Trial, to the A-
ment of all the World, and Indignation of the
ty; whose Affections hereupon became so ali-
from him, that he was but ill served by them,
he had need of them upon great Occasions.
ing of *England* resented this to a high degree,
had like to have done the same to *Henry of Le-*
Prisoner, had it not been for the Intreaties of
rl of *Derby*, who procured him his Life and
y, upon condition he should go and tell King
that the Truce was infringed by that Murder,
hat he was now going to renew the War,
indeed was quickly done both in *Guyenne* and

feated his Army of ten thousand, took him with 8 or 10 Earls and Viscounts more, after easily took in the Cities *de la Reole*, *Angoulême* divers others. In the mean time *Montfort* by his Liberty by virtue of the preceding Truce he had besieged *Kemper* in vain, he died end of September, leaving the management of his Pretensions to his Wife and Son, who was young, but afterwards gained the surname of

1346.

Now there was great reason to put a stop to the Earl of *Derby's* Progress in *Guyenne*; therefore beginning of Jan. the Duke of *Normandy* *Tholouse* with an Army of a hundred thousand who notwithstanding their vast number, did in three Months time, than to take two or three strong Towns in *Agenois*, and the City of *Angoulême* from whence they fell down upon *Tonneins*, attacked *Aiguillon*, situate upon the Confluence of the *Olt* and the *Garonne*, which proved the most memorable Siege in all this Age. They made three assaults every day for a Week together, then came up their Artillery; but at last the Battel of *Cressy* being won, this made the Duke of *Normandy* draw off.

On the 2d of June King *Edward* with a Fleet of 200 Sail, wherein he had 4000 men at Arms, Archers and as many Foot, as well *Irish* as *Welsh*, went to Sea with his Son *Edward*, with a Design to invade *Guyenne*; but being put back twice by contrary Winds, *Gesfroy* Brother to the Earl of *Harcourt*, a powerful Lord in *Normandy*, who was fled to England, persuaded him by many Arguments to fall into the rich and plentiful Country of *Normandy*. King *Edward* hereupon landing at *la Hogue*, a Place of late very famous for the defeat of the French Fleet, resolved to cross *France* to go and join the French. His Army in the day time marched in three Columns, which joined always in the Night. *Gesfroy* and the Office of Field-Mareschal, the Cities of *Bayonne*, *Carentan*, *St. Lo* and *Harsfleur* became a prey to him; to which if we add his encountering the French Constable of *France*, and the Count of *Tancarville* whom the King had sent to *Caen*, it increased his Victory and Fame, by taking them Prisoners with the de

1000 men: Thence he continued his march by the
 propricks of *Lisieux* and *Euveux*, ravaged all a-
 long the *Seine* as far as *Paris*, but approached not near
 it, and went and incamped at *Poissy*, from whence
 sent *Philip* a Challenge to fight him under the Walls
 of the *Louvre*; but having staid there five days, he pas-
 sed into *Beauvaisis*, with a design to retire into his
 country of *Pontieu*, and in his march made a terrible
 rock with Fire and Sword. *Philip* hereupon infla-
 med with Revenge, marches in all hast to fight him,
 where he could pass the *Seine*; but *Edward* being
 easily shewn by a Prisoner the Ford of *Blanque-
 ne* below *Albeville*, he passed there at low Water
 with a force of 12000 men under *du Fay* a *Norman*
 knight, and put them to the rout, and the same Evening
 returned and incamped at *Cressy*; while *Philip* next day
 with no less than 100000 men took up his Head-Quar-
 ters at *Albeville*, and the day following which was the
 2^d of *August*, he marched out and gave the *English*
 Battel: Their hasty march of three long Leagues had
 tired the *French*, while the *English* were both fresh
 and desperate: The *Genueſe* commanded by *d'Orta-
 do Grimaldi* were the best of *Philip's* Infantry, but
 their Cross-bows being made useles by a Deluge of
 Arrows that fell just at the beginning of the Battel, and
 giving way before a shower of *English* Arrows;

*Battel of
 Cressy.
 1346.*

1347.

Calais besieged and taken by the English.

Aiguillon, the Earl of *Derby* remained Ma Field, recovered all that part of *Guyenne* beyond the *Dordogne*, and having passed that vaged and burnt *Saintonge* and *Poitou*, took *Angely* and kept it, sacked the great City and quitted it, after he had refreshed him for twelve days together. But to return hence, the *Flemings* having lost their Earl tel of *Cressy*, they sent Deputies to *Philip* to his Son their natural Prince, who made a Peace with the *English* by the consent of *K* wherein it was stipulated, he should agree th *mings* should give him Assistance, but for was not to intermeddle with the Affairs *Kings*. Now the *Flemings* being at King *Ed* votion, they made great Inroads into *Artois* the other hand young *John de Montfort's* the better in *Bretagne* by the Assistance of th for *Charles le Blois* going to besiege *la Roch* *Montfort* on the 20th of *June* bravely fought ted him, and not only so, but took him a Sons *John* and *Guy*, with most of the Lo Party, Prisoners.

But now to return to the famous Siege it was in vain that King *Philip* advanced *Wissant* and that City with an Army of 15 to relieve it; for *Edward* had so fortified his all sides with good Intrenchments, that he no way to attack him; so that the Besieged

en to the greatest extremity of Famine, were forced to surrender on the last day of *August*, after they had held out a Years Siege saving 8 days. The Heroick Generosity of *Eustace du St. Pierre* a Citizen, shall never be forgotten; for King *Edward* much enraged at their long Resistance, would not agree to the Articles, but that they must give up six of their principal Burghers, for him to do what he pleased with them; and the Council being unresolved upon the matter, *Eustace* freely offered to be one, and the number being soon compleated by his Example, they went out in their Shirts, with Ropes about their Necks, to deliver the Keys to King *Edward*, who with much difficulty was perswaded by his Queen to save their Lives; however he turned out all the Citizens, even to the Ecclesiasticks, and repeople it with Natural born *English*.

A Truce being concluded hereupon between the Kings, the Lord of *Montmorancy de Chary*, who commanded the *French* Forces in *Artois* and *Picardy*, thought however it might not be amiss to recover *Amiens* in the *Interim*; and therefore having held some Intelligence with *Aimery de Pavia* a *Lombard* Captain that City, he listned to them only with a Design to surprize them; and having given notice of it to King *Edward*, who was desirous to be concerned in the

the want of money put the King up
Officers of the Treasury, and particularly
Des Effards was condemned to pay 10
Florins, which at last was moderated to
but then to stop Peoples Mouths, who
Complaints of the Violences offered them,
ment of the Treasury was committed to
as many Abbots, and four Knights, and all
Usurers called *Lombards* expelled the
the principal Lottery-Money they lent
and confiscated to the King's use, worth
about 400000 Livres, but their Use-Mo
two Millions was remitted to the Owners.

This Year Queen *Fane* I daughter to *K*

I. The Reign of Philip VI.

243

determined in 1343. to make a Donation to Philip of his Dominions of *Dauphine*, and adjacencies, on condition that all their Privileges be entirely preserved, that his Country should be incorporated in the Crown of *France*, and the King's eldest Son should enjoy it, and bear the Arms of *Dauphine*; for which the King gave forty thousand Crowns in Gold, and ten Florins Rent-charge to be levied on that

Not content herewith, *Hubert* confirms the same this Year, and then retired into a Convent of *Carthusians*, where he took on him their Habit; the

1349.

by sacred Orders bound him to the Church, he might retract what he had done, and he was at length honoured with the Title of Bishop of *Liège*.

Next Year *Philip* had likewise either by

1350.

or the Engagement of *James* of *Aragon* King of *Castile*, the Counties of *Roussillon*, and *Cerdagne* were purchased, and bought of the same Prince the County of *Montpellier* in *Languedoc*, which the House of *France* held by way of under-Fief of the Crown, for the Sum of 120000 Crowns of Gold. The Peace was also now prolonged in *June*, between *England* and *France*, for three Years

Months after *Philip* fell sick at *Nogent le Roy*,



Negotiations than in Battel, har
 Subjects, suspicious, vindictive, and one
 himself to be too far transported by t
 Passion. By his first Wife *Jane* he
viz. *John* that succeeded him, and
Orleans, who died without Issue; 1
 named *Mary*, who was married to *J*
burg, Son to *John* III. Duke of *Br*.
Blanch, he had a posthumous Daughter na
 died at *Beziers* in 1373. as they were co
 to *Barcelona*, to be married to *John* D or
 eldest Son to *Peter* IV. King of *Ari*. :]
 her Mother survived her Husband ;
 which she spent in perpetual Widowhood.

C H A P. II.

The Reign of JOHN I.

1350.

KING *John* with his Wife *Jane* of
 been crowned at *Rheims*, *September* 20.
 his publick Entry into *Paris* on the 17
 following, sate in the Court of Justice,
 two eldest Sons, with some other Princes
 and made a shew of reforming the whole
 This Prince being indeed of mature Age,
 approved Valour, and besides having his Fat
 before his Face, and four Sons that
 to draw their Swords, it might prove
 Regulation of things, and a flourish ;
 he on the contrary being subject to tne
 with his Father, as being too violent ;
 to take Revenge, having but little Princ
 a slight regard to the miseries of his di
 he fell into greater misfortunes, and such
 by him to his dying Day. But to be m :
 the Blood wherewith this Prince ushered
 was a Prefage, if not the Cause of his
 and much more likely than the proc
 that appeared this Year ; for 1

*Prefages
 of an ill
 Reign.*

stable of *France*, and a Prisoner of War to the
lish ever since the Battel of *Caen*, having made
 rs Voyages into *France*, to procure his own and
 nds Liberty, the King was perswaded by some
 ons, whether true or false, that under those Pre-
 es he was hatching some Designs in favour of the
lish, in pursuance of which the poor Gentleman
 seized by the Provost of *Paris*, and privately be- *The Consta-*
 ed without any form of Law, in the presence of *ble behead-*
 Duke of *Bourbon*, and seven or eight Lords more, *ed,*
 re whom it was given out he had confessed his
 re; his Office was conferred upon *Charles de la*
 e the King's Favourite, his Earldom of *Eu* on
d' Artois Robert's Son, of whom so often mention
 een made, and that of *Guisnes* on *Jane* his own
 Daughter, who was first married to the Duke of
us, and afterwards to the Earl of *Estampes*, of
 ranch of *Euureux*, from whom sprung the Earls
 u Princes of the Blood.

the same time *John*, not to seem inferior to the
 b upon their Institution of the Noble Order of
 urther, instituted, or, as some will have it, revived
 rder of the Star, in a famous Assembly held in
 lace at *St. Ouy* near *Paris*, and ordained that
 as those Knights did formerly wear the Star
 their Helmets, or hung it about their Necks,
 ould now have it imbroidered on their Clothes:

tho they had only two Women at the Head of
were perpetually in Action, and fought despe
and the *Bretons* valued themselves much, that they
in a pitched Combat between thirty of thei
Men, under the Command of the Lord *De B*
noir, against as many *English* under *Richard*
get the Victory, and that afterwards *Du* C
should singly engage *Brembo* and kill him.

1351. This Year *Charles de Blois*, who had been a
while Prisoner in *England*, was released upon b
som, for the securing of whose Payment he left
his Sons for Hostages, and he forbore to take u
till the Debt was discharged. In the mean ti
Lords who had been taken Prisoners in their
upon *Calais*, having been discharged, they car
the War with the Mareschal *De Beaujeu* at St-
and having on a time surpris'd the *Lomb*
betrayed them, they caused him to be quarter

I find very little of any thing that is materia
1352. Year; but in the next, tho *Charles* King of I
married *Jane* one of the King's Daughters,
ceased not from pursuing his Pretensions to the
of *Brie* and *Champagne*, as also *Angoulesme*: T
stable *Charles d'Espagne*, on whom the King
ferred that Office, would have dissuaded him
and give any reasonable satisfaction; but the o
sisting discontented, retired to his County of I
where understanding the Constable was in h
of *Aigle*, he as basely as boldly with 100 Ho
him there on the 8th of *January*, scaled the

1354. and stabbed him in his Head; after which
the Insolence to own the Fact, to justify him
K. Charles Letters to King *John* and his Council, and
of Navarre good Cities of *France*, to raise Forces, to fo
his Barba- Towns, and solicite all the neighbouring F
rity. enter into a League against *France*. Notwith
all this, the King dissembled and flattered
that he might draw him to *Paris*, but he refused
unless there was an Equivalent made him
and *Champagne*, and he could hold the
of *Eureux* independent of all other ex
King, and had a full and free Absolution for t
murder'd the Constable, besides a very cor

of Money, and the King's second Son for Hostage. Upon these Securities he appeared in the Parliament of Paris on the 3^d of *March*, where having craved King John's Pardon in a studied Speech, intermixed with Excuses and Complaints, the Constable, only for form sake, had Orders to seize him; but he was presently discharged upon the request of the two Queens Dowager of *Charles* the Fair, and *Philip de Valois*. The Pope's Legate made him a grave Remonstrance, and at last the King declared him absolved of all the crimes charged upon him; tho' for all this he continu'd still uneasy and discontented, and they had much ado to pacify him. Neither were they without trouble from *Gaston* Count of *Foix*, who was married to the King of *Navarre*'s Sister, and whom they sent Prisoner to the Chastelet at *Paris*, because he refused to hold his hands off *K. John*, they being perhaps those he held of the *English*; but he soon obtained his liberty, upon condition he should go into *Guyenne*, and there command the *French* Army against the Prince of *Wales*.

For you must know that the Truce was no sooner at end, but that young Prince, invested in the Dutchy of *Guyenne* by his Father, made Incursions into the *French* Territories as far as *Beziers* and *Narbonne*, without any opposition from the *French* Generals, the Earl of *Foix*, *Jean de Bourbon* Constable, and *John de Clermont*, who were superior in Force to the Prince, but too much

1355.

eat Tax-
laid.
1356.

ing of a Fund for this purpose, they were fain to that Tax upon Salt which had been put down besides laid eight Deniers *per* Pound upon all Meadize, and a certain yearly Tax upon every Man come, whether the same arose from Lands, Beor Offices; nay the same was extended to Salaries Servants Wages. Now these excessive Subsidies Seditions in many Places, especially at *Arras*, the Marechal d' *Endregben* going in amongst under a notion of pacifying the Tumult, seized a hundred of the Ring-leaders, of whom twent their Heads cut off.

ing of
avarre
prisoned.

In the mean time the King of *Navarre* crea the Disturbance he could in the Kingdom, tho the Dauphin cunningly allured him to the *Ca Roan*, together with the Earl of *Harcourt*, Brothers *John* and *William*, the Lords of *Cleres ville*, *Maubue*, *des Preaux*, and some others; at day while the Dauphin was entertaining of th at dinner, K. *John* came in at a Postern well seized them, and putting *Harcourt*, *Graville*, *M and Doublet*, into two Carts, he carried them on the open Fields, and there without any Form o caused them to be beheaded. That done, he se King of *Navarre* under a strong Guard to the *Gailliard d' Andelis*, from whence having been ed into divers Prisons, and often menaced with he was conducted to the Castle of *Arloux* in the try of *Cambray*.

Now this violent, and I may justly say, tyr Procedure of K. *John* was attended with very Consequences; for *Philip* the King of *Navarre's* B and *Gefroy* Brother to the Earl of *Harcourt*, wh a good many Places in *Normandy*, invited the in to revenge their Quarrel; so that the Earl o and the Duke of *Lancaster*, with 4000 men be War in that Country, whither K. *John* g person, he drove them back as far as l' *Aigle*, a ing dispersed their Troops in the Woods, laid *Bretevil*, a small Place, that yet defended it i the space of seven weeks. Indeed the smallest in these unhappy Times fortified themselves so put a stop to the greatest Armies; and they took

and even their Villages with Works or Walls
 at the plundering Soldiers; and this only served
 the same time to prolong the War, and ruin
 the People, by being Places of retreat to Robbers and
 Throats.

to pass over these things, we now come to the
 famous Battel of *Poitiers*; for you are to under-
 stand that while K. *John* was drawing all his Forces
 together at *Chartres*, he was informed, that *Edward*
 Black Prince with 12000 men had ravaged *Quer-*
vergne, *Limosin* and *Berry*, and was marching to
 the same in *Anjou*, *Tourain*, and *Poitou*. He re-
 solved to cut off his Retreat, and for that end marched
 his Army along the *Loire*; upon which the Prince
 on the way to *Tours*, thought it best to retire by
 the river; but this he could not do so speedily, before the

Army overtook him within two Leagues of *Poi-*
itiers where he thought fit to intrench himself among
 thick Hedges, for his better Se-

Here the Cardinal of *Perigord*, the Pope's
 Legate, went from one Army to another to prevent
 the Battle; and Prince *Edward* now in the ne-
 cessity of his Affairs, offered to make satisfaction for all
 damages he had done in his march from *Bordeaux*,
 to give up all his Prisoners, and not to bear Arms, ei-
 ther himself or any of his Subjects, for seven years a-
 gainst *France*. But the King being now strangely elated

K. John
taken pri-
soner.

the main Body of the *English*, who came out Trenches, and charged them in that Conflict the four Sons K. *John* had in this Battel, three were a little too soon carried by their Gouern of the Fight, together with 800 Lances; and a plausible pretence for other Cowards to follow. There was only *Philip*, the youngest of the four, obstinately resolved to run his Father's fortune fought near his Person. The King indeed at part of a valiant Prince, and many that were with him did the like; but not being seconded by his daftardly Troops, and beginning now to sink under the weight of the *English* Fury and Prowess, he Son *Philip* yielded themselves into the hands of *de Morebeque*, a Gentleman of *Artois*, in the hands of the *English*, and whom K. *John* for some other had banished out of his Dominions. Thus will not own they lost above 6000 men in this day, but of them there were eight hundred Gentlemen particularly the Duke of *Bourbon*, the Duke of *Constable*, the *Mareschal de Nesle*, and above more of good Quality fell this day. On the other hand, *Edward*, a young Prince as Courteous as he was Heroick and Valiant, treated with the greatest Respect, as if he had been his Father, waited on him at Table the same day and endeavoured to allay the sense of his Misfortune by the most obliging Behaviour and Expressions could. But to make sure work of it, and fear day this Royal Captive might be snatched out of their hands, and withal observing his Soldiers were full of Plunder, that they seemed at present uncapable of any Service, he directed his March for *Bourbon* carrying K. *John* and his Son, and a prodigious number of Prisoners along with him.


An Assem-
bly of the
States.

The Kingdom upon this sad disaster being without a Head, all things were in utmost confusion. *Charles* the Dauphin at first took upon himself the authority of Lieutenant, and believing it was the duty of the Estates to provide for the Government of the Kingdom, and the Redemption of the King, called them together at *Paris*, and proposed the said unto them; but instead of Assistance, he met

g but Complaints and sharp Remonstrances of Male-administrations: They would debate none in his Commissioner's Presence, insisted that the Mellor and others might be turned out, that the of *Navarre* should be set at liberty, and that if should be influenced by a Council they should for him: Upon which Conditions they proposed to maintain 30000 men, yet so as that they should receive their Pay from their own hands. In mean time they erected a Council for the Government of the Kingdom, whereof the Bishop of was President, and appointed Commissioners of Treasury: But the Dauphin being not able to get them to any thing else, he made use of some stratagems to break up the Assembly, and upon dissimulations obliged the Deputies of the several Cities to return home.

Things being thus confused, every one thought it a proper time to recover his Right: The Nobility began to make Alliances with the Cities; but the Dauphin found a way to prevent it. The Cities on the other hand grew jealous of the Gentry; so that to recover what they had from being plundered by the Soldiers, they began to fortify themselves, especially at Paris, to which City, besides Repairs, they added new Works; of which enough.

As to some other Affairs, and how the Cardinal



he had been in his own Court ; but
ning of *April* they carried him into
there was so much Honour and Respect
if he had only passed thither upon a
ness to King *Edward* : They made him a
try into *London*, mounted upon a w
Ensign of Sovereignty, and the Prince
his Side, on a small Nag (tho, let the *F*
say what they will, there was
Triumph) the *Savoy* was assigned n
where he was visited by the King, C
and had all manner of Liberty allowed
time the Pope's Mediation prevailed so

save the Duke's Oath, which was that he
 r the Town with nine more of his Compa-
 at his Colours for some Hours should be fix-
 e Gates; and to conclude this Treaty, they
 uce between the Parties that was to last till
 360.

mean time the disbanded Soldiers committed
 of Robberies, and extremely afflicted the
 while the Persons who were impowered by
 to administer the Affairs of the Treasury,
 fcovered their Design was not so much to dis-
 aves, as to have a share in the Profit them-
 somuch that their Corruption did very much
 heir choice, and consequently the Authority of
 : The Dauphin, to whom this was an advan-
 ing also strengthened by the arrival of the
Foix and *Armagnac* with a great many of the
 at length shook off their Tutelage, and ob-
 Bishop of *Laon* to retire to his See. But im-
 upon this, the King of *Navarre* having
 t Liberty by some of his own People, who
 Walls of the Castle wherein he was detain-
 returns and assumes a greater Power than be-
 ie Dauphin was very apprehensive of the Ma-
 f that Prince; however he did, at the Im-
 of the Council and the Queen Dowager,
 a safe Conduct to go and reside at the Abby

was next day received into the City, and Dauphin and he had an Interview in an indifferēt place where the Bishop of *Laon* President of the Court, the Provost of Merchants, and even the University pressed the Dauphin so home to give that Satisfaction, that he was feign to agree to what he desired, however when he would have gone into his own Country with a design to take possession of them, King and his Governours therein refused him or his Commissions Admission.

1358. Hereupon the King of *Navarre* began a new War, and indeed had the *English* given him any considerable Assistance, he would have overwhelmed the Kingdom: But having dropt an Expressive Speech to the People, *that he had more Right to the Crown of France than those that contended for it*, they withheld their hands, and enabled him to protract the War to a great length, that so easily weakening one another, both of them at last were forced to submit to the *English* Yoke that was imposed upon them.

Now the Zeal of the Provost of the Merchants for the publick Liberty, meeting with too great Opposition, degenerated into a pernicious Faction; the mark of distinction was a kind of Particoloured Flag, consisting of red and blew, which he bestowed upon the *Parisians* for a new-years Gift, who being divided and wavering in their Affections, sometimes supported the Dauphin, then turned about to the King, and many times they became indifferēt either. But now the Estates being held at *Paris* the third time, the Dauphin thinking to master the City, drew some Forces about the City; the King of *Navarre* had also some Troops that kept the Field. The King incommoded the City very much, and both sides threw the Fault upon one another; whereupon *cel* a Money-changer belonging to the Treasury, and a sacred *Baillet* Treasurer of *France*; but being driven out by force from *St. James's* Church, whither he retired for Sanctuary, and ordered to be hanged by the Bishop of *Paris* resenting the Outrage supposed done to the Church, excommunicated those that had led out *Marcel*, who getting loose, and three the

Trad

esmen in their particoloured Hoods, he entred
Dauphin's Palace, and caused the three Persons
had taken him out of the Church, who were the
schal de Clermont, the Seneschal of Champagne,
the Provost of Paris, to be murdered in his pre-
: Not content herewith, he compelled him to own
act in an Assembly of the States held at the Au-
is, and in Parliament; to suffer the Navarrois to
n to the City, and to give him Lands and large
saction for the damages he had sustained; not-
standing the other Cities refused to concur with
in any thing otherwise than for the King's Ser-

When the King of Navarre had tarried some time
Paris, and thought he had sufficiently secured him-
he was no sooner gone out of the City for the
ement of some of his Affairs, but that the Dauphin Dauphin
se no time, caused himself to be declared Regent made Re-
the Parliament; after which all Acts passed under gent.
Name without any mention made of the Kings,
the little Seal du Chastelet, which they made use
his absence, was laid aside, and they had a Great
on purpose made for the Regency. The Dauphin
would be no longer at the Mercy of the Parisians,
the General States, but thought it better to hold
Particular ones: Those of Champagne at Vertus,

English
massacred
by the Pa-
risians.

it, unless they would deliver up twelve of the
tineers, they united again as firmly as ever,
close to the King of *Navarre*. On the
the Dauphin's Friends, having got some
mong the *Parisians*, and insinuating that the
Navarre had introduced some *English* among
they barbarously massacred a great many
Strangers; but *Marcel* to save the rest clap
Prison, and then let them make their Escape
withdrew to St. *Dennis*, from whence they
venged the Death of their Companions, upon
Parisians they could light on: Hereupon
fully against the Inclination of the King of

ile ; but as the Dauphin's Friends were extremely
ant, one *John Maillard* and *Pepin des Essards*,
were the principal of them, contrived their Bu-
s so well, that having got their Friends together,
in the nick as *Marcel* was to put his Design in ex-
tion, they slew both him and his Followers before *Marcel*
y could get the Gates open : This done, they drag- *killed.*
his Body thro the Streets, and his Death was at-
ded with the Massacre, Execution and Banishment
many of his Friends ; after which the Face of Af-
s was wholly changed, the Particoloured Hoods
re burnt, and on the 24th of *August* the Dauphin
urned to *Paris*.

But the King, greatly enraged for the Death of his
iends, protested he would never be at Peace with
Princes of the House of *Valois*, neither did he any
ger own them for Sovereigns ; and therefore having
wn all his Forcers together, he sent to defy the
uphin, blocked up *Paris* both by Water and Land,
called *De Buch* and *Robert Knolles* an *English* Com-
der to his Assistance : This *Knolles*, notwithstand-
the Truce, made great depredations every where ;
now having been forced away from before *Troyes*
he Count *de Vaudemont*, he went and joined the
g of *Navarre*, in hopes to plunder *Paris*, about
h time they burnt the City of *Montmorency*. The

**English
have a
great Ar-
my in
France.**

this Answer, raised a formidable Army, suppo-
near 100000 men, and getting together a
1100 Sail, he landed at *Calais* with his foot
who began to march into the Field, altho th
was far spent; but they could do no extra
Feats, being not able to take either *St. Omer*,
or *Rheims*, where 'tis supposed *Edward* tho
have been crowned King of *France*; neith
his Arms prevail against *Chaalons*: *Burgund*
redeemed it self from being plundered for
Florins, and some Provisions for the Army
Niverrois, but *Brie* and *Gastinois* were ravaged
ever King *Edward* about the latter end of *L*.

ble Circumstances, and therefore the Pope's Letter, and the Dauphin's Commissioners continually followed the King's Camp, to solicit a Peace, tho from time to time without any manifest Effect; but one day being incamped in the Country of *Chartres*, there arose such a Storm of Hail accompanied with Thunder and Lightning, that it hurt a great many Men, and slew above a thousand Horses. *Edward*, as the Historians say, looking upon this as a Warning from Heaven, and turning himself towards *St. Mary Chartres*, that might be seen at five or six Leagues Distance, he made a Promise to conclude a Peace, to which the Duke of *Lancaster* and divers other Lords earnestly pressed him, because of the ill State of his Army: Accordingly the Commissioners meeting on the first of *May* at *Bretigny* near *Chartres*, and treating in the Name of the two Kings eldest Sons, they concluded the Peace in eight days time; whereby the King of *England*, besides what he had already in possession, had all *Poitou*, *Santonge*, *Rochel*, with the Country of *Audins*, *Angoumois*, *Perigord*, *Limosin*, *Cercuy*, *Agemois*, and *la Bigorn*, given him in full Sovereignty; besides *Calais*, the Countries of *Oye*, *Guise*, and *Pontieu*, and three Millions in Gold for King John's Ransom, payable at three several Terms; in pursuance to which, he was to be brought to *Calais*,

*Peace betw
tween
France &
England.*

God at *St. Dennis*, where he received the King of *Navarre* into favour ; and on the 13th of *December* he made his publick Entry into *Paris*, whereat the Citizens expressed their Joy by a Present of Plate, of a thousand Marks value. But for all this the extreme necessity he was in for Money to pay his Ranks made him stoop to a weakness, supposed to be more dishonourable to his House, than even the Treaty of *Britigny* it self, which was the selling his Daughter to *John* Viscount of *Milan* for 600000 Gold Crowns in Marriage with his Son *Galeas*. And here by the way we are to take notice, that tho the *French* Crown descended in Sovereignty to the Eldest only, yet the younger Children had Lands assigned them, which were entirely theirs, and descended to the Daughters as well as to the Sons ; wherefore the King now kept his Kingdom more entire, and prevent future dismembring, inseparably united to the Crown the Dutchies of *Normandy* and *Burgundy*, with the Earldoms of *Tholouse* and *Champagne*.

Re-Unions
made.

1361.


Now *Philip* the young Duke of *Burgundy* dying about this time without Issue, that Branch became extinguished ; *Artois*, the *French* Comte, *Boulogne* and *Auvergne*, went to some of his Kindred by the Female side : But the King of *Navarre* laying claim to the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, as being the Son of *Jane* Daughter of Queen *Margaret*, the Wife of King *Lewis* the first, and eldest Daughter of Duke *Robert*, the Father of *Endes* IV. Duke of *Burgundy* ; King *John* seized it, under colour of his being akin one Degree nearer as being the Son of the second Daughter of Duke *Robert*, whereas the King of *Navarre* was but Grandson to the eldest.

But to leave it in dispute who was in the right, come now to remark, that the Soldiers of both Parties upon the Peace did not evacuate the Places with much Trouble, but continued to commit a great many Depredations and Robberies, as during the War ; *Gascons* and *Bretons* overrun *Anjou*, *Poitou* and *Tourain* ; and those Troops called *Tard Venu*, Late Comers, having done the same by *Champagne*, *Burgundy*, *Masconnis* and *Lyonnois*, they fought and defeated the Count *De la Marche* near *Lyon* :

Evil seldom comes alone, for those that raised the
taxes and Gabels tormented the poor People no less
than these Robbers; and the Burden and Oppression
so heavy, that a vast many Families left the King-
dom, to seek for more quiet and easy Habitations;
however it might fare with these, there was no
remedy to be found against the Pestilence, which for
8 Years growing worse and worse upon the various
turns of it, seized on all sorts of People both in
City and Country, so that there fell by it this Year
more than nine Cardinals and seventy Prelates in the
King's Court, and above Thirty Thousand in *Paris*.
About the same time the *Jews* were recalled into the
Kingdom.

*The Mis-
eries of
France.
1362.*

In the mean time *John* for the better regulating his
Government not only forbade his Subjects from making
War upon one another for their own particular Quar-
rels, but also prohibited all Duels and Challenges; yet
withstanding all this, he durst not take notice of
a cruel War that was renewed between the Earls of
Guend and *Armagnac*, for fear it might offend the King
of *England*, to whom they were Vassals for the Lands
contested between them. We should have taken
notice before that the difference about the Succession
of *Gascon* of *Bearn* had given birth to this bloody
War; that *Gascon* who died in 1289. had by *Mate-
rass* of *Bearn* four Daughters. *Constance* the



finding he could not bring the Parties to an amicable Composition, he made a Decree for settling and moderating their Pretensions, which *Margaret* of *Foix* would not obey; that the Death of *John* the youngest of the four, occasioned new Differences, that *Philip* King of *Navarre* endeavoured to avenge himself between them, but nothing could stifle their irreconcilable Animosities, or prevent them, as they did from seeking all opportunities to destroy each other, and so we leave them.

Whilst they were endeavouring, tho' with different Success, to have the Garisons evacuated, *John* would go and visit Pope *Innocent* at *Avignon*, and tho' he heard by the way of his Death, he went forward, and assisted at the Coronation of his Son *Urban* V. who at the same time preaching up a new Croisade, the King agreed to be Generalissimo of the Expedition, and the Kings of *Cyprus* and *Armenia* took upon them there the Badg of the Cross for purpose; but the Affairs of the Kingdom, notwithstanding such an Enterprize, the same were far from being put in execution, that it was not assented to or countenanced. The King at his Death took possession of the Dutchy of *Burgundy*; but when he arrived there, the People made him so positively understand that they could not live without a Prince, that he vacated the Re-union of the Dutchy to the Crown, and conferred it on *Philip* his youngest Son, to hold it for him and his Heirs lawfully begotten. Neither was this quite spun out, before the King taking ship at *Norman*, sailed over for *England*. The occasion of his Voyage not proceeding from his Love to his Country, with whom he had been familiar, when there, but upon notice that the Duke of *Anjou* his second and one of his Hostages, had made his Escape, the generous Prince would repair that Defect, as he had no hand in it; he intended also to visit *King Edward* if possible, to undertake an Expedition to the Holy Land.

Charles the Dauphin, to whom his Father had given the Regency on this occasion, presently found himself attacked by his Cousin the King of *Navarre*

tensions he had to the Dutchy of *Burgundy*; before having rashly sent him a Defiance before an Army ready to back it, he lost the Cities *tes* and *Moulau*, which were taken by *Gues-lose* Valour was already raised much above the Standard. In the mean time King *John* after conferences with King *Edward*, wherein he hoped accomplished all his Affairs, was about the of *March* surprised with a Distemper that end to his Days, on the 8th of *April* in the after he had lived 52 Years, and of them 13 and 8 Months; his Son the Duke of *Berry*, *Philip* of *Orleans*, and *Lewis* II. of *Bourbon*, the Earl of *Eu*, all Princes of the Blood, heard Groans, and closed his Eyes. The King of made him a most magnificent Funeral, but the Grandure of the Deceased, and his own try; his Corps was afterwards carried into and deposited at *St. Dennis*. He was esteem-aye and liberal a Prince as any of his time; same Root that produced these Virtues, did bring forth Pride and Scorn to follow any truel than his own, attended with Prodigality, sion, and that Violence which exposed his ns to many Devastations, and his own Person Mercy of his Enemies: But we must not debar

*K. John's
Death and
Character.*



own Names, and the Duke of *Anjou* represe
Duke of *Guyenne*. Indeed Historians ha
reason to say of this Prince, that never any
ed so little, and yet did so many Exploits in W
and from the very beginning he shewed th
were not invincible. Now the King of *Nar*
Montfort not having been comprehended in th
of *Bretigny*, their People continued the W
the *English* and *French* sided with them; the
and all that sided with them being commande
Capral de Buchs, who was beaten at *Cocherel*
clin from an advantageous Post, and taken
The King thinking by kindness to gain him

a cruel War in the Countries on this side, Count of *Montbeliard* fell upon *Burgundy*, of the House of *Navarre*, who laid claim to the Duchy; but *Philip* of *France*, upon whom his Father *John* had bestowed it, made not only a resistance, but expelled the Earl out of *Burgundy* and carried the War into *Montbeliard*, then he came to *la Charite*; and *Lewis d'Eucreux* not being strong enough to raise it, he retreated to *la Charite*, which made the Besieged capitulate to the Duke; and the Duke by the King's Orders was readily agree to Terms, that so he might be able to assist his Cousin *Charles* of *Blois*, who was still in Contest with *Montfort* for the Duchy of *Burgundy*: At last came on the Battel of *Auvray*, The Battel was fought, for *Montfort* with the Assistance of *John* of *Auvray*, under the Command of Sir *John Chandois*, laid Siege to that place, *Charles* supported by his Brother undertook to relieve it; and the Armies fought a general Battel on the 29th of *September*, which was very obstinate and bloody to an extreme; but at length *Charles* lost the Day, the Duke and his Life, for it seems the Lords of *Burgundy* agreed amongst themselves, that in order to put an end to that tedious Quarrel, they would certainly kill him that was vanquished. The Duke of *Charles* who died lamented even of his

upon condition he should have the Lordship
pelier in *Languedoc*, which was given him.

Peasants
troublesom.

All this while *France* was more or less
with the revolted Peasants of the *Jaquerie*,
Year being re-inforced with some Companies
ditti, as I may call them, marched even to
but they were quickly hunted out from thence
most of them destroyed by the Emperor
and other *German* Princes; however they were
rated by the *English*, that they might not
help upon occasion, and there were not Forces
besides totally to suppress them; but *Guise*
found out a way to carry them all into *Spain*

joined an Army of King *Charles*, under the Command of the Count *De la Marche*, or rather *Guesclin* to support him; these Troops consisted of great numbers of noble Volunteers, even out of those Countries under the Obedience of the *English*; and the Pope fearing they might approach near *Avignon*, sent them 200000 Livres with Indulgencies, but the King of *Aragon* gave them Passage, and the Dutchy *Borgia* to *Guesclin*, and before they entered *Castile* recovered all those Places *Peter* had taken from him, and delivered them up fairly to him. Now upon the Arrival of *Henry* all the Nobility of *Castile*, except one single Knight, abandoned the Tyrant, and all of them cried out, *Long live King Henry*, and opened their Gates to him; so that in short he was crowned King at *Burgos*, about the end of *March* of that Year; that done, and his Friends rewarded, he was, as supposing all secure, discharged most of his Forces for the easement of the Subjects.

1366.

In the mean time the Tyrant having made his escape, at length got by Sea to *Bayonne*, to implore the Assistance of the Prince of *Wales*, who beginning to grow jealous of the growing Fame of *Guesclin*, promised to restore him, and personally to engage in that Service. The King of *Aragon* knowing the Passes to be well guarded, the Prince had no other way to

1367.

Charles's
designs a-
gainst the
English

rejected, and particularly the Lords, who
the Tenants to make Complaint to them, w
carried to the Prince, and making some Rem
thereupon, he rejected them in a very offer
ner; upon which they had recourse to the
France, who entertained them for five or six
in the same humour, expecting a proper Co
to declare himself. In the mean time he w
all things in order to this Purpose, and by h
making sure of the Gascon Lords and German
he by the like Bait and Management of
drew the Soldiery into his Service, and the
ness of the States to give him a Subsidy did n
contribute to his Designs. Now when Ch

ndlord. At the same time *Charles* amused
rd with some Complaints which he sent him,
would have brought things to a Negotiation:
returned him Words for Words, not thinking
it was so near, or that he durst attempt any
while the Duke of *Berry* and other Hostages
England; he took himself to be absolute Sovereign
Guyenne, by the Treaty of *Arras* (and so un-
lly he was, whatever pretences the *French* might
the contrary) who alledged he had not dis-
his Soldiers, and had besides committed divers
ties, and therefore had vacated the Treaty,
must remain still a Vassal to the *French* Crown.
this pretence it was that he sent to declare War
him; after which having assembled his Parlia-
they made a Decree, whereby for Rebellion,
apt and Disobedience, they declared all the
the King of *England* held in *France* forfeited
uslified. Proceedings not unlike these we have
one by a Successor of this *Charles* in our own
they being both of them Princes of not very
nt Tempers, since they loved War and Con-
and laid deep designs for them, tho they
cared to hazard their Persons much in the exe-

*Charles
declares
War a-
gainst
England.*

if King *Edward* was much astonished to find

French
prevail.

vigny, and then to make those that were al-
ject to him, the more willing to suffer the
ons, and other Inconveniencies of the W
Arch-Bishop of *Tholouse* also by his Persuasio
trigues, recovered above fifty Cities or Cast
enne, and amongst others that of *Cahors*,
of *England* would have practised some such M
his part also, and sent a General Pardon t
cons, with an Oath he would raise no
Taxes; but all this could not reclaim their
and preingaged Minds to return to their D
French made divers Incursions into *Guyenne* a
as the *English* did into the neighbouring Co
one of which they took *Uchelle* &c.

andais, who was unfortunately slain in a Rep- *Chandois*
near the Bridg of *Lansac* in *Poitou*; tho by a *slain*.
Reinforcement of brave *English*, the *French* not
freed their Prisoners, but to save their Lives, be-
lisoners to those who were theirs just before.

Charles to divert the *English* Arms from his
ors, undertook to raise an Army, and so land
oops in *England*, under the Command of his
Philip; but as they were ready to go on board
eur, News was brought him that *John Duke*
caster was landed at *Calais*, and made Incur-
o the *French* Territories; upon which he was
to quit his Design and turn his Arms that way.
er seeing him in the Field, posted himself upon
of *Tourneham*, between *Ardres* and *Guisnes*,
ilip incamped over against him, as tho he would
or hem him in, but he had not been long there,
he grew sick of the undertaking, and disbanded
y; which gave *Lancaster* an opportunity to o-
the Country of *Caux* as far as *Harfleur*, and
the same in his return by the Country of *Pon-*
here he took Prisoner *Hugh de Chastillon* Com-
of the Cross-bows, who in the King's Name
ed on that Country.

English at the same time by the mighty Power
ney, excited the Dukes of *Gueldres* and *Juliers*
a Defence to King *Charles*, who quickly set up

English
ravage
France.

into *Guyenne*, and given the Command of
about *Picardy* to Sir *Robert Knolles*, the
strong of above thirty thousand men, who
ravaged throughout *France* even as far as the
they ravaged *Vermandois*, *Champagne* and
destroyed all round *Paris*, and made the
Trumpets to echo in the very Gates of the
While nothing could move the wise King
the *French* Historians express it, tho I
would hardly be thought so at this day, to
any thing, nor let one Soldier go out to
however *Guesclin* was made Constable at
had a few Soldiers assigned him only to

the King of *Naples* in an Interview with
 Mes, he did thereby a most important piece
 to his Country; for as affairs then stood
 he might have done the French a great ser-
 vice, by introducing the English into *Normandy*
 he had the possession of *Calcutt* and
 was also into the Country of *Brittany* which
 was his own: But he as ambitious as malicious, he
 how to keep his Father's not to let it to be
 stage, for tho' he had made a Treaty the pre-
 car, he still deferred the concluding of the
 his Artifice, and at last insisted upon it to
 it, when he had the year near and was
 with the City of *Monsieur*, which was
 a possession; upon which *Condemnation* he
 the English Interest, when it would have
 to his advantage not to have done it. How-
 ne measure to consider that the *Maritime*
 of *Flanders*, whose main Interest was Trade,
 by regard to their own Interest the French
 de a League with the English thereby to be
 Commerce, which was more advantageous
 om thence than from the French.

ne after the Cardinal of France had re-
 Perigord and *Languedoc* from the English, the whole
 Wales, tho' he could not stir but in a hurry, sent his
 Troops together at *Cognac*, and laid Siege to *Angoulême*
 and his Majesty's Ministers.

much astonished at it, but much more at that of the *Capitall de Buch*, who marching to the City of *Soubise*, at the Mouth of the *Carre* hemmed in by the *Spaniards*, whose Fleet about that Coast, and the King by no Ransom change could be induced to set him at Liberty.

In the mean time the *Rochellers* could not with the *English* Humour, and therefore they how to withdraw themselves from under the siege, and the *Spaniards* therefore kept night their Design: The Castle was the only Obstacle wherefore the Mayor having treated the Count at Dinner, delivered to him some Letters sig-

lieve their Memoirs, a General Pardon for had demolished it before the Treaty; besides which got a great many Privileges and Immunities, they held to the last Century, but of that more later.

The Constable of *France* at the same time pursuing conquest of *Poitou* and *Santogne*, laid Siege to , which thus far capitulated, that the Lords and therein should put themselves, their Lands, and that under the King's Obedience; unless *K. Edward* or his Sons came with an Army before *Michaelmas* to fight the Besiegers; and Hostages were given accordingly. *Edward* was no sooner informed of this, than he put to Sea himself with four hundred Sail, but Winds proved so contrary that he could not have one able Gale for six Weeks; during which the time expired, and the Place delivered up: This was attended with the Surrendry of *Saintes*, *Angoulesme*, *St. John* *de* *ely*; and generally all the Country even to *and Blay* submitted.

John de Montfort Duke of *Bretagne*, much vexed at the Prosperity of the *French* and the decline of the *English* Interest, for his better Security re-sent some *English* into *Brest*, *Conquet*, *Kemperlay* and *bond*; but his Lords who were very potent got each King to send some Troops thither to expel

French
successful

from thence marched and ravaged *Artois*,
Champagne, *Fores*, *Beaujolais*, *Auvergne* and
and descended into *Guyenne* instead of goin
tagne, as *Montfort* hoped and expected. Bu
French King would never adventure to fi
yet by his Generals he ordered his matter
they were much incommoded and barassed, so
one third of them, it was thought, got to *Bo*
and at the same time the Duke of *Anjou* mad
advantagious Irruption into the upper *Guyenn*
he took divers Places, then of great Consider
Importance.

1373. But which way soever things went with tl

inual Solicitations of the Pope set a Negotiati-
 on, for which an Assembly was held at *Bruges*
 whither they deputed the nearest Princes
 Blood, and the greatest Noblemen in their
 ons: The Treaty lasted two Years with an
 le Charge; and there was first a Truce agreed *Truce be-*
 Year, to commence in *May*, upon the Con- *tween*
 whereof the Dukes of *Lincaſter* and *Bretagne* *France*
 er into *England*; but *Bretagne* being not com- *and Eng-*
 ed therein, *Montfort* returned thither with *land.*
 his Army, and was ſo ſucceſſful, that partly *1375.*
 re and otherwiſe he recovered *St. Mahe,*
 re, and ſeven or eight Places more; while the
Navarre's Brother *John d'Euureux* ravaged
 try all about *Kemperlay*; near unto which
 ſing built a Fort for ſecuring his Retreat, he
 ſome Lords of *Bretagne* beſieged there, but
 haſtning to his Relief they drew off, and
 ſued and beſieged in *Kemperlay*; where being
 the point of being expoſed to his Mercy,
 ey could little expect, as being proclaimed
 and Rebels by him, they were very fortu-
 elivered by a ſecond Truce, wherein they
 prehended; and ſo we leave them, and a
 ſerve another matter of a different Nature
 e proceed any farther.
 ought the Minority of the Kings of *France*

War with
Succejs.

Countries of *Berry, Auvergne, Bourbonnois* and *Angoumois* ; one was dispatched into *Guyenne*, and another into *Bretagne*, whilst he kept the fifth near his person as a Reserve to assist any of the others that should stand in need of it ; they were commanded by the Dukes of *Burgundy, Berry* and *Anjou*, Oliver the Constable ; and all of them proceeded with much Success, that the *English* could preserve nothing of Importance, but *Calais, Bourdeaux, Bayonne* and *Cherburgh* in *Normandy*, which last was sold to the King of *Navarre*.

Now this King's eldest Son, named *Charles*, himself was, having a great desire to see the King

opportunity, to form a Conspiracy in
 and poison the King ; having therefore pick- *A Conspi-*
 -most crafty and wicked Men he could to *rary against*
 young Prince thither, amongst whom were *Charles.*
 Chamberlain, and *Du Tertre* his Secretary,
 the same time so unadvised as to send the
 ers of his best Places in *Normandy* thither.
 igh being discovered, or perhaps prevented,
 and the Officers were seized, the first re-
 Prisoner five Years, and the others were
 d till they surrendred the Places wherein
 banded; but for *Tertre* and *La Rue* they
 ided, and soon after an Army was sent into
 , that took all that belonged to the King of
 except *Cherburgh*, which after a long Siege
 by no means take from the *English*.

Mayenne the Duke of *Anjou* put them very
 t, where the taking of *Bergerac*, and the
 a Battel near the City of *Aymot*, where
 the *Gascogn* Barons were taken Prisoners,
 him Master of all the Places above the
 and *Garonne*. Indeed there were three things
 ordered the *English*, that made them lose
 nted Courage, Strength and Understanding;
 he Minority of King *Richard*, another a
 gue which very much depopulated the
 and left the *English* in a very weak state.

Now there having been two Popes chosen time, first *Urban VI.* and then *Clement VII.* a Man; *France* after several Assemblies of learned of the Clergy, Prelates and Nobility, to the last, so did the Kings of *Castile* and the Earl of *Savoy*, and Queen *Jane* of *Naples* the other Powers of *Christendom*, viz. the *Navarrois*, *Flemings*, *Italians*, the Emperor, and of *Hungary*, all from different Interests, on other, only *Peter* King of *Arragon* remained *Clement* at first was in a condition to stop his Advance he took the Castle of *St. Angelo*, and defeated the *Romans* in *Rome* it self, whereby he became N

and Revelations, besides strong Arguments, on that the Dispute could never have been decided by way of Cession, which was to oblige both to abdicate the Papacy.

He took no more into the Broils of this Apostate, it was in *France* looked upon to be a kind of Illion in the Earl of *Flanders* to own any more than what King *Charles* did, for which he was in ill Will, and more still towards the Duke of *Bretagne* who encouraged him therein; besides happening that the *Fleming* by the Advice of the Duke had stooped one of *Charles* his Envoys, as he sent thro his Country for *Scotland*, to excite *James Stuart* to break the Truce with the *English*, he complained of it to the *Fleming*, and requested him to drive the *Breton* out of his Territories; the Earl consulting his People thereupon, and being assured of the Assistance of no less than 200000 men, in case he was attacked, he refused to comply :

the Duke of *Bretagne* voluntarily leaving *Sentence* and going for *England*, the Places of his *against the* did but aggravate his Crime; and so the King *Duke of* him to be summoned to appear in Parliament, *Bretagne.* judged by his Peers, and upon default of that he was the 9th of *September* attainted of Felony, his Lands as well in *Bretagne* as elsewhere in his Kingdom were confiscated, for his having defied

exercised more Severity towards some of
was agreeable to his Nature ; but here his P
led him, for his usage did but strengthen
Interest, and bring those over to his Ser
were at that time the best Commanders in
Army ; he durst not even upon this occasio
of the Valour of his Constable, who would
be supposed, very willingly have drawn his
the destruction of his Native Country ; an
he rather chose to send him into *Guyenne*, to
Places from whence the *English*, and certai
Vagabonds by their Connivance, ravaged th
of *Auvergne* : This brave Man, when he

at whatever discouragements the King had met in *Bretagne*, he was so far from giving his Enter-
 prise over, that he had resolved to pour in all his Ar-
 ms upon them, when he was constrained to quit the
 Field and all his Designs with it. *Charles* the Bad
 some years before caused some Poison to be given
 the Violence whereof a Physician of the Emperor
Charles IV. took off, by an Issue in his Arm; but that
 Ring it took away his Life in the Castle of *Beaute*
on the Marn, on the 16th of *Septem.* in the 6th
 month of the 17th year of his Reign, and the 44th of
 Life. His Tomb is to be seen at *St. Dennis*, and
 Heart was buried in the great Church at *Roan*, be-
 cause he had been Duke of *Normandy*. He confirm-
 ed the Law concerning the Majority of his Successors
 on his Death-bed, left the Government to *Lewis*
 Duke of *Anjou* his Brother with a Council, and the
 Guardianship and Education of his Son *Charles* to the
 Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bourbon* with an express Com-
 mand to take off the Imposts, to make some Agree-
 ment if possible with the Duke of *Bretagne*, and to
 marry his Son into some Potent Family in *Germany*.
 He was a Prince in whose Conduct there appeared
 much Solidity of Judgment, and a wonderful clear-
 ness of Wisdom and Understanding, a great deal of
 Moderation and Goodness, much Frugality and Oe-
 conomy, and yet magnificent and liberal upon occasi-

*K. Charles
 his Death
 and Cha-
 racter.*

1380.

two Sons ; - Charles who succeeded him, a Duke of Orleans, besides six Daughters, wh very young.

C H A P. IV.

*The Reign of CHARLES VI
some surnamed the Wellbeloved.*

THE Reign of Charles the Father was,

together hurried *France* into an Abyss of Miseries; under the Dominion of Strangers. Some Jealousies about the Government set the King's Uncles at odds from the very beginning: The Duke of *Anjou* being Regent, disposed of all Offices and Commands, which the Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bourbon* not being able to bear, they would have the King crowned; but he alledging on the contrary it ought not to till the King were fourteen years of Age, an Assembly of Nobles was held thereupon, wherein *John de Marais* Advocate General of the Parliament, maintained the Duke of *Anjou's* Cause, and *Orgement* the contrary. Now this Conference having only heated them the more, both Parties armed; *Paris* was crowded with Soldiers who lived at discretion, but the Lords of the Council mediating an Accommodation, both Parties referred it to Arbitrators, who agreed the King should be forthwith crowned, then receive Homages and Oaths of his Subjects, and that all publick Acts should go in his Name; for which purpose the Regent was to emancipate him, that the Duke of *Anjou* should continue Regent, and the other should have the Guard of the King's Person, with the Revenues of *Normandy*, and three or four Bailiwicks for his maintenance. They further agreed to chuse a Council of Twelve to reside at *Paris*. where by a

*Civil
Broils.*

formed of it, but he packed up his Auls, and to *Avignon* with vast Treasure, amassed by the Pockets of the whole Nation.

But whatever good order they might manifest to the Treasure of the late King; the *Anjou*, leaving the Constable *Glisson* to coronate the King to be crowned at *Rheims*, staid some days and seized the Treasure he had hid in the *Melun*, having forced the Chamberlain with whom the young King had entrusted the Secret, to show where it lay, which prompted his Courage to take the unfortunate War of *Italy*, where he was with the Flower of the *French* Nobility. Thence he overtook the King upon the Way, and the Coronation was performed the 4th of *Nov.* where the Lay-Peers were present but the Duke of *Burgundy* who being the first of all, was adjudged to take of the Duke of *Anjou* his elder Brother and who not submitting to it, but sitting next to him at the Coronation-Feast, the *Burgundian* boldly put himself between and took the upper hand of him. Here a Proclamation being made, that the taxes were remitted, pursuant to the Will of *Charles V.* they were forc'd in a Month after to settle new taxes especially upon *Paris*, because the Duke of *Anjou* had seized the Royal Treasure, as aforesaid, and would not make use of it for the payment of the taxes or support of the King's Family. Upon this a Mob was up, with a Cöbler at the head of the Mob forced the Provost of the Merchants to go to the King to demand the Revocation of them: But the King appeased with fair Words and Promises by the Chancellor, another Rabble next day fell upon their Houses and Offices, tore their Accounts and Registers afterwards assaulted the *Jews* Houses, plundered and burnt their Writings, haled their Children to the Church to be baptized, and would have beaten the Brains of their Parents, had they not taken Sanctuary in the *Chastelet* Prison.

Tumults in Paris.

But to look a little back, and take things in order along; the Earl of *Buckingham*, afterwards Duke of *Gloucester*, landing in the Month of *July* with a *French* Army at *Calais*, not in *Guyenne*, as some

4. *The Reign of Charles VI.*

287

he crossed *Picardy* and *Champagne*, and bold-
near *Troyes*, where the Duke of *Burgundy*
de the General Rendevouz of his Army,
Gastinois, *la Beause*, *Vendosmois* and *Main*, to
Bretagne to that Duke's Assistance: He passed
e the same day that *Charles V.* went into ano-
rld; but the News of his Death allayed the
of the *Bretons* to the *French*; so that when
sh laid Siege to *Nantes*, they basely declined
em according to Promise, which forced the
o march and find out the Duke at *Vennes*,
ng mightily perplexed with them on the one
nd the Revolt of his Subjects on the other,
emptorily insisted upon having matters made up
nce, he was at last necessitated to make a Peace,
he *English*, and renounce their Alliance, as al-
such Cautions as should oblige him to make
is Treaty.

mean time the young King was not educated
able to the good Instructions of his Father,
rding to the Inclinations of his Age and airy
ion, in hunting, dancing and the like Diversi-
d this Prince hapning one day to be hunting
orest of *Senlis*, a large Stag was rouzed, which *A strange*
ld not pursue with his Dogs; but taking him *Story of a*
l, they found a Copper Collar gilt about his *Stag.*

Treasurers, who governed him, resolve upon that the great Cities took up Arms to oppose were somewhat appeased by *de Villiers* and *de* who were much in favour with the People; would by no means give way to the raising new Taxes, for the Citizens took up Arms, set at the Gates, and made some Companies keep venues leading to the City free: *Aragon* was forced for the present to dissemble, and wait Heats were grown cold. Now it hapning the ing year, that after they had published the fa those Imposts at the *Chastelet*, one of the Officers demanded a Denier of an Herb-wor

same Night, and fled to *Burgundy* his Native Country; he had been condemned some Months before at Prosecution of the Clergy to end his days between the Walls, for Crimes of Impiety and Herefy, and was feared to be a bitter Enemy to the Scholars and Heads of the University.

The Sedition at *Roan* which hapned the same time was called the *Harelle* or *Herd*, wherein the Mob took each Merchant, and by force gave him the Title of King; then leading him triumphantly about the City, they compelled him to declare that all Imposts were abolished: The King was advised to punish the Mutineers, and at the same time to keep up the Customs; he came therefore with *Roan*, and going thither in Person, he caused a Gate to be beaten down, that he might enter by that Breach; then commanding all his Arms to be carried into the Castle, he put a great many of the most factious of them to death; afterwards set up the Imposts, besides other Taxes and levies upon them: But to compass their ends the more easily against the *Parisians*, they pretended to give way to the Intercession of the University, and a Detachment of some honest Citizens, who went to wait on the King at *Bois de Vincennes*, and to consent at last to the Suppression of the Imposts, and pardoning all Riots committed by the Mutineers; only those

Anjou a-
dopted
Heir of
Naples.

of *Hungry*, to send him *Charles de Duraz*
the *Peaceable*, to take possession of that King-
dom, as being the nearest of the Males, he c
Investiture: This Prince lay indeed under a
ligations imaginable to Queen *Jane* or *Joane*,
he was designed to be her Successor, but t
ble Ambition for a Crown made him ungratefu
the Queen hearing of his coming with an
to dethrone her, had recourse to *France* he
ginal, and adopted the Duke of *Anjou* for h
presumptive Heir in 1380. King *Charles*
after the Example of *St. Lewis*, would ha
nothing, to establish his Brother upon the Th

Now those Succors which the Duke of *Anjou* was conducting to Queen *Jane's* relief, being useless, and *Charles* by that time established in the Kingdom, the Duke was hesitating whether he should pass the Mountains or no; when Pope *Clement*, who had no other way than this to dethrone *Urban*, engaged him by so many Allurements and Advantages, as plainly manifested he cared not whether he ruined the Church in her Spirituals and Temporals, provided he could but compass his own ends. The Duke therefore towards the close of the last Year having certain Intelligence of the Queen's being besieged, as aforesaid, ordered his Forces to march towards *Provence*; the Pope invested him in the Kingdom of *Sicily*, and crowned him at *Avignon* on the 30th of *May*: *Jane* indeed had been dead eight days before, but as that was not known for a long time, he gave him only the title of Duke of *Calabria*: Hereupon the Provesals were not satisfied with, or consenting to the Duke's elevation, much less would they own him for their sovereign while *Jane* was alive, so that it cost him six Months time to reduce them; but that done, he efficiently burdened them with all manner of Taxes and Imposts, as he had done the *French*, and then marched into *Italy* with thirty thousand Horse, being accompanied by *Anic VI.* Earl of *Savoy* with 1500 Lances.

Anjou
crowned
King of
Sicily.
1382.

It's here to be first observed that the Earl of *Flanders* being at ill Terms with his Subjects, and especially the Citizens of *Ghent*, he laid Siege to and the Inhabitants of *Bruges* did him all the Service they could against it, who being reduced to necessity, they did on the first of *May*, by the vice and under the Conduct of *Artevelle*, march to the number of five thousand Men, and on the day appeared resolutely before *Bruges*. The Earl blinded with Revenge, instead of starving them might have done, chose rather the same day to attack them Battel; he had only 800 Lances with him, the number of the Citizens amounted to 40000 yet they made so little of it that the *Ghentois* suddenly routed them, and entering Pell-mell with into the City, took and sacked it, and slew 12 the principal Tradersmen, who were their mortal enemies; the Earl himself had much ado to escape *Lisle*, while this miraculous Success brought all Cities in *Flanders* over to the *Ghentois* Faction, except *Audenard*.

The Earl hereupon had Recourse to the King his Sovereign, by the Interest of the Duke of *Burgundy* his Son-in-Law; and *Artevelle*, now *Paramount*, desired the Assistance of the King of *France*: The *English* moved slowly, and so lost an advantageous opportunity; but those that were of *Charles* his Council complying with the humors of that young Prince, which were conformable to the Interest of *France*, resolved to bring down the Earl which seemed to be the Spring-head of all those similar Disturbances. Having therefore taken out St. *James* his Standard, named the *Ori Flamme*, with the Ceremonies, he took the Field about the beginning of *September*, and made his general Rendezvous at *Brabant* where he had an Army of 60000 Men, among which were 12000 Men at Arms, and almost all the greatest Officers, and Lords of the Kingdom. *Artevelle* who had besieged *Audenard* about two Months left 15000 Men there to block it up under Duke *Philip* and from thence marched with forty thousand Men with a Resolution, tho he had no Horse, to give the *French* Battel; the first Encounter was upon the

ere the *French* twice gained the Bridg of *Camines*; the second was near *Ipres*, where *Du-Bois* lost 3000 Men, and was himself wounded; but the third proved a general Battel between *Roseck* and *Courtray*, where *Artevelle* incamped with so much Presumption and Confidence, that he commanded his Men to give quarter to none but the King, whom he was to send prisoner into *England*, while he proceeded to make Conquest of all *France*: However they said upon observing the Strength and excellent Order of the *French* Army, he would have declined to hazard his Person in the Engagement, under pretence of bringing 10000 Men more to join them; but this his Success not allowing of, the Battel was fought on the French side of *November*, wherein the *Flemings* kept very close together, but did not fight with Vigour and Bravery, so that the *French* Horse bearing hard upon them, they had not Elbow-room enough to lay about with much Force: In short, there were near 10000 of them slain, either in the Fight or Pursuit, amongst whom was *Artevelle* himself, whose Body could hardly be distinguished in such Heaps of dead Carcases.

The Courage of the *Ghentois*, much deprest by this Blow, was revived afresh by *Du Bois*, who brought some Forces from *Bruges*, and by the Approach of Winter, which hindered the Conqueror from be-

C. Charles young Prince by their Instigation most severely c
 is severe ed those Cities, by putting great numbers of
 ppressions. to Death, by Proscriptions, Revocations of
 leges, and heavy Taxes. Hereupon the *Parisians*
 proud, but less courageous than the *Ghemois*,
 out armed to meet him in the Plain of St. Den
 the number of 30000 Men, with a shew of
 their Respects to him, tho in reality it was to
 see their Strength; however they did both too
 and too little hereby, for they returned ever
 home upon his Command, upon which he
 their City as a conquered Place, caused their G
 be taken off, their Barricadoes broke down, too
 their Chains and all their Arms, the Provost o
 chants, and Sheriff's Officers, and afterwards a
 many of their Lives, who were either drowned,
 ed or beheaded: Not content herewith, all the C
 of both Sexes were ordered to appear in the
 Yard, where the King sitting on his Throne whi
 raised very high, the Chancellor *D' Orgemont* se
 unto them their reiterated Crimes in such harsh
 and terrible Expressions, as seemed to requir
 all to prepare for Death; upon this they all pro
 themselves on the Ground, the Ladies with dish
 Hair, the Men beating their Breasts, and all
 out for Mercy; the Dukes of *Berry* and *Bu*
 fell upon their Knees before the King, who a
 had been moved by their Intreaties did with h
 Mouth pronounce their Pardon, and chang
 Punishment they deserved into Pecuniary Mul
 Fines, there being not only one half of their
 taken from them, but the Court taking advan
 the present Terror, resettled the Imposts, and
 them with unexpressible Extortion and Rig
 The other Cities were treated much after t
 manner, and these vast Sums went almost
 into the great Mens Pockets, who soon squa
 them again away by their Prodigality, did
 fort justify those Commotions which they so
 chastised.

1383. In the mean time the *English* sensible, tho t
 of the Fault they had committed, in not more
 supporting the *Ghemois*, as soon as the Truce

resolved to assist them. Now Pope *Urban*
 ing his Warlike Trumpet every where against
mentines, and preaching up a Croisade in Eng-
 whereof *Henry Spencer* Bishop of *Norwich*
 himself the chief, he landed with an Army at
 but instead of attacking the *French* he fell
landers, pretending that Country belonged to
 of *France*, who was a *Clementine*; his taking
 velling, and winning a Battel near that Place
 2000 *Flemings*, brought a Terror upon the whole
 y, after which being re-inforced by the *Ghentois*,
 laid Siege to *Ypres*; but King *Charles* re-
 with a great Power into *Flanders*, put them
 ard to it, and at last shutting them up in *Bour-*
 they had the good Fortune, by the Media-
 of the Duke of *Bretagne*, to obtain honourable
 , and so returned home, which wrought In-
 ons in them to a Peace; so that Commissioners
 g on both sides, at the Village of *Lelnighen*
 n *Calais* and *Bologne*, the Duke of *Lancaster*
 have *Ghent* comprehended, and the Earl of
 s opposing it, the Conference ended only in a
 from *October* till *St. John's Day* in the follow-
 ar, and the *Ghentois* were to have the Benefit
 The Earl of *Flanders* dying soon after at *St. O-*
 ed being succeeded in all his Dominions by *Philip I.*

*A Truce
 between
 the Eng-
 lish and
 French.
 1384.*

self, that after the Duke of *Anjou's* Departure *Italy*, the Dukes of *Berry* and *Burgundy* engrossed the publick Authority, especially the last of them into their own Hands; and the Duke of *Bourbon* finding he was not able to make head against them, he quitted the Government of the King's Person and Parties to fulfil a Vow he had made, to go to the *Holy Land*; he went with the Count of *Harcourt* and others into *Africa*, to signalize themselves against the *Moor*. In the mean time the King of the lesser *Armenia* descended from the Blood of the *Lusignans*, flying from the cruelty of the *Turks*, who had made a Conquest of his Kingdom, and kept his Wife and Child in Captivity, came for Relief into *France*, where he was honourably entertained while he lived.

But to return again to the Affairs of *Naples*, where we left the Duke of *Anjou* struggling for that Kingdom. *Charles De Duras* and his Generals managed the Affairs so well, that having cut off all the Duke's Vision, and either following or flanking him so as to hinder his fighting of them, they reduced him to want even of all necessaries, nay of very Cloaths, insomuch that this Prince who had carried away the King's Treasure had no more left him than a Coat of painted Cloth, and a Silver Bowl to eat in: Indeed he had sent *Peter de Craon* into *France* for Mony and Succors, but this faithless Friend had no haste to return, for staying at *Venice* for his pleasure, the unfortunate Prince at length weary of living, sunk under his own Grief, and died the 10th of *October*, 1384. tho others will have it to have been on the 21st of *September*, the Year following. The unhappy Remains of the Duke's Army perished by Famine and Want, except a few that dispersing themselves into small Parties, retired into *France* and begged their Way thither, and received more injuries and opprobrious Words than they got Bread.

Anjou unsuccessful
and dies.

1385.

Now the Truce with the *English* being expired, the King who begun to take cognizance of his Affairs, held a great Council in order to consider what the same ought to be continued: It was indeed in the Interest of the Duke of *Burgundy* for the sake of

Netherlands, to have a Peace with the *English*; but to interpoise his Power, and flatter the young King's at, they resolved on a War, and even to carry it to the Enemies Country; to which end they fitted a great Fleet at *Sluice*, and sent the *Scots* to persuade them to a Rupture also with *England*; but for all this vast Expence the Design came only to this, that Admiral *De Vienne* went with 60 Sail for *Scotland*, from whence in conjunction with the *Scots* he invaded the *Northern English* Borders, tho with no great matter of Advantage or Success; but indeed the Admiral's Head and Heart were filled with another passion than that for War, which proved much more attractive, and that was Love to a Lady related to the King, at which he was so incensed that *De Vienne* found his best way to make his escape with utmost diligence.

In the mean time it plainly appeared by the Methods whereby the King's Uncles governed, they had a mind to suck the very last Drops of the Peoples Blood; that the Clergy that they might secure somewhat for their own Subsistence, held an Assembly, wherein they enacted, that their Revenues should be divided into three parts, one to be for the Maintenance of the Church, the other for Ecclesiastical Persons, and the third for the King, without any mention made of the Poor. It to pass by the Decrees and Precautions of the

1386. began to hearken to Proposals of an Accommo-
 and so they returned under the Obedience of th
 and the Duke of *Burgundy* their Lord, who
 quite wearied with this tedious War, which
 ruined all his Country, he granted them a
 Pardon for all that was past; and confirmed a
 Privileges, upon condition they would renou
 Leagues, and that the first that should viola
 Peace should forfeit his Life and Estate: A
 was likewise renewed between *France* and *Engl*
 some Months. But now after five or six Years
 bles and petty Wars, the Council resolved to
 the *English*, not only in *Guyenne*, but also even
 own Island; for which end they made the most
 dable Preparations of Men, Warlike Engin
 Ships, that had ever yet been seen; they bougl
 hired all the Vessels they could light on, fr
 Havens of *Smeden* to those of *Flanders*; the
 a City of Wood which could be taken in p
 shelter themselves upon their landing. King
 went to *Sluice* to review his Army and Navy,
 consisted of nine hundred Ships; but the I
 Berry's Envy and Jealousy retarded the Progre
 he would needs break the Design because he was
 Projector of it; in order to which he mad
 wait for him till the 14th of *September*, when
 began to be boisterous, so that the Forces d
 into Quarters; part of this numerous Fleet w
 rated by Storms, and the *English* picked up
 them that were wrecked or stragled.

There was no Reason all this while to t
 Duke of *Bretagne* too much, because of his to
 Obligations to the *English*; wherefore the
 watched every motion of his with great ex
 but he to justify himself laid Siege to *Brest*,
 they still kept as a Curb upon *Bretagne*, yet wh
 were in a manner at the last Gasps, the Duke
Lancaster, who was going with some Forces to *Spai*
 ed them to raise the Siege. *Lancaster* after this p
 his Voyage to *Castile*, which Kingdom he
 in right of his Wife, he quickly conquered a
 it, and struck such a Terror into the rest th
 John made some Overtures of Peace to hi

in the Treaty out for a time, in expectation of the French Succours, who failing him, the Treaty was altered to, and the Duke of *Lancaster* sealed it with Marriage of his two Daughters, one to the King of *Portugal*, and the other to the *Castilian's* eldest Son.

And now at last by a just Vengeance from Heaven, Charles the Wicked King of *Navarre*, who had blown up so many Flames, and burnt so many Entrails with violent Poisons, was most cruelly burnt up himself; he having caused his Body to be wrapped in Sheets dipped in Spirits of Wine and Sulphur, to corroborate his natural Heat, decayed with his Debauches, Charles the Wicked King by some Accident or other took Fire, and burnt to the very Bones, of which he died on the 1st of January this year, being succeeded by his Son *Charles* the Wicked his Death. 1387.
the Noble.

But to return again to the *French* Designs against the *English*, tho the last vast Preparations came to nothing, yet the Constable *Cliffon*, and the Admiral *de Stenne* had so filled the King's head with an Expedition for that Country, that they set all hands now on work for the prosecution of it. Indeed the Conjunction was very favourable; for all that Kingdom was in a combustion against *K. Richard*, because of his adorning mean Persons to the highest Places of Trust, and other matters which his Uncles could not endure.

The Affairs
of Bre-
tagne.
1388.

cil; *Cliffon* went thither with his Retinue, Duke after Dinner conducting him to see his *l'Ermine*, which he was building by the Sea caused him and *Beaumanoir* to be seized in the and commanded *Bavalan* the Governor to the by night into the Sea: Now the faithful dis- of *Bavalan*, gave the Duke his Master time to and the Intercession of the Lord *de Laval* g- his Liberty, upon condition of paying 100000 and the surrendering of three Castles; but would not forgive as the generous Duke had de- so King *Charles* much resenting this Affront of his Prime Ministers, sent for the Duke to give count for what he had done.

The King went on purpose to *Orleans*, Duke having made them wait for him a long sent to be excused: *Cliffon* pleaded his own accused him of Treason, and threw down his which no body would take up. On the other the Duke by the advice of the Barons, went a to *Paris*, where by the favour of the Dukes of and *Burgundy*, he was kindly received by them and in some measure made Friends with the Court by restoring him both his Money and Castles.

About this time *William* the Earl of *Juliers* and Duke of *Gueldres* by his Mother, the Dowager of Duke *Renault* I. having some contest with them of *Burgundy*, who supported the Dutchess of *Burgundy* whom he was to succeed, in the detention of some forces of *Gueldres*, which *Renault* had otherwise engaged; the *Burgundian* employed the Forces of France against him; whereupon this petty Duke true and magnanimous, but rash herein, was forced to declare War against the King of *France*. The King falling on a sudden into the Country of the Father to divert the Storm disowned the Son for Peace by the Mediation of the Arch-bishop of *logne*, and offered Homage: Hereupon the Duke quitting his Territories, and marching into *Gueldres* the young Duke persisted a Month longer in his obstinacy; but at last the Duke of *Burgundy* persuaded him to submit, he went to wait upon the King and disowned the Challenge, tho sealed with his own

ted, and referred the difference between him
the Dutchess of *Brabant* to his decision; but he
not renounce his Alliance with the *English*; yet
such noble Presents made him, as proved a Temp-
to the rest of the *Germans* to become tight to
French Interest.

ing *Charles* having now attained to the Age of
ty Years, he declared upon a Motion made by the
of *Laon* in Council, that he would take the Ad-
tration of the Government upon himself, and that
scharged his Uncles therefrom; he kept the Duke
Orleans his Brother, and *Laon* the Author of this
ncil, near his Person, as also the Duke of *Bourbon*,
e *Berry* and *Burgundy* withdrew with discontent,
the sudden death of the Cardinal of *Laon*, which *Charles's*
ed soon after, was held in the opinion of many *first Acts*
effect of their resentment. Now when the King *of Govern-*
began to take cognizance of his own Affairs, the *ment.*
le Face of the Government looked with a better
tenance for some little time: He made choice of
ew Council, wherein three Citizens, viz. *la Riviere*,
Voisier, and *de Montaigne* had the best share; after
ch he took off all the new Imposts, displaced the
rting and cheating Officers put in by the Princes,
ferred the Provostship which he had newly restored,
n *Jouvenal* the Advocate, a wise, honest and coura-

Bretagne. But to leave this Affair, the Ear
to do him Homage, and make him his Heir
Duke of *Bourbon* with the Earl of *Derby*,
English and *French* Gentlemen, at the request
Genuese, to sail to *Africa* and besiege *Carthage*
we must shew you that the King's good Ge
did not last long ; the way to have contin
batement of Imposts, had been to have retri
expences of the Court, and the Avarice of
sters, but both of these rather increasing tha
shing, their Exactions were renewed : Inde
nest Hermit the succeeding year went to the
required him in God's Name not to oppres

to pass over the particulars of *Lewis* the King's great Purchases, wherein were included the of *Blois* and *Dunois*, besides the Dutchy of which the King against all the Remonstrances citizens conferred upon him; we must note, that the principal ground of the mortal between the Houses of *Orleans* and *Burgundy*, from their Contests for the Government: It have lain dormant for sometime, but now it gain; for the Duke of *Orleans* pretended to ministration, as being the nighest Relation, years old, but the Estates met at *Paris*, gave it of the Duke of *Burgundy*.

1391.

from whencesoever it proceeded, or whose er it was, the Treaty between the Duke of and *Gliffon* was broken: The Duke was much d that *France* should support his own Subjects im, and make a private Gentleman equal to on this the King sent for both of them to but the Duke was so far from complying, that ved his antient Alliances with *England*, which e King dispatch the Duke of *Berry*, *Peter de*, and divers other Lords to him, in order to of the Correspondence he held with Strane coining of Money, and making his Subjects r Oaths to him and against all others. Now

would needs have the Honour of procurin
Audience from the King, who did them Ju
redrest their Grievances. Indeed the Privile
port and Countenance the Kings of *France* a
forded from the time of *Lewis* the Gros to th
University, the infinite Number of Students
sorted thither from the remotest Parts of *Eu*
strict adherence of the whole Body of the
them, to whom they were a Nursery and S
and the Authority their Faculty of Divinit
quired to judg of Doctrines, and matters relati
unto, had rendred them so considerable, that
fused and difficult times they were called to

3rd of June, as he was coming from the King,
 assisted by twenty Russians he had got toge-
 ther for that purpose, he assassinated him in St. Cath-
 erine, and after that made his escape out of Paris, *Craon ru-*
 ined.
 Gates were always left open, since the time the
 Duke had caused them to be taken down upon his
 return from Flanders. These Wounds did not prove
 to the Constable, but were the ruin of Craon;
 the Assassins were discovered, taken and be-
 came Craon's Estate confiscated and bestowed upon the
 Duke of Orleans, his House turned into a Church-yard
 stands in Greve, and his stately Country Seats
 sold; so that he could save nothing but his Per-
 son, flying into Bretagne, to that Duke who kept
 him fully concealed: However the King some years
 after gave him his Pardon, upon the Intercession of
 the Duke of Orleans. In the mean time when the
 Duke began to recover of his Wounds, both those
 of his Friends, and such as were no ways con-
 cerned, excited the King to punish the Attempt, upon
 the Duke was commanded to deliver up the As-
 sassins, and he denying him to be in his Country, the
 King, contrary to the Inclination of, and Argu-
 ed by the King's Uncles, who urged that this
 was a private Quarrel, which ought to be legally
 tried by the ordinary Course and Methods of

Posture of the Lance, the Apparition or Fantasy of his threatnings came afresh into his mind; so his Fancy was disturbed, and he imagining the going to give him up to his Enemies, and believing those that were about him to be Traitors, this brought him into so violent a Fit of Rage and Fury, that he struck about, and slew all without Consideration, till he fell into a Swoon: Inſomuch that it was thought best to carry him bound in a Chariot to France, where Witchcraft and Poisonings were indeed so frequent those days, that it was believed his Malady proceeded from some such Cause. He recovered his Strength the third day, and by degrees his Understanding, but not the full vigour of his Understanding; so that in the end his Uncles resumed the Government, and brought him back to *Paris*, seized upon the three Citizens, who after three Months Imprisonment, by the continual fears of being led to Execution, the King's Command set at Liberty, and the part of their Estates restored to them, but rendered them for ever incapable of holding any share in the Government. The Constable was so desirous to make his Escape to his own Country of France, where by the assistance of the Duke of Orleans and his other Friends, he most bravely defended himself against that Duke, while the Princes conferred peace upon Philip of Artois Earl of Eu.

An odd
Accident
at Court.
1393.

On the 29th of January this year, when the death of one of the Queen's Ladies was celebrated, while the King and some young Lords were present in Masquerade clothed like Bears, the Duke of Orleans holding a Flambeau in his hand in order to light their Faces, accidentally set Fire to the Tapestry with some kind of Glew was fastned upon the skins; so that the Hall was presently in a Flame, full of Screeks, Astonishment and crowding to the Door. Some cried aloud, Save the King, and the Duke's Berry covered him with her Gown so well, that she served him from the Flame. The *Parisians* murmured at the Duke of Orleans for this thing, as if it had been designedly done, so that he durst not appear several days; and to expiate that Fault the best he could, he founded a Chappel at the Celestine

However it fared with the Duke upon this occasion;
 the King who before the Accident was pretty well
 recovered, was discomposed in his Health thereby;
 not long after, thro the Vigour of his Age and
 constitution, he recovered so well again, that his
 Councels having a meeting at *Lelingham*, between *Ar-*
res and *Guisnes*, to treat about a Peace with the
 Crown of *England*, in whose behalf the Duke of
Gloucester appeared, they perswaded the Duke to go
 to *Albeville* to satisfy himself, in respect to the good
 state of his Health: But the King on the 20th of *June*
 relapsed into his Frenzy again, which held him till
 January following, and all that ever they could do
 could not recover him, but his Distemper lasted as
 long as his Life, not continually, but at several times and
 fits, and that worse and worse; tho in his best Inter-
 vals it hurried him into great Debauches and Dis-
 orders; they did not know well who to lay the
 blame upon. The *Jews* were now the seventh time
 joined to leave the Kingdom or their Religion,
 and become Christians.

Now the Schism still continuing in the Church of
Rome, and Pope *Boniface IX.* being willing to come to
 some sort of Accommodation with *Clement*, the Uni-
 versity of *Paris* insisted that in order to the facilitating
 the same it was necessary both Competitors should
 be living.

*Continu-
 ance of
 Schism in
 the Church
 of Rome.
 1394.*

Kingdom, in which Assembly it concluded, that a Cession was the method; wherefore the Dukes of *Burgundy*, with Ambassadors from some Deputies of the University, went *Avignon*, to propose the Expedient to fifteen Cardinals there was but one that they therefore urged him to agree to it, it by a thousand Wiles, and so wearied with Evasions and Delays, that they returned as did not as much as take leave of him; he stopped their Mouths, and pacified them by giving them Power to raise another Treaty.

In the mean time, upon the Request of audent and considerate People, who considered the Consequences of Gaming, ever attended with a multitude of other Evils; the Council prohibited all sorts of Sports, but then and Cross-Bows. Now the Courtiers who rally a very idle sort of People, were much at this Prohibition, as if it had been an A weight, and much to their Prejudice, never left off their Intrigues till they had repealed. But to pass over the vanity of People, we must here remark, that

K. Richard II. married King of *England*, and his Uncles the *Black Prince* and *Glocester*, having fatal Jealousy of each other, the King thinking to fortify himself against them, married by Proxy *Isabella* King *Charles's* daughter, but seven Years old, and at the same time was prolonged for 24 Years.

K. Charles mad. King *Charles* had now been pretty long for some time, but he relapsed again into his former temper; he appeared for some days cheerful, at other times he would cry himself to pieces, pricked with a thousand Bodkins; Name and Quality, and could not content his Wife, but would suffer himself very much to be governed by the Dutches of *Orleans*; for this reason the common People were persuaded he had bewitched him; indeed the King lay under the Imputation of seeking Counsel with Magicians: The less credulous

ough imagin she charmed the King with somewhat that was a more natural Spell, not unlike to those wherewith the Duke governed the Queen's Mind; however it were, her Husband fearing the Resentments of the giddy Multitude, sent her for a time to *Chateau-Neuf* upon the *Loire*.

King *Charles* in his best Intervals laboured with all might to re-unite the Church, as did other Printes, but *Benedict* cunningly eluded all their Endeavours. And about this time it was that the Seigniory of *Genoa*, rather than submit to the Dictates of *John Galeazzo* Viscount of *Milan*, put themselves under the French King's Obedience, and transferred to him all the Right vested in them: However the King's Commissioners left the Government to the *Doge*, after he had resigned the Power and Dignity into their Hands, but they gave it a little while after to *Boucicaut*. Neither are we to omit in this place that the 27th of *November* was appointed for the magnificent Interview of the Kings of *England* and *France*, upon the Frontiers of their Territories, between *Ardevs* and *Calais*, here the Truce was confirmed; the King of *England* married the Daughter of *France*, gave up *Brest* to the Duke of *Bretagne*, and *Cherbourg* to the King of *Navarre*, who three Years afterwards sold it to the French King.

France at this time having granted Succors to the

1356.

self to pay; and the same being made good Months after, they were all set at liberty: *John of Nevers* arrived in *France* about the end of the following; and 'tis said *Bajazet* was so far from any Oath that he should never make War against the *Turks*, that he exhorted him to take his life, and promised he should ever find him in the *Turks* to give him any satisfaction; but the Earl of *Burgundy* during his Imprisonment amongst the *Turks*, of *Sancerre* a Marechal of *France* was honoured with his Office of Constable.

1397.

King *Charles* was now the fourth time seized with a Fit of his Malady, and that more severe than ever before; he recovered it again, tho he was afterwards troubled with it, at least three or four Year; while *Richard II.* King of *England* as mad as he, cut off his Uncle the Duke of *Gloucester* the Earl of *Arundel*, and divers great Men as he also banished his Cousin the Duke of *Hereford* Son to *John of Ghent*. Duke of *Lancaster*, into *Exile* and began himself to reign after a very Tyrannical manner, the Consequence whereof, so far at least as to this History, we shall touch upon in its proper place and proceed now to shew that the Emperor *Wenceslaus* King of *Bohemia*, for what reason is not certain, had a fancy to visit the Court of *France*, and King *Charles* went to meet him as far as *Rheims* in *March* and received him with as much Magnificence as he could; but he quickly discovered his Brutality, for the very second day having invited him to a Feast when the Dukes of *Berry* and *Bourbon* were present, he sent for him from his own Lodging, they found he was drunk, and taking a Nap to refresh himself, he neglected him the next day, and the Entertainment Jollity had lasted longer if *Charles* had not a Fit coming upon him, which brought him to *Paris*; however he left the Duke of *Burgundy* to keep the Emperor company, and conferred with him about the means of putting an end to the Schism in the Church.

Now the King's Council being weary of his playing fast and loose, as before hinted, they followed according to the Advice of a great *Abbot*

Emperor
Wenceslaus in
France.

ops, Abbots and Deputies of the University, that whole Kingdom should be withdrawn from under Obedience, till he should condescend to the Cession proposed to him; and that in the mean time the *French* Church, conformable to her antient Liberty, should be governed by her Ordinaries, according to Canons. *Bennet's* Cardinals approving of this, took him and retired to the new Town of *Avignon*; he stood it out, and having got some *Aragonian* soldiers for his Guard, secured himself in the Castle of *Avignon*, which the King ordered the *Mareschal* to besiege; he managed his business so, that hope in a few days must have yielded for want of provisions, when he received Orders from Court, to turn the Siege into a Blockade, and suffer Refreshments to be carried into the Place: It was *Bennet's* Advice and Money that had gained some of the Men of *France* to his Interest, who contrived for him.

And the *French* History about this time as concerning the King's Mind was, who had still his lucid intervals, and therefore 'tis difficult to make any Collection of the Incidencies that have succeeded: I perceive the *French* continually jealous of the *English*, their Affairs were never a whit in better order than their own; for the Earl of *Perigord* who was betrayed by them, was forced in his Castle of *Mon-*

1399.

in the year of which Lewis of Anjou was
from being King, as the Emperor *Wenceslaus*
graded of his Imperial Dignity in the oth
these things being digressive, we'll return agai
our own Limits.

Emperor
Emanuel
in France.
1400.

This Year the Court of *France* received *Em*
Emperor of *Greece*, who came to give the King
for the Assistance he had from him against
mies, and to desire more: He was indeed un
tained, and that was all he could obtain in
Annual Pension for his Subsistence; he tarried
two Years in *France*, but when News was
him of the Defeat and taking of *Bajazet* by *T*
the King forced him soon after to depart.

and one another out of that advantageous Post: es, the Duke of *Burgundy* resented it very highly, *Orleans* would have the Duke of *Bretagne* put of all, who was his Cousin-German and fast d. To which we may add, that the frequent tilios between their Wives, exasperated them than their own true Interests; the Duke of *Bur-*'s being the elder, Heiress to a vast Estate, and ded from very noble Blood, despising the other, in reality had been much beneath her, had not been considered as the Wife of the King's Brother: *Orleans* had then the upper hand, and Management of the Publick; and the *Burgundian* unwilling to relinquish his share, both of them their Friends together, and *Paris* was beset with iers; the Duke of *Orleans* had brought in the of *Gueldres* with 500 Men at Arms, and the *undian* was not inferior to him; but the Queen the Dukes of *Berry* and *Bourbon* becoming as ators, reconciled them at least in outward Ap- nce.

he King was at that time in his Fits, but when as recovered *Orleans* obtained of him, that when as ill he should have the Government of the dom, which he imprudently began with new its, that rendred him odious to the People; uch that *Burgundy* returning to Court found

France re-
stored to
Pope Ben-
net's Obe-
dience.

1403.

But not to forget Pope *Bennet* all this while we left blockaded in the Castle of *Avignon* a way to make his escape with the Host and some Letters from the *French King*, who had promised never to forsake him; the Count this was, That his Cardinals were immediately ciled to him, the City craved his Pardon. The King of *Sicily* made him a Visit; whereas of *France* was much divided about the business of Subtraction from under his Obedience; the *Berry*, *Burgundy* and *Bourbon* insisting that they should persevere therein, but the Duke opposed it, and the Clergy of *France* assembled to decide it. Add to this, that the King of *Spain* declared by his Ambassadors he would take them in short so bestirred themselves with King that he restored the Kingdom to the Obeyance of *Bennet*, to which all the Universities agreed, that of *Paris* at last: And indeed all this was brought about by the Duke of *Orleans* his security for *Bennet's* good Intentions, who was settled at *Avignon*, fortified it, got some Soldiers to the City, and quartered more in the Neighbourhood to support himself by his Power.

France
afflicted.

1404.

At the same time the Princes as illly agreed in other matters as they did about the Succession of *Orleans*, *Berry* and *Burgundy* daily contested the Government, and agreed in no one thing but laying new Taxes upon the People, whereof each of them had their Shares, tho' the Odium was upon the first, for this as well as for the Schism of the Church. But this was not all the misery of *France*, for indeed poor *France* was throughout visited with divers Rods of Affliction; sometimes with parching Droughts, at other times with great Floods and Inundations; sometimes with violent Storms and Tempests, often with Contagious or Epidemical Diseases. Nay there hapned so great a Mortality in the Year 1399, that they were feign to forbid all marriages: And now there was another so rise, that it took away an infinite number of People, insonderably *Philip Duke of Burgundy* died of it, April 20, 1404, in *Brabant*. This Prince without being a

D. of Bur-
gundy's
Death and
Character.

and Estate in Lands of any in his time; but
 inficence, and the excessive Expences he was at
 occasions, had so much impoverished him,
 Wife renounced the Administration, and de-
 is Belt, Keys and Purse upon his Coffin. He
 e Sons, *John* that succeeded him in the Dutchy
 nies of *Burgundy, Artois and Flanders; An-*
ke of Brabant, and Philip Earl of *Nevers;*
 ur Daughters, *Margaret* married to *Albert*
Bavaria, Son to the Emperor Lewis, from
 me an only Daughter named *Jacqueline, of*
 ore hereafter; *Mary* married to *Ame VIII.*
 Duke of *Savoy*, and afterwards made Pope by
 of *Felix*; and *Catherine* the Wife of *Leo-*
 Duke of *Austria*; but *Bonna* died unmarried.
 he Duke of *Bretagne's* Children had not been
 bred up in the Court of *France*, but *John*
 went to take possession of the Dutchy, and
 himself more a *Frenchman* than his Father. In
 time *Richard II.* King of *England* having
 dered by his Successor's Order; they were
 ncerned at it in *France*, but yet cunningly
 red to turn the great Affection *Bourdeaux*
onne had for that Prince, into an hatred a-
 ing *Henry*; tho they were so strictly tied to
 lish Interest by their intercourse of Trade,
 y would not be perverted from their Obedi-

Hostilities between English & French. and Guyenne, which the Bretons and Normans vowed to retaliate; while at the same time the Constable of France cleared all the neighbouring Bourdelois of a great many petty Castles, they gathered large Contributions in Guyenne. The Earl of Marche Son to the Duke of Bourbon like in Limasyn; but this last by his too long delay, in that Relief he should have carried Glyndyswr a Welch-man, that made War against the English, and a very beneficial Diversion for France.

The publick Treasure being now quite exhausted, the Duke of Orleans, who was a Guolph that could satiate, he called a Council, and gave out for raising new Subsidies. John Duke of Burgundy had taken his Father's place, publicly opposed, but gained the Love of the Parisians by it. His Majority of Votes inducing him to a Compliance with the rest, they laid new Impositions upon the People, and raising great Forces: The Princes had agreed to keep the Money in one of the Towers of the Palace, so that no one to touch a Penny of it without the Consent of the rest; but Orleans for all his engagement, scrupled not to go one Night without the Power thither, and took away the benefit of it, and after that went to the Pope at Avignon to labour for him in the King's behalf, to labour for a re-union of the Church, according to his Promise.

Dauphin married, &c.

1405.

In the mean time Lewis Dauphin of France Duke of Guyenne, married Margaret Daughter of John Duke of Burgundy; and Philip John's eldest Son was betrothed to Michelle the King's Daughter. This while both the Court and City of Paris resented at the too close Union between the Duke of Orleans and the Queen, especially since the Duke of Burgundy, whom they dreaded, and also because they took the management of the Government entirely to themselves, pressed the Kingdom with their violent Exactions. The Queen, they said, sent one part of it into England, and employed the other in all sorts of Prodiges; whilst the King's Children had but a pitiful Education, and himself was left to rot in his own Ordure, without any care taken to undress him or change his

King neglected.

were indeed not only hated by the People, but Dukes of *Burgundy* and *Bretagne* retired from ; the reason of whose absence being understood King in a lucid Interval, and how general the complaints were against the Queen and his Brother, thought it necessary to call a General Assembly, and for the Duke of *Burgundy* to come thither : The thought it not fit to go without a good Guard, for his own Security, as because he knew the *Orleans* had a Design to seize upon the Children, and prevent the double Alliance he had contracted between his and them. Upon the day of his Arrival, the Queen and *Orleans* took the alarm, and withdrew to *Melun*, having left Orders to *Lewis* of *Bavaria* the Queen's Brother, to carry the Dauphin, and even the Duke of *Burgundy's* children to the Castle of *Ponilly*; while the *Burgundian* arrived at the *Louvre*, mounted his nimblest horse, and being attended by a good Guard of brave men, passed without any stop thro' *Paris*, and with such haste that he overtook the Dauphin at *Juvis* and brought him back to *Paris* in spite of the *Burgundian*. This Rupture was attended with Justification on the *Burgundian's* part, who gave his reasons for what he did before the King's Council and University, so for his Reproaches and the drawing together

*A Rupture
between the
Princes.*

own Head, therefore in stead of protect
endeavoured by all means to appease him
end the Duke of Berry, Duke of Anjou,
Sicily, went to Amiens to confer with him;
went with a good Guard, his Wicked Act
no Security but Force, and there he prom
turn to Paris and justify himself before the
vided they kept no Guards at the City Gate

In the *Interim* the Dutcheſs of Orleans, v
Blois when her Husband was affaffinated, car
with her three Sons, Charles, Philip and
whom the eldest was not above fourteen, t
Complaints to the King; but finding little Su
the disconsolate Widow knowing her Husb
derer was returning, she went back again
Children to Blois, and left the Duke to con
in Feb. this year, at the head of 800 Gent
armed from head to foot, only they wore
Helmets: He was received by the Queen a
with all Demonstrations of Confidence, but
not prevail with him to own the Murder
only he gave a Commission for it to John P
delier, and Doctor in Divinity, who was to
rator; and having obtained Audience for
great Hall of the *Hotel de St. Paul*, the
Divine endeavoured before the Princes and
make it appear, that the Duke of Orleans h
very way a Tyrant, and was guilty of the
Lese Majestatis both Divine and Human; th
once bewitched the King, another time co
murder him, and once endeavoured to have h
sed by the Pope; that therefore his Death
and necessary: But it was not the Monk's
that did the Work, it was fatal Necessity, a
of Danger that induced the Council to give hi
in Writing that abolished the Crime, and i
ance reconciled the Duke to the Queen; bu
mere shew and nothing of reality, as you'll
and by.

D. of Bur-
gundy ac-
quitted of
the Mur-
der of Or-
leans.

1408.

But we are first to shew, how the King wa
deavouring to put an end to the Collusion of
Popes, and therefore he resolved to publish a
for Subtraction the 15th of May: In the m

Benedict having Intelligence of it, sent his Bulls *bris*, forbidding him to do so upon pain of Excommunication; but those that brought them, who were *de Lupi*, and a Groom belonging to the Pope's es, having delivered them to the King and the of *Berry*, were immediately seized; upon which Council sat three days, and having heard the Oms and Remonstrances of the University, the caused a Penknife to be stuck into the Bulls, h the Rector of the University afterwards cut in es. Hereupon the Subtraction was published, and Person that brought the Bulls tried and sentenced e drawn upon a Sledg twice about the Palace- d, then mounted upon a Scaffold, where being a- ned with Paper Mitres, and clothed in long paint- Vests after the *Dalmatian* Fashion, upon which *edict's* Arms were fastned, they were severely re- manded by a Divine, and then led back to Prison. ers Prelates and Clergymen that took their part e also sent to Goal. Upon this news the two Popes pretended to be going to *Savona*, fled each his own , *Benedict* by a Gally to *Catalonia*, and *Gregory* by d to *Sienna*, where at present we must leave them. o resume therefore the Thred of the *Burgundian's* ceedings; when he was returned again to *Artois*, Dutcheff of *Orleans* supported by the Queen, came troy the King that he would bear her Quarter, the

ter; the *Orleans Party* en t
instead of falling upon n
cause now more to consult to
Ruin: The Queen not be ing ne
went from thence on the 13th of
the Duke of *Bretagne* her Son-in-law, &
with her to *Tours*.

The Duke being informed of all t
Parisians, soon got to *Paris* with 4000
Foot mounted behind them, where
with great Joy, and they sent for
King to desire him to return. *Win-*
land offered to accommodate matters, an
Negotiation was set on foot, which bei
ced, the Widow of *Orleans*, a haughty
Princess, died with Grief for it; so that
were necessitated to make a Reco liath
Father's Murderer, and the sa s'con
the end of *March* at *Chartres*,
Queen, and the Princes being on a Se
the Cathedral, but pallisadoed rou
People from seeing what they did,
fell upon his Knees before the King, pra
his Advocate and then by himself to lay
pleasure, and receive him into his Fa
the Murder, all that he said was, th
justify himself: The Princes that were th
in like manner, and joined their Req
addressing himself to the Princes o
fired them to forgive what was past, a
Revenge in their Hearts, upon which
embrace and promise to be Friends to offe
for the farther cementing of this
riage was agreed on between the
Burgundian, and *Philip* Count of *Vermans*,
the three Brothers.

Reconciled
to the
King.

1409.

The Peace being thus concluded, i
to *Paris*, and the *Burgundian* to the
whence he came back in *July*, and to
stration upon him; and to give to
the People, by shewing his dissil
procured the Council to cite the *Fin*
most of whom got off for Money

Superintendent his Life: He was the Son of a mean Montaigne citizen of *Paris*, whom the King's Favour, without Merit of his own, had raised to the Office of Chamberlain and-master of his Household, and his Brothers to be Bishops of *Sens* and *Paris*; besides that his Ambition had prompted him to marry his Son to a Daughter of the Constable d' *Albret*, and his Daughters to the greatest Lords of the Kingdom: Tho he had been very serviceable in negotiating the Treaty of *Charlottenburg*, yet the Duke of *Burgundy* and King of *Naples* conspired to ruin him, because it was his Advice that the King should be carried to *Tours*; where he was charged with divers hainous Crimes, and they took their Opportunity, when the King, who had a great Kindness for him, was in one of his Fits, to have him seized by the Provost of *Paris*, examined by Commissioners of Parliament, and cruelly tormented on the Rack; but tho all his Sufferings could not draw a Confession from him, he was beheaded, just before which he voluntarily owned he had imbezelled the King's Treasure. At this examination of the Officers, it was ordered that all the Receivers should make their Account before the Earls of *Marche*, *Vendosme*, and *Paul*; and that till they had done so, nothing should be allowed without Receipts and Vouchers: The Receivers were also all turned out, and the manage-

Tuition; but required that they should govern w
Advice of the Dukes of *Berry* and *Burgundy*,
last usurped all the Authority.

1410.
*Bird-fight-
ing.*

We find in Historians, that there were now
bloody Battels fought betwixt Birds of all Sort
amongst the smallest, as Sparrows and the lil
Domestick Fowl were not free herefrom: And
supposed to have proceeded from certain mir
dies spread in the Air, which pricked and i
them to that degree as to fall foul upon one.
It was this Year also that the Storks in *Hayna*
observed to league with the Herons and Pyes, a
Battel to the Ravens, who in their Flocks ha
and Choughs; but the former gained the Vict
like manner some Crows or Ravens in the Co
Liege, having insulted over a Falcon, and b
the Eggs in its Airy, there were seen the nex
that very place a vast number of Birds of bot
kinds, who fought most obstinately, till the
betook themselves to flight, after a very great
ter.

But to leave this Airy way of fighting,
thought to have been good Advice, in order to
ing of all Discord asleep, to imploy all the F
France in a War against the *English*, under the
pretence of revenging King *Richard's* Death,
Nobility went about it with much Resolution;
Envy which other Princes had to the Great
the Duke of *Burgundy* who sat at the Helm, b
the Design: For about the end of *Aug.* the
Berry and *Bourbon*, having made a League
with the House of *Orleans* and the Duke of B
the Earls of *Alençon*, *Clermont*, and *Armagna*
were all his Friends, they sent to make their I
of the King; and hereupon every one arm
the King's Command to the contrary signified
on they went with their Levies, the *Burgund*
ing to little purpose offered them Peace, did
part make use of the King's Authority to sum
Arriereban to appear, and put ten thousand i
Paris, while the Duke of *Berry* and the other
took up their head Quarters at the Castle of I
and began the War; The Neighbourhood of P

aten up by two hundred thousand hungry Soldiers, that about the end of *November* when all Provisions were consumed, both Parties were necessitated to come to an Accommodation: And it was agreed the take of *Burgundy* should go out of *Paris*, and the take of *Berry* not go into it; that they two should nominate some Lords to take care for them of the government and the Dauphin's Person; that the King should choose a Council of twelve Persons of good name, whose Names he should communicate to them; that all the Princes should withdraw with their Troops, and that none of them should return near the King, unless commanded by Letters under the Great Seal, and writ in Council.

The *Burgundian* sincerely obeyed, and forthwith retired; but the Duke of *Orleans* and his Party began immediately to make new Levies, while the Queen and the Duke of *Berry* remained neutral, but offered to be Mediators. The King talked high, and commanded them to disarm; the *Burgundian* lay quiet and obedient, but the Princes of *Orleans* with Sword in hand demanded Justice for the Death of their Father. At last after many Letters and fruitless Negotiations, *Orleans* sent a very sharp Challenge to the *Burgundian*, who answered in the same Terms: The King had ordered the Queen and Duke of *Berry*, who were at *Melun*, to negotiate a Peace: and sent Persons thither that

*New
Brill.*

1411.

Party, and these wore a white Bead and a Cross with right Angles; and the *Burgundians* who bore the *St. Andrew's Cross*. The best of the Citizens of *Paris* inclined to the first, the common People to the second; from whence proceeded many Murders, Plunderings and Proscriptions, according as the Success varied on either side: The *Burgundian's* Party was the strongest, having the King, the Dauphin or Duke of *Guyenne*, and City of *Paris* on that side, so that they displaced the Provost of the Merchants, and imprisoned and banished several of the adverse Party. In the mean time the Forces under the Duke of *Orleans* ravaged *Picardy*, and seized upon *Montleberry*, upon which they perswaded the Duke of *Guyenne* to oblige the King to recal the *Burgundians* to his Assistance, who embracing the opportunity, entred with sixty thousand Men into *Picardy*, besieged and took *Ham*, yet could proceed no further, for the Contest about the Plunder of that Place generated a mortal Dissension between the *Picards* and *Flemings*, whereof the Duke's Army consisted; insomuch that the Duke of *Orleans* approaching near with his Forces, the *Picards* forsook the other, the *Flemings* withdrew, and the Duke thomuch against his Will along with them. But it fell out luckily for him and his Troops, that the greedy Desire the Enemy had after the Plunder and Spoil of *Paris*, prevented them from pursuing and destroying them; for they marched immediately to block up that great City, took *St. Dennis*, the Tower of *St. Cloud*, by the Treachery of the Governor, and fired the Houses of such Citizens as were not of the Faction; in retribution of which the Company of Butchers, already mentioned, went and burnt the Castle of *Wicestre*, which belonged to the Duke of *Berry*.

Paris blocked up by the Orleanois.

The Party of *Orleans* thought themselves so cocksure of taking *Paris*, that they had already agreed on their respective Shares in the Spoil; when the Duke of *Burgundy* returned with a Relief of *English*, braved *Burgundy*. broke through the midst of his Enemies, and on the 30th of *October* got into the City, where he was received as the Deliverer of the Kingdom. After which the Enemies Party declined, *St. Cloud* was forced from

on them with the loss of nine hundred Gentlemen, their Blockade they raised themselves; and having drawn all their Forces together at *St. Dennis*, they treated in disorder over the Bridges which they had crossed over the *Seine*, all the misfortunes that attend a routed Party fell upon them; for the victorious *Burgundian* caused them to be excommunicated and proscribed, pursued every way, sold their Effects, imprisoned all their Friends and Servants, turned *Albret* the Constable, *Hugueville* the Grand Master of the Cross-Bows, and *De Rieux* the Marechal, to take away for the Count of *St. Paul*, *Rambures* and *Anguy*, to come into their Places: Besides all this, all the neighbouring Cities about *Paris* entred into the same Interests; *Orleans* alone sided with the Princes; nay *Guyenne* and *Languedoc* submitted, and re-stituted the Government of the Duke of *Berry*.

The *Orleans* Party being now reduced to a despairing State, and finding themselves ruined, even in those Provinces where they had been strongest, they entred into an Alliance with the *English*, upon Terms very onerous to *France*; so that King *Charles* being recovered again to his Health, and finding the Treaty need on, vowed their utter destruction as his great-Enemies: In pursuance of which he set up his standard of *Ori Flamme* against them, went in Person to besiege the Duke of *Berry* in *Bourges*, and marched *K. Charles*

1412.

Picards forsook the other
the Duke tho much against
But it fell out luckily for
the greedy Desire the
and Spoil of *Paris*, prevented
Paris being
ed up by the
Orleanois.
stroying them; for they man-
up that great City, took *St.*
Cloud, by the Treachery
fired the Houses of such Cruel
Faction; in retribution of
Butchers, already mentioned,
Castle of *Wicestre*, which be-
Berry.

tre of them having furrounded the Bastile, *Tametsi*
 them went and pitched their City Banner *in Paris,*
 Duke of Guyenne's Houſe, who appearing *and the*
 ſhow in order to appeaſe their Fury, *Effects of*
 underſtand, that they were come thither *them.*
 to remove thoſe from about him who
 corrupted his Youth with evil Counſel
 ſed; upon which the Chancelour deſiring
 ſed, they gave in a Liſt, wherein he
 came to be the very firſt, and they forced
 ſaid twice over; an Example not un-
 have had in our own Age and
 Perſon that was then the Mouth in a
 ſation. But to proceed, they at the
 the Gates open, and after a ſtrict
 above twenty Perſons, of which
 Duke of Bar the King's Couſin,
 Chancellor, and *Le Riviere* his
 they carried Priſoners to the
 the very next day *Eſſards* ſur-
 and himſelf to the Duke of
 him very cloſe in the *Chaftelet*,
 of a Deſign to have carried
 of Guyenne away. The Uni-
 theſe factious People: The
 ſuch bold Attempts, tho
 that the Duke of Guyenne
 and Correction.

tage. The Treaty having been ratified at *Melun*, they carried the King, whom they found to relapsing to his old Distemper, to *Melun*, and thence when he was somewhat better to *Paris*.

Now the University and honest Citizens of the only Members of the State that were not corrupted, observing that the Great Men, as were in Offices, desired no other than the continuance of those Troubles, that so they might have a better opportunity of fleecing the People; besides unless the same were prevented, they had undertaken to conquer *Guyenne*; they put the King, who ever had a good Inclination to reform the Government, that so he might be better enabled to oppose them. Upon this therefore he called a Convention of Notables towards the end of *January*, where the University thoroughly represented and set forth all the disorders in the Administration of the Revenue, the Judicature, Chancery, choice of Officers of the Mint; and such as were found guilty were removed, nor even the Chancellor *Corbie* himself were Commissioners chosen out of the three Estates to reform the State in all these Particulars. Neither could the Princes nor others in Power be obliged to be honest, they must have been losers by it, especially those that were the Dauphin or Duke of *Guyenne*. Indeed the Dauphin, Prince, who was but sixteen Years of Age, was crafty, inconstant and debauch'd; besides, he was given up in all manner of Licentiousness and as to Gaming, Women, Feasting, and vain dissipation, which was still worse, in Maxims of irregular government. The Sycophants put it into his Head to be absolute Master of *France*, *Paris* must be disarmed, and the Citizens disarmed, whom he might burden with Taxes as he pleased; it was by such Advice that he seized on the Dauphiny, which the Citizens being alarmed, the Duke of *Burgundy* under-hand exasperated the People and company of Butchers; and having got ten or twelve thousand Men together, with *Troyes* a Chief for the Head of them, they ran all about the

A Convention of Notables called.

1413.

Dauphin's Character.

ne part of them having surrounded the *Bastile*, *Tumults*
st of them went and pitched their City Banner *in Paris,*
the Duke of *Guyenne's* House, who appearing *and the*
Window in order to appease their Fury, *Troyes*
him to understand, that they were come thither *effects of*
a resolution to remove those from about him who
ievously corrupted his Youth with evil Counsel
otherwise; upon which the Chancellour desiring
to be named, they gave in a List, wherein he
d his own Name to be the very first, and they forced
to read it aloud twice over; an Example not un-
to which we have had in our own Age and
gdom, in a Person that was then the Mouth in a
ner of the Nation. But to proceed, they at the
e time beat the Gates open, and after a strict
rch carried away above twenty Persons, of which
ber were the Duke of *Bar* the King's Cousin,
Vailly the Duke's Chancellor, and *Le Riviere* his
amberlain, whom they carried Prisoners to the
more; upon which the very next day *Essards* sur-
dred both the *Bastile* and himself to the Duke of
gundy, who kept him very close in the *Chastelet*,
ause he had been accused of a Design to have carried
King and the Duke of *Guyenne* away. The Uni-
ity refus'd to join with these factious People: The
nces of the Blood abominated such bold Attempts, tho
in their House, that the Duke of *Guyenne*

content with this Insolence, obliged the King was going one day to *Nostredame* to put on Hood; and two days after went to the *St. Paul*, and by his Spokesman *Pavilly* in the King's Presence the Imprisonment of the *Guyenne's* Servants, and named many more yet to be rooted out; then addressing himself Duke, he required them to be delivered up, all the Intreaties he could make they took great many more, not only private Gentles likewise *Lewis* of *Bavaria* the Queen's Brother several Ladies that belonged to her, to the Duke *Guyenne* and the Countess of *Charolais*, who accused as Instruments of most pernicious and dissolute Actions at Court.

Severe
Executions.

Indeed the Duke of *Burgundy* was not grounds charged with adding Fuel to this in effect he could not govern these hot Spirits would: In the mean time all were forced to, to this Torrent, the King submitted to allow bring their Prisoners to a Trial, to go to Paris in his white Hood, and publish Orders for re Abuses, touching his Revenue; to displace the cellor *Corbie*, and to deliver up to execution a man belonging to the Duke of *Guyenne*, and *Effards*, whose Heads were chopped off; while *viere* the Duke's Chamberlain, to avoid so great misery, beat out his own Brains with a drinker or was slain by *Jaquville* a Captain of *Paris* son; but however it happened, they dragged to the Gallows, as one in Despair and guilty of

This violent Government could not last long *enne* privately agreed with the confederated the King's Name was made use of, and the of confirming the Peace of *Chartres* that fully executed, made them enter into a Compact with them at *Verneuil*: Their Deputies being come to wait upon the King at *Paris*, tho' they did all they could to stop the Negotiation could not prevent so good a Work from going bring matters about, an Interview was proposed between the Dukes of *Berry* and *Burgundy*, then ference by Deputies concerning the other P

the better sort of People, together with the
and Parliament, inclined to an Accommo-
Indeed the *Burgundian* had but little Stomach
promising to himself but a slender Advantage

However the Peace was concluded on the
August at *Pontoise*, and the King agreed the

A Peace
made.

bold come and wait upon him at *Paris*.
g done, *Guyenne* at the Head of the honest
of *Paris*, of whom he had got above thirty

Men well provided together, marched thro
ts; upon which the Heads of the Seditious
who held the *Bastile*, *Lowvre*, Palace and
all, quitted those Places and withdrew; then
freed the Prisoners, changed the Sheriffs,
the new made Chancellor, and restored the
Corbie, who gave them to *De Marle* the

gent. The Duke of *Burgundy* thinking him-
not too safe, and having got the King one day
hunting, he suddenly took leave of him, and
bidding *Paris* adieu hastned to *Flanders*,
the Retreat there was an absolute Revolution

The Bur-
gundian
retires, and
the Conse-
quence of it.

etc. And the Duke of *Orleans* got so much
King's Favour, that he would have him always
in his Train, and wear the same Clothes as himself;
the Duke of *Burgundy's* Creatures were re-
tained many of the Seditious executed or banish-

they proceeded farther to make the Decla-

1414.

fore *Paris*, tho the King had forbid him to co upon the Penalty of high Treason; where fir King made a thundring Declaration against retreated with much confusion, every body after him, *Stop the Traitor, Stop the Murderer* upon the King went to *St. Dennis*, set up *Flamme*, and summoned the *Ban* and *Arrie* appear against him; he took *Compeigne* upon and *Soissons* by Force, the same being miseraed, and *Bournonville* who had defended it to most had his Head cut off. The Duke of was undoubtedly in great Consternation and still more when the *Flemings* refused to se but sent Deputies to the King to tender him Obedience: To which we must add, that th of *Bapume* by the Duke of *Bourbon* increa Astonishment, he sent the Earl of *Nevers* his then the Countess of *Haynault* his Sister, to t and after that the Duke of *Brabant* his other who made several Journeys to Court, to er to appease his displeasure; but nothing le's w than the Confiscation of all his Estate. It w for him the King fell ill again; for taking a little in that Interval, he got into *Arras*, whither the brought the King to besiege it; but the Place an obstinate Defence, and being perhaps inc thereunto by the Advice of some of the B and the *French* Army growing tired and wea Sickness, the Countess of *Haynault* laid hold opportunity, and so earnestly solicited the *Guyenne*, who had now all the Authority, tha out consulting the other Princes he granted a the Duke of *Burgundy*: And the Articles wer the 16th of *October* at *Quesnoy*, which bore ha the *Burgundian*, for five hundred of his Men be excluded from the Indemnity; several belonging to the King, Queen and Dauphin favoured him, were to be removed; he hims not to come near the Court without the King's Order under the Great Seal, and by the A the Council: And it was added, that for the Honour, his Colours should be pitched up Walls of *Arras*, the Governor displaced, a

Peace between the
Burgundian and
the French
King.

obliged to take an Oath of Fidelity to the

have taken no notice of what the *English* did
Sea and Land these two years last past, as
no great Importance; however we must ob-
serve that they conquered several Places in *Guyenne*,
with the Assistance of the Earl of *Armagnac*, and the
Duke of *Albret* who sided with them, because they had
been banished from Court. There was such Animosity
between the two Nations, as would admit of no Peace;
Henry V. now King of *England*, sought to
form an Alliance with the *French*, for his better Sup-
port against the unruly humour of his Subjects, and in
this year his Ambassadors were sent to make
overtures, and require *Catherine* the King's Daughter
in Marriage for that Prince, agreeing to a Truce for
three years. In the mean time the Treaty concerning
Peace and Match was continued, and three or four
Embassies passed on either side: The *French*
King offered *England* 800000 Florins in Gold,
and gave up to him fifteen Cities in *Guyenne*, and all *Li-
bourne* for a Portion to the Princess *Catherine*. *Henry*
seemed to hearken to these Proposals; but
having greater Thoughts in his Mind, he demand-
ed something new every day to hinder the concluding.
His real Design was to prosecute the Right of

The Reign of Charles VI. Box

ces were ready, he made no scruple to declare intentions, and when he had writ Letters full of Promises and Threats to the King, whom he stiled Cousin *Charles* of *France*, he embarked and sailed for *Havre de Grace*, at the Mouth of the *Seine*, with ten thousand Men at Arms, thirty thousand Archers, and all other Necessaries in proportion, and laid Siege to *Harfleur*; the Place made a brave defence, but was at last taken by Assault and sacked, perhaps not without some secret Correspondence, or at least the Discovery or Baseness of the *French* Generals, who took great care to relieve it; however the whole was laid upon the Constable d' *Albret*.

But tho this Success was considerable to the *English*, yet having lost a great many of their Men in their Attacks, by Diseases and Scarcity of Provisions, they were forced to keep close together, and reduced to great Straits; insomuch that King *Henry*, having for three Weeks together kept along the Coasts, he was forced to move in earnest, and his March towards *Calais*, cross the Country of the Earldom of *Flanders*, and the Lands of *Vimeu*, he design to pass the *Soame* at *Blanquetaque*: The *French* Army, who were as yet but a confused Multitude in haste, durst not attack them in their main (so strange they were so ill provided) but when *Charles*, who was come in Person to *Roan*, with fourteen thousand men at Arms, and all the Princes of the Blood, except the Dukes of *Guyenne*, *Berry*, and *Burgundy*, it was resolved they should make a Battle to the *English*, who being much tired and otherwise in an ill Condition, and seeing the *French* to be four times stronger than themselves, and consequently fearing they should be utterly lost, came to an Engagement, they thought it the most advisable way to send to offer them Reparation for the Damages done by them since their Landing in *France*. But the hot-headed *French*, refusing a reasonable Offer, and grown nothing wiser from their Losses to the distressed and desperate *English* in former Engagements, advanced the next day being the 25th of *Octob.* and presented them Battle. The first Blow they committed, was in not strongly guard-

over the *Seine*, whereby they might have run
 their Enemy; whereas instead of that, they went
 to them on the other side of the River, and
 met them at *Agincourt* in the County of *St. The Battel*
 of *Agin-*
 court, much the same Causes, that made them of *Agin-*
 court, *Cressy* and *Poitiers*, made them to court.
 I mean the Necessary and desperate
 in the *English* were reduced to on the one hand,
 nothing of the bravery of their Prince, and
 nor and Discipline of his Soldiers; and on the
 and their own violent Precipitation, the Confu-
 rein they fought, all the Commanders striving
 the head; besides a Grand Fault in the ill Or-
 their Van, which was drawn up so close, that
 the first Ranks had room to stir; to which
 added the Inconveniency of the Soil, that was
 d slippery with the Rain, and withal so deep, that
 od to the mid-leg in Mire. The Field of Bat-
 bestrewed with the slaughtered Bodies of 6000
 to 1600 of the *English*: And amongst the
 of the first were the Earl of *Nevers* and the
 of *Brabant*, Brothers to the Duke of *Burgundy*,
 ke of *Alençon*, the Constable d' *Albret*, the
 of *Bar*, the *Mareschal de Boucicaut*, the *Admi-*
pierr, Archbishop of *Sens*, Brother to *Mon-*
 formerly mentioned to have been beheaded, and

ed away to entertain a Mistress; they promised Satisfaction in this last point, the other he could not obtain, but had express command not to approach save only with his own Servants; but this he was no means adventure to do, since he found all his were imprisoned, his Soldiers hung up where they were met with, and the Count of *Arma* greatest Enemy sent for to take the Office of Regent upon him; however he staid a while to see the Event of things in that critical situation.

Dauphin's
Death.

Indeed the Evils of the Government proceeded chiefly from evil Counsellors, who from private interests promoted Differences between the Prince and the People, plunged the young Duke of *Guyenne* or Dauphin, you please to call him, in all manner of Debates of which the University and Parliament made Complaints, and moved that Prince so much, promised a greater Regularity; but soon afterwards sick of a Looseness, he died on the 25th of June without visible Marks of Poison: His second Son *John* Earl of *Tourain* being next in Succession, having married the Earl of *Haynault's* Daughter, carried him into that Country, from whence the *Frenchmen* wished his return to inform himself of the Affairs of the Government. In the mean time to shew the Peoples Affections, and to shew he was not a weak man, he commanded both sides to lay down their Arms; upon which the *Burgundians* took the opportunity to retire home from *Lagny*, being much that his Enemies should deride and call him *Lagny*, not much in haste.

1416.

In the Interim, the Emperor *Sigismund*, being desirous to procure the Peace of the Church, amongst Christian Princes, made a Journey into France, and then into *England*, but without Success, the Constable refused the Truce for four years he had proposed between the two Crowns. The Emperor was magnificently treated at *Paris*, and allowed, if he pleased, to take his Place in Parliament; but they did not relish well that he should upon that occasion assume the Authority of Knighting the King; however it was about this time that he erected

of *Savoy* into a Dutchy, which last now be-
 come be looked upon as a more honorary Title,
 as before they were esteemed equally eminent.
 Grace being rejected as aforesaid, *France* had mis-
 e upon misfortune, the Constable was defeated *The Calamities of*
Harfleur by the *English*, and the Siege-raised, *France.*
French Fleet beaten; the *Burgundians* made conti-
 nuous incursions into its Territories; the Duke of *Berry*,
 was the only Person most likely to allay these
 wars, died; the King of *England* landed a se-
 nior at *Tonques*, and took divers Places in *Nor-*
 mandy; besides all which, both Parties strove to make
 alliance with him, but the Duke of *Burgundy*
 lost Industry and Forwardness, being enraged
 to have been put out of the Government; and the
 Duke of *Haynault* his Cousin, to get a Support for the
 Duke of *John* his Son-in-law, whom the *Orleans* Fac-
 tion would deprive of his Right, in order to advance
 the Duke of *Pontieu* his younger Brother before him:
 On the other hand, the new Governor rendered him-
 self more odious by new Exactions, without a-
 fairness, Equality or Justice, laid upon the Cler-
 gy as well as Laity, for which the *Parisians* heartily
 desired the Duke of *Burgundy's* Return, and indeed *A Plot dis-*
 covered a Conspiracy discovered to have introduced covered.
 for which the principal Parties lost their

John the
Dauphin
imprisoned.

the Dauphin at *Compeigne*: But not being able to obtain the return of the *Burgundian*, he threatened to carry the Dauphin home with him; upon which he had thoughts to detain him, till the Dauphin was worn up, but he having private notice of the Design, made his Escape; however these villanous People abused themselves of the poor Dauphin, by another more wicked way, which was to give him Poison, which he died on the 13th of *April*.

The Queen
in Dis-
grace.

Upon this his Brother *Charles*, a sworn Enemy to the House of *Burgundy*, succeeded to the Title of Dauphin and Duke of *Tourain*; as also to a Right of inheriting the Crown, to the great Joy and Satisfaction of his Father-in-law the Duke of *Anjou*, who was much suspected to have had some hand in the removal of the two eldest Brothers out of the way, to make way for his Son-in-law; however it did not last long, for his Joy was not long lived, for he died in *August*. The King's Person, the Dauphin and the City of *Paris* were all this time in the hands of the Duke of *Armagnac*, the Queen only was some Countenance to his Power; but her Family living with too much Freedom and Licentiousness, it was easy for them to fill the King's Head with Jealousies against her; inasmuch that he commanded one *Boureau* to be taken thence and thrown into the River, as being concerned in those Intrigues, and then he confined the Queen away as it were in the Nature of a Prison, at *Tours*, for which she could never forgive him, and the Dauphin her own Son, the same having been by his Consent, tho he was not then above sixteen of Age.

Now the Queen's Confinement, the late Death of the two Dauphins, the plundering of the Country by the unpaid Soldiers, and the Depredations of the *Armagnacs*, who robbed the very Soldiers of the Churches, furnished the Duke of *Burgundy* with very specious pretences to publish his Manifesto to send to all the principal Cities for their Assistance to restore the King to his Liberty; and indeed part of those in *Champagne*, *Picardy* and the rest of *France* received him with open Arms, because he took down all Subsidies: However all this signified

he could get into *Paris*, wherefore he march-
 und it, either nearer or farther off, for two
 hs together, according to the Intelligence he had
 his Friends that were in the Place. And whilst
 s besieging *Corbeil*, he hastned with some Troops
 orse to *Tours*; and having had a Conference with
 een at *Marmoustier*, whither she was come on
 se under pretence of taking the Air, he brought
 th him to *Troyes*, and from thence forward she
 d the Regency.

ny V. King of *England* in so favourable a Con- English
 re was too wise to let it slip, and therefore he *successful*
 l on his Conquests with great Vigour; *Caen*, *Bay-* in *France*.
Coutance, *Carenton*, *Lisieux*, *Falaise*, *Argentan*,
 w, and in short the greatest part of *Normandy*
 d to him without scarce a Blow given, only
 urch defended it self against the *English* for three
 is; and yet so mad were the Factious at this time,
 he Constable chose rather the Kingdom should be
 an his Authority, and the Duke of *Burgundy*
 ted rather to have it dismembred by the *English*,
 overned by his Enemy.

e Bennet dying about this time, and *Otho Colon-*
 the Name of *Martin* being elected into the Papal
 he immediately used his endeavours to make
 in *France*. and therefore dispatched two Car-

Burgun-
dians get
into Paris.

been drawn to side with them upon this ill Manag-
In short, those of his Party being assured
Duke's Affection, they introduced into the
Philip de Villiers, *L'Isle Adam* Governor of P
by the Gate of *St. Germain's*, upon the 8th o
at Night with 800 Horse, and cried out, *Pe*
Burgundy; the People did not stir till they c
the Streets of *St. Dennis* and *St. Honore*, wh
got out from all parts and joined them: The
hearing the Noise, presently took the Dauphin
his Bed, and wrapping him up in his Night-Gov
veyed him to the *Bastile*, and thence to *Melun*;
King remained in the Power of the *Burgundian*
dispersing themselves all the City over, fell up
Houses of the *Armagnacs*, and searched ther
top to bottom; some plundered the Goods, a
ried the Money away, but they were most inter
seizing their Persons; and those were least u
that were coop'd up in private Places till th
paid their Ransoms: Most of them were h
Prisons, whither a great many fled of the
Accord, to avoid other Inconveniencies; the
cellor was seized the very same day, and imp
in the Palace; and the next the Constable was
thither also, he had hid himself in a Mason's
but a Proclamation being made for discovering
Armagnacs upon pain of Death, his Landlo
duced him.

Burgun-
dians Cru-
elty to the
Armag-
nacs.

Now the Exiles being come back from diver
with Indignation and Revenge in their Heart
the cruellest Mutiny that ever was known;
gan with the Palace, from whence they took
Constable and Chancellor, murdered them, a
posed their Bodies to publick View; from then
went to the Prisons, massacred the Bishops o
and *De Coustances* in the little Chastellet, and
the rest throw themselves headlong down from
of the Towers, most barbarously received the
upon the Points of their Swords and Javelins
was no part of the City that was not stain
the Blood they spilt, there having been ne
thousand People slain by them, whose Carcass
dragg'd into the Fields, with deep Incisions

their Backs, in the Form of a Band or Scarf, as the Signal that Party had marked themselves for distinction sake: Such as were found with them were accounted worse than Hereticks, and they were enied to bury them, or baptize their Children, whether it were Policy or no, the Duke of *Burgundy* did not come to *Paris* till a Month after *L'Isle* had made himself Master of it; but then the Duke and he made their Publick Entry on the 14th and that in so triumphant a manner as if they were returned from the Conquest of some new Country, there being nothing heard in the Streets but the sound of Instrumental Musick: But yet their Presence did not put a stop to the bloody Hands of the *Armagnacs*, for whoever had Money or an Enemy, and a Benefice, was an *Armagnac*; the vilest and wickedest made themselves the Ring-Leaders of the rascally Crew; nay the very Hangman was one of them, and he had so much Impudence as to shake the Duke of *Burgundy* by the Hand, who did not know till August 21st, there was another great Commotion, led by that infamous Villain as their Captain; they killed above two hundred Persons, and among others some that lived in the Duke's House; perhaps they would have carried it home to him, had he not been provided against that Rabble, he

mands of the presumptive Heir to the Crown what side soever they took to, they were sure treated as Rebels: However by the great Aid of the Duke of *Bretagne* the Breach was made the second time, and all the Articles were agreed at *St. Maurdes Fosses*; but those that influenced the Dauphin hindered him from ratifying them, so there was only a Truce agreed on for three Years, inasmuch that the Duke proving dissatisfied with the unsincerity of either Party, which prevented the Success of his Mediation, retired home and re-asserted his antient Alliance with the *English*, only for his own Defence. But as things frequently happen in a vain World, when the Duke thought himself secure, he found himself fallen into the greatest danger. *Margaret de Clisson*, the Widow of *John de Blois* of *Ponticure*, never left exciting her four Sons to seize upon his Person, that they might enter upon the Duchy of *Bretagne*, which she told them was her Inheritance; and the Dauphin on the other hand being dissatisfied that the *Breton* did not take up Arms against the *English*, made an under-hand Treaty with those Brothers, and gave them Letters and Orders to prosecute their Design; to effect which they used the Artifice they could to get into the Duke's Chamber, and at last prevailed with him to go and dine with himself at their House of *Chantocéaux* in *Anjou*, being attended with his Brother *Richard* and *Retinue*, *Oliver* the eldest of the four caused the Duke to be seized by forty Horse, and carried with his Arms bound to the Castle of *Paluan* in *Normandy* from whence they were removed from one place to another all the Year round; and divers Reports were purposely spread, sometimes that they died of Hunger, at other times that they were drowned, or that they were taken in Pilgrimage to *Jerusalem*, there to end their Days. But for all this, the *Bretons* were so far from being satisfied with the Brothers, that they raised a great Army of Dutchess above 50000 Men to recover her Husband, and they so straitned *Margaret de Clisson* at *Chantocéaux*, that she dispatched a Message to her Son to intreat him if ever he expected to see her again, to release the Duke, which was done according

Duke of
Bretagne
taken Pri-
soner.

1419.

four Brothers afterwards paid dear for it. During these Broils the Brave *Henry King of England* laid Siege to *Rome*, which was gallantly defended by the Besieged: Indeed the Place was of that Importance, and the constant Fidelity of the Citizens so remarkable, that they tried divers ways to save it; first they endeavoured to treat with King *Henry* at the Marriage of *Catherine of France* with him, the Mediation of the Pope's Legates, who for that purpose carried that beautiful Princess's Picture to him: that Project not taking, and the King making Demands as they thought too high to be complied with, they drew some Forces together, and carried *Charles* as far as *Beauvais*; but thinking they were too weak to attempt its Relief, the Besieged left themselves to the Dauphin, who tho' this Jewel of the Crown was so near being lost, took no care of it, as looking upon the Place rather as belonging to the Duke of *Burgundy* than *France*. It were the miseries they underwent, no less than by thousand Persons died of Famine, and were forced to eat their very Bed-Straw, and the Leather they could come at: The King of *France* refusing to admit them any other Terms of Surrender than at Discretion, they undermined five hundred Rods of their Wall, and in their great ex-



But notwithstanding this Conquest there was negotiation carried on between the two Kings, and at the same time between the Factions of *Armagnacs* and *Burgundians*: At length there was a Truce agreed for three Months between the Kings, after which there was an Interview near *Melun*, to conclude Peace and Marriage; on the other hand the Duke was for a Truce for three Years, and his Opponent Duke of *Burgundy* for two Months only; his being this, that if within that time he could not perfect Agreement with the Dauphin, they with united Force fall upon the *English* at the expiration of the Truce; if not, he would make a Peace with them, that he might be in a better condition to quell the Dauphin's Party: The first therefore proceeding, the Interview was fixed, but the French King falling ill at *Paris*, the Queen supplied his Place, and carried thither the Princess *Catherine*, whom the King of *England* sought in Marriage; they met and conversed frequently for almost three Weeks together, the King of *England* coming from *Mantes*, and the Queen from *Pontoise*. Now the Dauphin's Council knowing what they were about, he solicited the Duke of *Burgundy* to come to an Accommodation, and flattered him with a perfect Reconciliation, which the Duke desired; and therefore he began to stand upon Terms with the *English*, and would scarce accept of any thing they demanded, but at last quite altered the Treaty, being intent upon nothing more than to accommodate matters with the Dauphin: To this they had a Conference in the open Field near *le Fort*, within two Leagues of *Melun*, between the two Armies, attended each of them with half a Hundred Horse, where they made a Treaty, by which they swore to love and assist one another like true Friends, and submit themselves in case of failure to the Judgment of the See of *Rome*; after which they parted to meet upon the Bridge of *Montereau* *France* on August 18th, each accompanied with ten thousand men to terminate all Disputes in a most amicable manner.

Now the Servants of the late Duke of *Burgundy*, more particularly *Du Chastel* and *Louvet* of *Provence*, having contrived these Interviews

Treaty
with the
English
broke off.

other Design than to find an opportunity to
 urge the Death of their late Master upon him
 was the Author of it; tho they could not
 tempt it at *Povilly*, they put things here into a bet-
 Posture, and contrived some Barriers, which tho
 outward Appearance seemed to be made for no o-
 end than the mutual Safety of both Princes, yet
 ed as a Snare to trap the unfortunate *Burgundian*,
 indeed made the Dauphin wait fifteen days for
 there, being withheld from going thither by the
 opportunity of his Friends and his own Judgment;
 at length the Power of his evil Destiny hurried
 on to his Destruction by the horrid Treachery of
 second *Dalila*, the Lady *Gyac* his Mistress; and to
 are him the better, they delivered up to him the
 Isle of *Montereau*, but without Provision or Ar-
 try; from whence he went down to the Bridg
 h his ten Men, whom he placed as a Guard at the
 of it; and while he was kneeling before the Dau-
 n, *Du Chastel* and some others jumping over the
 riers dispatched him by several Wounds, and only *The Duke*
 of his Men was wounded in his Quarrel. It was ge- of *Burgun-*
 ally believed this Fact, which was so horrid, tho never dy *murde-*
 much deserved by the Duke, was perpetrated with- red.
 the Dauphin's Privity or Concurrence: However
 vere, the Event of such a base piece of Treachery
 as it appears how much the Duke did blame his

*Peace be-
tween Eng-
land and
France.*

sent swore to the Treaty, and so did afterv
noted Cities that were of their Party.
pal Articles imported: ' That King *Ch*
' and owned King *Henry* for his Heir to
' of *France*, but that however he shou
' the Title of King of *France* upon him
' *Charles* lived, only that he should have
' of Regent, and the Government of the
' That *France* and *England* should be unite
' by the same Person, viz. *Henry* and his
' that they should not depend upon one a
' be governed according to their own Law
' Rights and Privileges should be preserve

d reduce it at last ; the two Kings Entry into *Paris* on the first Sunday of *Advent*, and the two Kings the next day ; then the Duke of *Burgundy* put in his Complaints before the Kings and their Councils, in the *Hoftel de St. Paul*, the Dauphin was summoned to the Marble Table with the usual Formalities, and afterwards, as attainted and convicted of Murder, was declared unworthy of succeeding to the Crown, and banished the Kingdom for ever ; the distressed Prince appealed from this Sentence, which cannot but be thought hard, to God and Sword, and transferred the Parliament and University to *Poitiers*, at which Place many of the most illustrious Members of both Bodies did not fail to appear. Thus every thing was almost double in the Kingdom, there being two Kings, two Regents, as many Parliaments, Constables, Chancellors, Admirals, and so of most other great Officers ; not to mention the multitudes of Mareschals of *France*, whereof each Party made seven or eight.

When the King of *England* had sojourned some weeks at *Paris*, he laid Siege to the City of *Meaux*, which was the only place the Dauphin had left upon the *Seine* and *Marn* ; and after three Months brave defence, the Besieged capitulated on the 19th of *May* : the Articles the Inhabitants had their Lives and Liberties, but all the Soldiers were sent Prisoners to

ther. *Philip* was much dissatisfied herewith, :
 ther thought the *English* began to treat him wit
 er Contempt and Haughtiness then before, a
 vouring so to settle their own Affairs, that the
 have no farther occasion for him.

In the mean time the War grew very hot i
 Province on this side the *Loire*, particularly i
pagne, *Picardy*, and in the Counties of *Perche*,
 and *Anjou* : The Duke of *Clarence* King *Hen*
 ther, having drawn together 8 or 10000 m
 Siege to *Bauge* in *Anjou* ; to the relief of
 marched the Earl of *Bouchain* a *Scot*, and the
chal de la Fayette, who gave him Battel, defea
 Duke, and slew him with 2000 of his men u
 Spot, while the rest escaped thro the Country of
 into *Normandy*. For this Service *Bouchain*, v
 brought the Dauphin three or four thousand m
 his own Country, had the Constable's Staff co
 upon him.

The Dauphin hereupon accompanied with l
 Constable, and the Duke of *Alençon*, recovers
 Places in the Countries of *Perche* and the *Chartre*
 the mean time King *Henry* being returned fro
land with a great Reinforcement, and enraged
 Defeat and Death of his Brother, did all the
 bly he could to come at the Dauphin ; he marc
Chartres and *Chateaudun*, lodged in the Subi
Orleans, but failing to meet with him in the
 where the other did not care to encounter him
 lent Dyfentery took off 3000 of his men ; b
 he fell upon the City of *Dreux*, which being
 dred upon Articles, he went from thence to *Par*
 sent his Queen, who was big with Child, for
 there to ly in. But not to omit here a rem
 Passage in the *French* Historians ; while the Ki
 engaged in the Siege of *Dreux*, a Hermit ur
 to him, came and told him of the great l
 brought upon *Christendom* by his unjust Ambitio
 had usurped the Kingdom of *France* against a
 ner of Right, and contrary to God's Will, and
 fore he threatned him in his Holy Name with
 and sudden Punishment, if he desisted not fr
 Enterprize. But the King taking this either for

D. of Cla-
 rence
 slain.

A strange
 Story of an
 Hermit.

or a sly Suggestion of the Dauphin's Party, the more confirmed in his Design; however it a few Months after that he fell ill, and they to be a strange and incurable Disease in his ^{K. Henry} ^{ill.} ment, the acuteness of the pain making him go to seek for cure.

Queen being delivered of a Son at *Windsor* nursery, and returned again into *France*, she with her husband made their publick Entry in a most magnificent manner into *Paris*, and kept open Court at the Palace on the Feast of *Pentecost*, each of them being adorned with their Royal Diadems; but the People, *French*, who went to see the Ceremony, had to regret the Liberalities of their antient Kings, and the Pride and Niggardliness of the *English*, who gave them none of their good Cheer, nor offered them more than as much as a Sup of Wine: If this be true, they are since strangely altered in respect to the temper of the two Nations, and the Tables may very well be turned the other way.

The Dauphin in the mean time having besieged the Town of *Cosne* upon the *Loire*, they capitulated to surrender, if not relieved by a prefixed day with an Army; but the Duke of *Burgundy* having drawn a good Force together, and marched thither, the Dauphin did not think fit to wait for

K. Charles
his Death
and Cha-
racter.

King *Charles* did not long survive his brave law, for he also after so many sad Relapses who pished him more and more, and made him a every one that could but come to deal with him his Life and unhappy Reign in his *Hofiel* of *Paris*, being attended only by the first Gen of his Bed-Chamber, Confessor and Almoner Funeral was at *St. Dennis*; whereat no Prince Blood attended, nor even the Duke of *Burgundy* was loth to give place to the Duke of *Bedford* which last Prince young *Henry* his Nephew was claimed King of *France*. *Charles* reigned 42 and 35 Days, and lived 52: He had by *Isabella* various fix Sons, of whom the three first died in Infancy, the other, viz. *Lewis*, *John* and *Charles* appeared on the Stage, and the last only survived and reigned: He had the same number of Daughters *Isabel*, *Jane*, *Mary*, a second *Jane*, *Mechele* and *Sherine*. The first was married to *Richard II.* of *England*, then to *Charles* Duke of *Orleans*, the died in her Infancy, the third became a Nun at the fourth was married to *John VI.* Duke of *Burgundy*, the fifth to *Philip* Duke of *Burgundy*, and the sixth to the Great *Henry* King of *England*. Before *Charles* his time, the Kings of *France* were wont on all publick occasions to appear with all their Regiments, and wear some distinguishing Marks on them every day, as their Robes lined with ermins, and a Crown upon their Hoods or Helmets; the Army a Coat of Mail seamed with Flower-de-luce and a Hoop with Flowers pretty high upon the helmet; but this Prince neglected all these Ornaments and made no manner of distinction between himself and the other People, so that he was to have divested himself of all Royalty.





C H A P. V.

Reign of CHARLES VII. fir-
named the Victorious.

LES the Dauphin being at the Castle of
y in *Auvergne*, when he received the News of
s Death; he thereupon went the first day
orning, on the next was clothed in Scarlet,
g heard Mass in the same Chappel, made them
Banner of *France*, at the sight whereof all
s then present, cried out, *Vive le Roy*: On
hand, the *English* and *Burgundian* held the
nces in *France*; they had all *Normandy*, the
untry in a manner between the *Scheld* even to
and the *Soane*: However *Charles* had all the
f the Blood, except the Duke of *Burgundy*,
est Commanders on his side, whom he purcha-
ear rate, for he was necessitated to engage
s, and the best part of his Demeasns to them;
use this Prince during his first years common-
d in *Berry*, his Enemies by way of Raillery,
d him the King of *Bourges*. In *May* he was

**D. of Bedford
defeats the
French.**

the Gates to them. In the mean time
surrendered according to Articles, *Bedford*
atly marched to *Vernuil*, fought and de
with the Slaughter of four thousand men,
Duke of *Alençon*, *Mareschal de la Fayette*
and about three hundred Gentlemen Prisoners.
Douglas was found amongst the Dead, a
count of *Narbonne*, whose Body was quartered
set upon Poles in divers Places, he being an
in the Murder of *John Duke of Burgundy*.

On the other hand, King *Charles* drew
of *Richmond*, Brother to the Duke of *Burgundy*
to his Party. tho there were a great many

In the Murder at *Montereau*, and in the Plot for
 ing the Duke of *Bretagne*; but *Lanet* President of
Justice and the most fixed of them, on the contrary
 ed means to animate the King against the Consta-
 who yet made his Party so good, that *Charles*
 and himself abandoned by all his *Grandeess*, and all
 tes refused him Obedience, except *Selles* and *Vier-*
 : At last the King was forced to give way, but the
 stable found it difficult to be reconciled to him,
 fled before him that he might not see him; at
 ght at *Saumur* he admitted him to Homage, and
 e him his Contract, and the Contracts of all the
 rds within his Dutchy, under Hand and Seal, com-
 nding them to go upon his Service, tho they did
 n but little good.

However the difference between the Dukes of *Bur-*
dy and *Glocester*, about the latter's marrying the
 untess of *Haynault*, as already mentioned, put
 k the *English* Affairs, and diverted the Forces of
 set two Princes, who had they joined them with
 Duke of *Bedford's*, had undoubtedly ruined all
 nce. *Bedford*, who well understood it, endeavour-
 to patch up an Agreement between them; the Duke
Brabant her first Husband submitted, but *Glocester* still
 sued her Right with his Sword; nay he and the
Argundian from sharp Letters proceeded so far as to

a great Army to the Frontiers of
 Duke to relinquish his Alliance w
 promise Homage to King *Henry*.
 an endless piece of work to set a m
 Battels and Enterprizes of this War; the
 City, nor Borough, but had a Garison
 and Castles were built upon all Eminen
 Narrow-ways and in the open Fields: E
 his Soldiers or rather Troop of Robbers,
 at discretion upon the People; and then

1426. only to note here the most remarkable F
French raised the Siege of *Montargis*, and
 following recovered *Manse*. The
 was yet more remarkable, the same m
 the 12th of *Octob.* by the Earl of S
 fresh Forces out of *England*, who made u
 about it, having first cleared all the Places
asse, and all others for twelve or fifteen Leag
 above and below the Town along the *Loire*.

Siege
 Orleans.
 1428.

But to leave this matter for a Moment,
 be improper to note in this Place, that t
Burgundy having now besieged *Jacqueline* in
 forced her to declare him Heir to all her D
 so that to *Flanders* and *Artois*, he joined
Holland, *Zealand* and *Friesland*; and again
 Year, the Earldoms of *Zutphen* and *Ni*
 decease of Count *Theodoric*, came to him
 Purchase, the other having only reserved t
 his Life in them: Farther, two years af
 chies of *Lothier*, *Brabant* and *Li*
 Marquisate of the Holy Empire, and the
Antwerp falling to him by the Death
Philip of *Burgundy*, second Son of
 succeeded Duke *John* his elder Brother:
 Husband, he became a very confuera
 and we shall hear more of him and his
 the Prosecution of this History; but
 remember that he went in the beginni
 to *Paris* to the Duke of *Bedford*, w
 some Ambassadors from King *Ch*
 from *Orleans*, desiring the Regent t
 sequestred into the Hands of the I
 but the *English* believing this import

ood as taken, made slight of their Petition; so that they carried on the Siege with great Vigour, their attacks were very brave, and the defence of the Besieged, if possible, yet braver. Here the Great *Salisbury*, whose Name was such a Terror to the *French*, lost his *E. of Salis-* by a Cannon-ball; but the *French* having been bury slain ted near *Rouvroy*, at their falling upon a Convoy of r rings that was going to the *English* Camp, the *The Battel* stable retired in discontent into *Bretagne*; and of *Her-* arles himself disposing all things to retire into *Dau-* rings. ze, the Place was just going to fall into the *English* nds, and with it the Courage of all the *French*, en a most extraordinary thing hapned, that gave a ange turn to things, and was a matter hardly to be alled in History.

About the end of *February*, the Governor of *Van-* The Story leurs in *Champagne*, sent a Maiden to the King of a- of the t 18 or 20 Years old, who affirmed she had a po- Maid of te Commission from God to relieve *Orleans*, and Orleans. se him to be crowned at *Rheims*, being solicited reunto by the frequent Apparitions of Angels and its; her Name was *Joan* or *Jane*, born in the Vil- of *Damremy* upon the *Meuse*, being the Daugh- of *James* of *Ave* and *Isabel Gautier*, and bred up eep Sheep: She knew the King, tho in a mean Ha-

Siege of
Orleans
raised.

1429.

K. Charles
crowned.

His vari-
ous Suc-
cesses.

was relieved) with a design to have him be-
come a Contederate of *Joan's*, whom they called a
Prophetess. In the mean time *Joan* proceeds with her Ex-
pedition, and when she had successfully thrown *Provins*
and *Orleans*, and soon after entered the City in Per-
fect Confidence, believing her to have been sent from
Heaven, she resumed Courage, and made divers Sallies,
she fought valiantly, and in two or three days
they took their chief Forts, and on the 12th of May
the Besiegers to decamp for good and all. Here
the French flocked to this Heroine from all Quarters,
the English were driven from *Jargeau* and *Bellême*,
routed at *Patay*, and in short dislodged from all
places in those Countries: The King also pursued
the second part of her Commission must go to *Rheims*,
to be crowned, tho that City and all *Champagne* were
in the Enemies Power; but in their March,
Troyes and *Châlons* surrendered to him; so did
too, where he was actually crowned on the 7th
July by the Archbishop of that City. In recompence
of these important Services, the King ennobled his
Father and three Brothers, with all their Descendants
even by the Females, and changed the Name of his
Family, which was *de Arc*, to *de Lucy* or *de Valois*,
for their Arms gave them a Field-Azure, with
placed in pale, the Cross and Pommel Or,
with two Flower-de-luces, and sustaining a
Crest the same upon its Points.

The King upon his return, had *Laon*, *Soissons*,
Compeigne, *Crespy*, and all the Cities of
Paris surrendered to him, but declined to enter
the City, and went to *Montepilloy*, assaulted *St. Dennis* and
Meaux, where the *Pucelle* was wounded at the
Wall. She was willing now to return to her
Village, but was overpersuaded by the Soldiers
to her Ruin, after she had executed the Commission
entrusted to her. From *Paris* the King in the
Month of May took *Lagny* upon the *Marn*, but his
Negotiations of Agreement at *Auxerre* with the Duke of
Berry was not yet ripe to be finished; and his good
will was now put to some kind of a stand by the
affaires at Court, which lasted almost two years.
The Viscounty of *Touars*, which *Trimoville* had

he kept d' Amboise in Prison : His Cause was supported by the Constable, as the other was by the King, the Effays about the same time were made to bring Burgundy over ; but after he had conferred with Bedford, he found it better to renew with the English, so gave him a Blank Paper, and withal the Countries of Champagne and Brie, upon condition only of doing homage.

However towards the end of this Year, the City of Meus was reduced under the Obedience of King Charles, and Melun shut her Gates against the English Garrison that had been making Inroads into Gastinois ; and indeed the King's Kindness to such Cities as returned to him, was a great Bait for others to do the same. Now amongst the many Sieges in every Province, that of Compeigne was the most remarkable for the Disgrace the Burgundians met with, as being forced to raise it ; much more yet for Joan's misfortune, who upon the 24th of May was taken Prisoner, upon their retreat after a Sally made ; this misfortune hapning to her by the Imprudence or Folly of Flavy the Governor, who shut her out of the Barricado : She fell first into the Hands of a Gentleman of Picardy, who sold her to John de Luxemburgh, one of the Generals, and he sold her to the English, for 10000 Livres in hand, and 10000 Livres yearly Pension.

Joan taken Prisoner.

1430.

ch
ize
tres.

both of them assisted the
Ladders and getting in; but/
taken, they were turned out
tempted one time or other to play
gain in favour of the *French*. To c
the *French* surprized *Chartres*, by t co
Fellow that carried Goods in a Wheel
with he embarrassed the Draw-bridg
dred men ran out of a neighbouring Cellar,
had hid themselves that night; and upon a
en, the Bastard of *Orleans* and *Gauconr*,
within a League of the Place, hastened
men thither, upon which the Garison
resistance fled by another Gate to *E re*;
of their Citizens, by the Example or tm
zealous *Burgundian*, making Opposition,
with his Weapon in his Hand on the ste of
thedral.

n burnt
loan.

Joan should all this while have only been a
of War, but the *English* too much enraged
been worsted by a Maiden, could not endure
ry; and therefore having brought the Rem
University at *Paris* to petition their Ki for
against her, she was carried to *Roan*, o
clesiastical Court accused for a Witch, and
retick, and one that had forfeited her Hono
Accusations were but indifferently made
was urged as a matter very criminal,
clothed her self in Man's Apparel, and tak
seeing that Change stained the Mo ty
and flatly contradicted the exprefs Coi
The Bishop of *Beauvais* in whose Diocess
the President of the Inquisition, with some
Divinity and the Canon Law, were
whom she was condemned to perpetual
the Bread of Sorrow and Water of Affl
being alledged, that some days after
by putting on a Man's Habit, she was
and given up to the Secular Power, who on
May burnt her alive in the Market-place
foretold the *English* (as they say) on t
that God's Hand was lifted up to str
tice would not only drive them o

The Reign of Charles VII.

35

been to *England*, and cause 'em to suffer the same
 as they had inflicted on the *French*: It's also
 storied concerning her, that her Heart was
 strewn among the Ashes, and that a Milk white
 was observed to fly out of the midst of the
 as a Token of her Purity and Innocence. But
 it was with this Woman, there seemed to be
 Malice in her Prosecution, and the great Duke
 of *Burgundy* who was Regent was not deemed to be al-
 without blame herein. What end soever they
 had in the Death of *Joan*, 'tis certain their
 went worse and worse in *France*; for the re-
 of which they carried their young King
 VI. over, and on the 27th of *Nov.* crowned
 a double Crown at *Paris*, in the Church of
Notre Dame; and withal the better to retain the Duke
 of *Burgundy* in their Interest, who was ready to start
 from them, they confirmed to him the Donation of the
 lands of *Champagne* and *Brie*.

Henry I
 crowned
 King of
 France.

War was carried on in all the Provinces of
 with various Success for some Years, tho at
 time but very feebly; and indeed it is no
 to see it languish after so long a continuance;
 the Weakness of both Parties being the Cause thereof,
 they wanted Money to set great Armies on foot;
 and we may add the imbecillity of both *Henry*

1432, 0

who in 1423. had mediated a Truce between the King and him for the Dutchies of *Burgundy* and the Earldom of *Nevers* on the one part, and for *Bourbonnois*, *Beaujolois*, *Lyonnois* and *Forez* on the other : Then it was a little farther carried on at *Nevers*, at an Interview between *Charles* Duke of *Bourbon* and the *Burgundians* whose Sister *Charles* had married ; for these two Princes having accommodated their own Affairs concerning Homage, for some Lands which the Duke of *Bourbon* refused to render to the other, and for which they had sharp Rencounters for some time, they fell into discourse about the Concerns of the whole Kingdom, and agreed there should be a Conference held at *Arras*, to find out the best expedient for procuring a Peace between the two Crowns, and between King *Charles* and the *Burgundians*.

The Assembly of Arras.

Pursuant to this, there was the Greatest and Noblest Assembly that ever this Age had of held at *Arras*, where all the Princes of *Christendom* had their Ambassadors, and the Pope and Council their Legates ; The Harbingers took up Stabling for 10000 Horse, and it was opened on the 6th of *Aug.* The Duke was in Honour obliged not to treat without the *English*, provided they would be reasonable : They were offered *Normandy* and *Guyenne*, upon condition of Homage ; but they persisting stiff in the

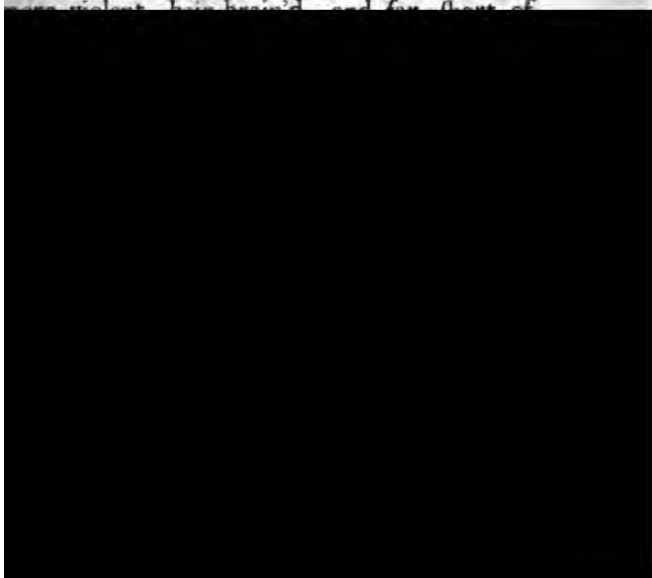
D. of Burgundy leaves the English.

Pretensions, the Duke took occasion, how justly I will not say, to forsake them his old Allies, and made a separate Peace with the *French* ; the Pope's Legate, to sanctify so foul a Perfidy, having absolved him of that Faith he had given them. The main of the Articles was, that King *Charles* by his Ambassador disowned his consent to the Murder of Duke *John* wickedly perpetrated by others about him, for which he was heartily sorry ; and promised to do Justice on the Guilty of the Duke's naming, and if it could not be taken, that he would banish them from the Kingdom for ever, and never admit their return upon any Treaty : That the King should pay the Duke 10 thousand Gold Crowns, at 24 Carats, &c. for Goods and Equipage taken upon the Murder of his brother ; farther he acquitted him of all Homage due for any Lands he held of the Crown, and his Service and Personal Assistance during Life ; gave him and

His Articles with the French.

Male and Female for ever, the Counties of
 and *Auxerre, St. Jengons, St. Laurence, and*
Hellany of Bar upon the Seine; and as security
 100 Crowns, payable at two certain Terms,
stellanies of Peronne, Roye and Montdidier,
 the Cities of *Somme, i. e. St. Quintin, Corbie,*
Albeville, and others; also the Counties of
 and *Bologne*, for him and the Heirs Male of
 y, with all the Rights and Profits of the same.
 the Duke was not obliged to quit *St. Andrew's*
 even when in the King's Army; and in case of
 travention of the Subjects, they should be both
 of their Oaths, and take up Arms against
 ger; that the King should tender his Sub-
 for compleating the Treaty into the Hands
 Pope and Council's Legates, upon pain of Ex-
 mation, &c. Lastly, to make this Recon-
 the more firm and durable, there was a Pro-
 de of bestowing *Catharine* the King's Daughter
Charles Earl of *Charolois* the Duke's Son, both
 very young; and four Years after she was sent
 Duke of *Burgundy* to have the Marriage con-
 ed.

les this amazing Blow to the *English*, the Bedford
 of the great Duke of *Bedford* Regent of *France* dies.
 less so to them, those that succeeded him



Conspiracy
against the
Govern-
ment.

motion which was | Le
Dukes of *Alençon*,
Bastard of *Orleans*,
a hand: The Compl
no share in his Govern
private Men, and therefore
against his Ministers. Tr
joined in with them, that
whatever be brought into Play at
Conspiracy being formed, *Alençon*
debauch the Dauphin, yet but 16 Years
ried to *Margaret* Daughter to J
land, and discarded his Govern
King had placed about him. 1
hereat, when he had well provi
against any Attempts of the E
Field, being attended by the C
Marche and *Dunois*, whom he
the Conspirators with 800 M
others. In short, he put them to
Place to another, that he forced
Son, and submit.

Duke of
Orleans
gets his
Liberty.

But before we are to proceed to
we are to observe a very strange
in this; and that was, that
who had been a Prisoner
should now be freed, by a
the least hopes in the World to ex
Philip Duke of *Burgundy*, who deli
Period to the mortal Feuds between
that of *Orleans*, by a Principle of Gou
rous as it was Politick, contrived this P
ty, and helped him to pay 1
300000 Crowns; after which
the Order of the Golden Fleece, wi
instituted in 1430.

1441.

This Year King *Charles* havi
the Charge of the *Parisians*,
the Honour of the *English*
way three or four times to put
Upon which the King was so d
treated to *Poissy*; but growin
he returned again, and attack

Before, they carried it by Assault: That
 marched to clear the Country of *Poitou* and
 of the Robbers that infested them, from
 he returned and staid at *Limoges* during the
Whitsontide, where he received the Duke of
 and his Wife, and gave him 160000 Francs
 Livres Pension towards the payment of his

From thence he went to *Gasconne*, and saved
 from the Hands of the *English* who did not
 to fight him, took *St. Sever*, *Dacqs*, *Mar-*
and La Reole; but the *English* soon recovered
 first after his Departure. The Winter he
Montauban, which proved so sharp, that all
 of the Country were frozen up, and the
 durst not stir out of their Quarters.

In August the 28th this Year died *John V.* Duke
gne, leaving his Dutchy very much enriched
 roved by a long Peace, and mightily peopled
 War which made its neighbouring Countries,
 icularly *Normandy*, desolate; for there went
 it Province alone above 30000 Families to in-
Bretagne: He had three Sons, *Francis*, *Peter*
 g.; whereof the two eldest were Dukes of
 ntry successively. But to return to the Field
 he *English* the preceeding Year had laid Siege
 ; but the Dauphin returning out of *Guyenne*
 ither in Quality of the King's Lieutenant

1442

1443

but poorly defended. The Pretences were the House of *Austria* against the *Swiss*, to some Incursions the Count *De Montbeliard* had into the Territories of *France*; to afright the of *Basil*, that they might put an end to the and to side with *Rene* Duke of *Lorain* against *M* having assisted the Earl of *Vendosme* his Enemy the real Design was to free the Kingdom of troublefom and fiery Guests the Soldiery. When the Dauphin at the Head of near 20000 Horse fled from *Troyes* in *July*, took *Montbeliard*, 4000 Men near *Basil*, who rather tired than over-died all upon the Spot, but bravely sold the at double the number, which so cool'd the D Resolution, that he thought it best to retire go and join with his Father's Army that lay *Metz*, whose Citizens purchased their Redemption at last for 300000 Florins, whereof King *Charles* 200000, and the rest they gave *Rene* of *Acquittance* for, who owed it to them. The being paid with this Money were all disbanded 1500 Men at Arms, as many Coustiliars, with Foot that accompanied the Horse, and 3000. These the King quartered in the Towns Kingdom; but the common People, who have fight, minded nothing but to ease themselves Burden, and granted a Tax for the Subsistence Regular Troops, not considering the ill Consequence thereof, nor how the same might be improved Disadvantage.

The Counties of *Valentinois* and *Diois* were Year united to *Dauphine*; *Lewis de Poitiers* possess them had in 1419. given them by *Charles V.* then Dauphin, for fifty thousand Crowns the Payment of his Debts and Legacies; and in failure the Duke of *Savoy* was to succeed: The Duke indeed failed, and the Duke got Possession; by a Treaty at *Bayonne*, the Duke gave up Right to the Dauphin, who as an Equivalent to him all the absolute Seigniori and Homage *cigny*.

King *Charles* during the Serenity of the Peace with *England* gave himself over to all sorts of

and Dalliances, particularly the Lady *Agnes* had the greatest share in his Affections ; the King of *England* was much more reserved devout, but being weak in Spirit he was governed by a bold and daring Queen, at whose Instigation he put to Death his Uncle the Noble Duke of *Glocester*, that without any form of Law, which afterwards was the occasion of much trouble in the Kingdom. We will confine our selves as much as may be to the Affairs of *France* ; King *Charles* was not above 15 years old, and the Dauphin who was already 22, stood upon his Heels, and would have played the Tyrant ; insomuch that one day at *Chinon* he gave the Lady *Agnes* a Box on the Ear ; but what was worse than this, he contracted with the Earl of *Dammartin* to assassinate some body he did not like, and being rebuked from it by *James* that Earl's Brother, who was Master of the King's Household, the thing at last came to the King's Ear, who sharply reprimanded the Dauphin for it. The young Prince to excuse himself, charged the Earl with having suggested this base Design first to him, which the Earl boldly avowed in the King's Presence, and in his own Justification challenging any of the Dauphin's Gentlemen to fight him ; the King grew sensible of the Malignity of his Son, abhorred it, commanded him for four

The Dauphin's Malignity.

1445.

War re-
newed.

1449.

French
successful.

Month after this time; but *Surienne* Com-
an *English* Party, being extremely greedy
surprized the City of *Fongers* belonging to
of *Bretagne*, where he met with a Booty
sixteen hundred thousand Crowns; and at
time the *English* made an Irruption into *Scott*
prehended in the Truce, as they began like
into civil Broils at home. The Duke of
and the *Scots* made their Complaints to *King*
for this breach of the Truce; upon which th
were required to make Reparation: They
what *Surienne* had done; but that not satis
length the Duke of *Bretagne* flew out, and
Charles his Consent surprized at the same tim
Larche above *Roan*, *Conches* near *Evreux*,
not far from *Beauvois*, and *Cegnac* upon the
In the mean while the Disturbances in *Eng*
tinuing, *King Charles*, tho never so unre
would not neglect so favourable an opportu
resolved to drive the *English* out of
whereupon he constituted the Earl of *Foix* L
General of his Armies, from the *Garonne* to
renees, and the Earl of *Dunois* in all the
yet so as to have all due Deference to the C
when they met in the same place.

He ordered the first to take all the Place
the *English* at the Foot of the *Pyrenees*, wh
block up the Passage of the King of *Navar*
had made a League with them, and oblige
for a Sum of Money to keep and guard *M*
Soule for them, a very strong Place in tho
but tho the Count *De Foix* was that Princ
Law, yet having more regard to the King
than his Father, he scrupled not to lay S
and the Place being at length straitned for
they were forced to capitulate and surrender
also the Castle of *Guiffant* within four L
Bayonne, after three thousand *English*, whom
stable of *Navarre* had sent by Water to t
of it, were defeated by the Besiegers. *A*
Perche was at the same time taken by the Co
of a Miller, in revenge for his having bee
by the *English*; the great Tower held out for

the *Interim Dunois*, by the small Assistance he met from *Pont Audemer, Lisieux, Mantes*, and the s round those Cities, perceiving the *English* were low ebb, sent the King word that *Normandy* sorely shaken; he was informed besides, that the of *Bretagne*, with the Constable, had taken *Coues*, and that the Inhabitants of *Alençon* had reed their Duke to his City; wherefore upon this d news he marched from *Vendosme*, where he his Rendezvous, to *Verneville*; thence to *Louviers* *Pont de Larche*, to summon *Roan*, whose Inhabitants ned inclined to withdraw from their Obedience the *English*. The Earl of *Somerset*, who with three usand Men was within the Place, would not suffer *French* Heralds to come near; but this could not vent the Inhabitants to plant several *French*-men in the Walls, tho the rest not joining with them, ir treacherous Design to betray the Town mised: However so resolute and unanimous they re, that they deputed their Archbishop to treat h the King, of whom he obtained the Security d Liberty of their Persons, and for the Estates of that were within the City, as well *English* as *French*, ether they staid there or removed any where. When an Account of the Treaty was brought *Roan* tak- the Town-Hall, the *English* endeavoured to frustrate en from the Execution of it, by seizing the Gates and Walls: *English*.

made his publick Entry with much Magnificence the 10th of November, and there celebrated the Feast of St. Martin, the Antient Patron of Gaul.

1450.

Charles, notwithstanding the Inconveniency of Season, laid Siege to *Harfleur*, the first Place come in France by Henry V. King of England, and the was surrendred to him on the 12th of January, as towards *Honnefleur* was. At the same time the Duke of *Bretagne*, and the Constable reduced *Valongue*, divers other small Places, and after a long Siege gained his City of *Foucyeres*. But these Prosperities to K. Charles were not without Allays of Sorrow: the year, while he was at *Jumieges*, they poisoned his Wife *Agnes de Soreau*; but to comfort him, *Antoinette Maignelais*, Lady de *Villequier*, her Cousin, took her place, who she was not sole Mistress; for the Impetuosity of Age exciting the King's Concupiscence, he kept great many handfom Women, at least to gratify his Eyes. Some will have it that the Dauphin's Father made away with *Agnes*, and that he who contrived most to it was the famous *John Cœur*, the King's Treasurer, and Master of the Mint at *Bourges*, the Place of his Nativity; of whose Riches, Credit, and Accomplishments, there are such Wonders related, that Charles would fain perswade the World he had the Philosophers Stone. This Person was in the year 1450 accused before the King's Council, as well for the Crime mentioned, as for carrying Money out of the Land, false coining, counterfeiting of Seals, Arms and Poudre to the *Saracens*, &c. He voluntarily appeared to justify himself, and at length the King being satisfied of his Guilt, he had in consideration of his Services his Life spared, but was condemned to go bare-foot and bare-headed with a lighted Torch in his Hand, to some Court of Justice or Council, to acknowledge his Crime, to pay 100000 Crowns, and have all his Estate confiscated; however the Parliament some time after restored him to his Liberty and Estate, after he had paid his Fine.

1451.

But to return again, the English towards the beginning of this Year landed 3000 Men at *Cherbourg* under the Command of *Kyrle*, who drained the Town's Garisons, and making them up 6000 adventu-

the Field, but he was quickly defeated by the
 stable at *Fourmigny*, and most of his Men were ^{English} defeated.
 or taken Prisoners. This fatal Blow quite dis-
 aged them, so that King *Charles* going into lower
Normandy, quickly took *Vire*, *Bayeux*, *St. Savour le*
Monte, *Falaize* and *Caen*; and the Earl of *Somerset*,
 4000 *English* he had with him, had Vessels allowed
 to transport them into *England*, and no where else:
 but *Cherbourg* being now the only Place left them,
 also was surrendred upon the 11th of *August*, French
 so all *Normandy* was recovered by the *French*, recover all
 to speak more properly, helped to recover it self Nor-
 me Year and 6 Days; and to perpetuate the Re-
 mance thereof, there were General Processions or-
 dered to be made yearly upon the same day that *Cher-*
bourg was surrendred.

King *Charles* having regulated the Affairs of this
 Province, turned his Arms towards *Guyenne*.
 The Earl of *Pontieu* opened the Passage over the
dogne by taking of *Bergerac*; and the Lord of
 going to scour the Country about *Bordeaux*
 700 Horse only, there came 12000 Horse and
 English and *Bourdelois* upon him in a confused
 manner, whom he had the good Fortune to rout with the
 slaughter of a thousand of them, and a great many
 Prisoners, which indeed occasioned the loss of

be spared; so that now the *English* of all the
ous Conquests in *France*, had nothing left th
Calais and the County of *Guisnes*. A gre
Reasons are assigned by Historians, as they
rently affected, for such a strange Turn and Ru
as this was; but nothing in my mind can be m
alleged than the intestine Divisions of the
and the weakness of that Prince that was
Throne, which wrought such Convulsions in
vernment, as proved his Ruin and almost th
Nation.

Bourde-
aux reco-
vered by
the Eng-
lish.

1452.

However our Divisions were calmed for a
on the Intreaty of the Lord d' *Esparre*, wh
puted from *Bordeaux* and the *Bourdelois*
offer the Restoration of that Country to th
upon a distaste conceived at some new Taxes
them. Indeed the *English* were tender to th
rally upon that point, and 'tis very remarka
they have a traditional Remembrance of the
of our Government, and how easy they lived
to this very day: Wherefore the great *Talbot*
with 4000 men at *Medoc*, and on the 24th
was by the Citizens introduced into *Borde*
having received a like Reinforcement toward
ter end of the Year, he made himself
Castillon, *Cadillac*, *Libourn*, *Fronsac*, and
Places.

Lost to the
French, &
Talbot
slain.

1453.

King *Charles* was now preparing to ma
upon the Duke of *Savoy*, because he had agre
Marriage of his Daughter *Charlotte* to the
without his consent; but hearing of the landi
English, he allowed of the Duke's Submissio
greed to a Peace. Next Year he marched fo
covery of *Bourdelois*, and besieged *Castillon*;
the great *Talbot* with 6000 Men coming to
of it, was defeated and slain together wit
which indeed caused the utter Ruin of the I
terest in *France*, and after that the recoverin
deux; for they finding *Fronsac*, *Libourn*,
Cadillac, and all the other Towns round them
the King quartered at *Lermont*, and no appe
Relief and Provisions, surrendered upon Artic
the King would never have granted them,

ortality had not raged amongst his Army, and swept away Multitudes of them. However the better to secure the City, which the Interest of Trade and reciprocal Marriages inclined to be for the *English*, he banished forty of the Lords and Citizens he most suspected, and bridled them with two strong Castles, which were ordered to be built there.

We meet with nothing considerable relating to the Affairs for the two succeeding Years; we might

say somewhat of those of *England* and *Flanders*, which were bad enough, but they are foreign to our purpose: However we cannot take our leave of this

Year 1453, but we must take notice, that upon Tuesday the 29th of May (tho Historians are somewhat uncertain as to the positive time) *Constantinople*,

the Trunk of the *Greek* Empire, from which the *Turks* before lopped off the Branches, was taken by *Mohamet II.* surnamed the Great, and her last Emperor *Constantine* perished in a Crowd at one of the Gates of the City: Such was the end of the Eastern Empire, which may be reckoned from the Dedication of *Constantinople*, upon the 19th of May 330, to have lasted 1123 Years.

We are now therefore come to the Year 1455. and Join's Memoirs believing it to be both to the Honour of the

King and Kingdom, whatever the *English* had thought

as contrary to have the Memoirs of *John* 1455

Constantinople taken.

John's Memoirs justified.

King's Displeasure was discharged upon
Alençon, the Dauphin's Godfather, w
from *Dauphine*, where he had been to h
trigues with his God-son, and having
know not what League with the *Engl*
some disturbance in favour of them,
and imprisoned in the Castle of *Loches*, o
presently.

1457.

This Year, as it is usual after a l
squeeze the Financers of what they have
ring the publick Calamities, King *Charl*
to an account who had the management
fury; and *Xancoins* the Receiver General

Journed the Assembly from *Baugency*, where they were, to *Vendosme*, where he intended to be him-
present; but at last by a Sentence past on the
10th of *Octob.* the Duke was condemned to lose his
head, and his Estate to be confiscated: The King spared
his Life, but took the best of his Lands, and sent
him back Prisoner to *Loches*.

The 26th of *Dec.* in this same Year, was the last
of the Days of the brave *Arthur* Earl of *Richmond*,
Constable of *France*, who had likewise been Duke
of *Bretagne* a Year and an half, by the Death of
his elder Brother's second Son. He
had no Child, and so the Dutchy devolved to *Francis*
his Nephew, the Son of *Richard* Earl of *Estampes* his
younger Brother. *Charles* of *Anjou*, Earl of *Main*,
to the Office of Constable conferred upon him,
who the time before, viz. on the 27th of *June*, died al-
though *Alphonso* King of *Arragon* and *Naples*, who be-
queathing this last Kingdom to *Ferdinand* his second
Son, *Rene* of *Anjou* revived his Claim, whom we
shall leave to pursue with various Success.

To pass over also the *English* Affairs, of which we
may however observe this *in-transitu*, that *Henry VI.*
was by this time deposed, and *Edward IV.* crowned
King of *England*: We must take notice that it was
thirteen years since the Dauphin had been absent
from Court: his Father indeed sent often for him. and

1455.

1460, &c.

put in Execution, had not the Pope strongly dissuaded him from it, or if perhaps he could have had sufficient time to dispose the Mind of the French Nation to such a Change.

But the Thread of his Life was now near spun while he was at *Meun* on the *Enre* in *Berry*, Information that his Domesticks had conspired away his Life, from which time forwards, he he saw nothing but Daggers and Poison; and apprehensions were so great, that not knowing from what Hands he might receive his Food without Danger for some Days abstained from eating, after which was not in his power when he would have done so, he swallowed any thing; so that he died of Hunger the 22^d, about the midst of his 60th year, towards the end of the 39th of his Reign. Next to the Prince greater Traverses of Fortune, or more Enemies, nor more gloriously overcame them. he had driven those out of *France* that would have taken the Crown from him, he found a more dangerous enemy in his own House, that attempted his Life might have been accounted a happy King, had he had another Father and another Son: He was affable, bonnaire, liberal and just; he tenderly loved his People, and spared them as much as possibly he could; he very largely rewarded Services, and took particular Care of the Justice and Policy of his Kingdom; he laboured much in reforming the Church, and had much regard to it, that he would not charge any Tenths; but being somewhat of too soft a temper, he was much influenced and led away by his Favourites and Mistresses, and in his latter Days grew apprehensive, jealous and suspicious to the highest degree. By his Mistresses he had three natural Children, and eleven legitimate ones by his Wife *Mary*, daughter of *Lewis* Duke of *Anjou*, viz. four Sons and two Daughters, *Radegonda* died, after she had been married to *Sigismund*, eldest Son of *Frederick* Duke of *Austria*; *Poland* was married to *VIII. Duke* of *Savoy*, *Catherine* to *Charles* Duke of *Burgundy*, *Jane* or *Joan* to *John II.* Duke of *Brittain*, and *Margaret* to *Gaston* Prince of *Valois*.

K. Charles
his Death
and Character.

1461.

Joan and Mary, who were dead Infants.

CHAP. VI.

The Reign of LEWIS XI.

previous Conduct of this Prince in his Father's Reign plainly indicated what his Friends expected were to expect from him, he ever go- without Counsel, and mostly without Justice or Reason: He thought it the finest Policy, to leave the beaten Road of his Predecessors, and to do every thing, were it from better to worse, that it might be feared. The Father was no sooner dead, Creatures formed a Party in favour of Charles younger Son; so that the Information given Lewis Count of Maine, not so much out of Affecti- on as Hatred to the Count of Dammartin, who had been his Competitor in Charles's Favour, caused him to depart on Horseback with utmost Expedition, being accompanied with the Duke of Burgundy and his Son, and four thousand choice Horse: He went directly to Arras, where he was crowned on the 15th of Aug. before he received the Uncction, he would be first

K. Lewis
crowned

Officers belonging to the Kings Houm
Judicature and Treasury; nay treated
tures belonging to his Father very ill, to
ruining all he had set up, gave no more
his Brother *Charles* for his Appenage, set
Alençon at Liberty, clapt the Count of *L*
to the *Bastile*, restored the Count of *Ar*
Estate, oppressed the People with Taxes,
Nobility, and disgusted all the Clergy.

But tho *Lewis* entred *France* as a Fri
Neighbours, yet *Eneas Silvius*, now elect
distinguished by the Name of *Pius II.* w
him be so, if the Pragmatick were obse

it, and the King never concerned himself to have executed, because the Pope had in many things failed his Word to him.

In the mean time the Pope supported *Ferdinand* in Kingdom of *Naples*, against *John* Duke of *Calabria*, the Son of *Rene* of *Anjou*, who at length was utterly expelled; and all that the King could do, could gain nothing of him in favour of those Princes of his blood: However *Pius* thinking to flatter him, confirmed the Title of *Most Christian* upon him, which had been already derived to him with greater Honour from his Ancestors, and exhorted him to a Croisade against the *Turks*, presenting him with a Sword, on whose blade were inscribed some Latin Verses, which invited him to that Expedition.

1462.

Now a sharp War hapning to break out between my King of *Castile*, and *John* King of *Arragon*, for his better Support with Men and Money in pressing Necessities, mortgaged the Counties of *Gascon* and *Cerdagne* to the *French* King for 300000 Crowns; but at last *Gaston* of *Foix*, who was Brother-in-law to the *Castilian*, and Son-in-law to the *Arragonian*, persuaded them to refer their Differences to King *Lewis* his Determination, who was then at *Bordeaux*, to treat of the Marriage of *Magdalen* his Sister, with *Gaston* of *Foix* Count of *Viana*. When he heard the reasons of both Parties by their respective

The King at his return from this Journey, the Lords of *Crouy* had so well managed the *Burgundy*, as to consent to give him up the *Somme* for 400000 Crowns, he caused the to be immediately sent to *Hesdin*, and went th Person. This done, he would also appear in the Countries, where his Sovereignty was but little knowledged: He visited *Arras*, was received a day, and went as far as *Lisle*, whither the Duke to wait upon him. On the other hand, *Lewis Savoy* waited his return at *St. Claude*, to complain Disobedience of his young Son *Philip*, who being forward than *Amadeus* the Elder, had so great Affections of the Nobility, that he was making best of his way to be preferred before him in succession. But *Philip*, upon Summons and safe Con attending upon the King, was for all that seized Prisoner to *Loches*, where he was detained years, to give his Father time to settle his Authority, and establish his eldest Son in the Throne.

Causes of discontent between the King and Charolois.

All this while the Enmity between the King and Count *Charolois* increased from five or six particular Causes, viz. the Surrender of the Places upon the *Somme*, the kind Reception given by the King to the Lords of *Crouy*, whom *Charolois* for that reason expelled from his Father's Court and Country; the King's endeavouring to lay Taxes upon the contrary to the Treaty of *Arras*, and from that he shewed to the Count d' *Estampes*, who was to have intended to poison the Duke and his Son; the same time the Chancellor *Morvilliers* used the King's Name to acquaint the Duke of *Bretagne*, must no longer stile himself Duke by the Name of God, coin Money, or raise any Taxes in his Kingdom. The Duke unprepared, acted coolly in the matter, promised all, but required time to call the Estates of the Country together upon a thing of that Importance. In the mean while he was diligent in treating with the *Burgundian* by *Romille*, and with all the Grands of the Kingdom, whom he knew to be much discontented; and the Messengers of these Intrigues were sent down securely in the Habit of Friars Meeting

of it, and the King : rned l f e
it executed, because the r nad in i y in
of his Word to him.

In the mean time the Pope supported *Ferdinand* in the Kingdom of *Naples*, against *John Duke of Calabria*, the Son of *Rene of Anjou*, who at length was utterly expelled ; and all that the King could do, could obtain nothing of him in favour of those Princes of his Blood : However *Pius* thinking to flatter him, confirmed the Title of *Most Christian* upon him, which had been already derived to him with greater Honour from his Ancestors, and exhorted him to a Croisade against the *Turks*, presenting him with a Sword, on whose Blade were inscribed some Latin Verses, which invited him to that Expedition.

Now a sharp War hapning to break out between *Henry King of Castile*, and *John King of Arragon*, *John* for his better Support with Men and Money in his pressing Necessities, mortgaged the Counties of *Roussillon* and *Cerdagne* to the *French King* for 300000 Crowns ; but at last *Gaston of Foix*, who was Brother-in-law to the *Castilian*, and Son-in-law to the *Arragonian*, persuaded them to refer their Differences to King *Lewis* his Determination, who was then at *Bourdeaux*, to treat of the Marriage of *Magdalen* his Sister, with *Gaston of Foix* Count of *Viana*. When he heard the reasons of both Parties by their respective Ambassadors, he pronounced his Sentence of Arbitration ; but it satisfied neither the one nor the other Party any more than his Interview with the King of *Castile* pleased either *French* or *Spaniards*, which last laughed at the Niggardness, and mean and simple Appearance of King *Lewis*, who was clothed only with a coarse Cloth, had a short and strait Coat on, and wore a Madona of Lead in his Cap. The others disdained the *Castilian* Arrogance, and the Pride of the Count of *Lodessme*, King *Henry's* Favourite : However it were, their King seemed to give the Precedency to King *Lewis* by passing over the River *Bidasso*, which was the Boundary of the two Kingdoms, to go to him, as also in advancing two Leagues within his Dominions, even to the Castle of *Uterbia*, where they conferred together.

1462.

*Interview
between
Lewis and
the Casti-
lian.*

The

Causes of
discontent
between the
King and
Charolois.

All this while the Enmity between the Count Charolois increased from five or six Causes, viz. the Surrender of the Place of Somme, the kind Reception given by the Lords of Crouy, whom Charolois for that expelled from his Father's Court and Country, the King's endeavouring to lay Taxes up contrary to the Treaty of Arras, and from he shewed to the Count d'Estampes, who to have intended to poison the Duke and the same time the Chancellor Morvilliers King's Name to acquaint the Duke of Bre. must no longer stile himself Duke by t

Charolois having fixed his ordinary Residence at *Am* in *Holland*, *Rubempre* stole privately into Port with a small Ship, disguised like a Merchant, a Design to carry *Romille*, who was the Engine of these Designs, away either dead or alive, and took *Charolois* himself: However it were, the Count perceived it, caused him to be imprisoned, and gave the thereof to the Duke his Father, who was gone to confer with the King at *Hesdin*. The Duke hereupon hastily retires, the People gave out there was a Design to seize both Father and Son at the same time; the Scholars entertained their Auditors with it, and *Bar de la Marche* made mention of it in terms much reflected upon the King's Honour; whereas the King, to justify himself from such Aspersions, sent *Arvilliers* and some Lords, to make Complaints to the Duke, and demand Satisfaction: Many Discourses and negotiations passed between them, and the Chancellor carried things so high, and with such Sovereign-like expressions, that he seemed as if he designed rather to perpetuate than compose the Differences; so that *Ant Charolois* at last told one of the Ambassadors at his Departure, *Recommend me most humbly to the King's good Grace, and tell him, he hath endeavoured to please me by his Chancellor, but that he will repent it when the Year is past.*

The Reign of Lewis XI. Bo

The League
for the
Publick
Good.

the Great Men, and all the late King's old Counsellors were engaged in it, and they gave it the Name of *League for the Publick Good*. Then as a fortification and Disadvantage to the King's Affairs, was now at *Poitiers*, the Bastard of *Armagnac* his only Brother *Charles*, and carrying him into all the zealous Servants of his Father deceas'd, shew'd him, and got him to direct a Manifesto to all the Estates of *France*, inviting them to unite with the Reformation of the Kingdom.

Civil War.

Now after the King had attempted in vain to reduce them by fair Promises, he went to strike the first at them who had first declared, and these were the Duke of *Bourbon* and *Dammartin*, who had begun the War in *Berry*, *Bourbonnois* and *Auvergne*. All submitted except *Bourges*, and *Rien* and *Auvergne* resisted a Siege and sustained it: But tho' the Duke of *Nemours*, *Armagnac* and *Albret*, brought the Duke considerable Reinforcement, yet he gave Ear to a Treaty with the King, promising to summon his Counsellors to make a Peace, and if they accepted not of reasonable terms to abandon them. *Nemours* gave his Word to the King to side with his Party, but did it not, and the King kept the Oath he had sworn himself, to be revenged in Time and Place convenient.

Charolois
takes the
Field.

In this Country the King had notice that the Duke of *Charolois* had taken the Field, at whose Death the Duke his Father told him, *Go my Son in this Hour, and resolve to die rather than fly; if you run to any Danger, you shall not want an hundred Men to bring you out of it*. The King also knew the Count had 1500 Men at Arms, 8000 Archers and great Train of Artillery; that he had rendezvoused before *Paris*, and that the Duke of *Bretagne* and his followers were to join him. The Abolition of Taxes for the Publick Good were the plausible Pretences he went upon. He at first kept a good Discipline in his Army, and if the same had continued all had been his own; or if the *Breton* had come at the time appointed they had been Masters of *Paris*, there being many Malecontents, and but a few Soldiers in it: But out of fear of losing *Paris*, making the King to leave his Game, in order to get thither before the Count

As he had repassed the *Loire*, *Bourbon*, *Dammartin*, *Nemours* and *Albret* broke their Words with him and having got ten thousand Men together march-join the other Confederates.

The Heads of the League were all to have been at *Jennis* towards the end of *June*; *Charolois* waited them 10 or 12 Days, and by several Skirmishes captured the Suburbs of *Paris*; and finding little hope, and less Appearance of his Friends coming, thought of retiring: But the subtle *Norman Romille* writing him from time to time Letters from his Master, in which he wrote upon the Blanks signed before, he begged him to pass the *Seine* over the Bridg of *Cloud*, to go and join the *Breton* towards *Estampes* where he thought to have met him; and his advanced Guard was posted at *Montlehery*, while the King returning from *Berry* kept the same Road, and entered at *Chartres* within a League of the Count, much to the Surprize of both Armies: The King intended to slip by, and get to *Paris* without hazarding a battle; but *De Breze* Grand Seneschal of *Normandy* perceived that he should ask him, whether he had given his Hand and Seal to the Princes, and ended them to fight, where he was one of the very that was killed. The King's left Wing and the

The Battle

undian's Right were broke; and in the Rout the of *Montle-*

the King's *Guard* *that* *there* *were* *many* *men* *on* *horse*

and vain thereupon, that it may be truly said day was the cause of all his Misfortunes.

The King fearing to be hemmed in, went for *Paris*, and supped that Night in the Company of some of the principal Ladies of that City, to his Interest amongst that Sex: He highly commended the Fidelity of the Citizens; and to please them he abated the Imposition upon Wine, from a 4th Part, and made a general Revocation of all the five great Farms only excepted: But these did not last long, no more than the Establishment made of a Council of 18 Persons, 6 Members of Parliament, as many of the University, and the principal Citizens, by whose Advice he proposed to be governed; but the danger was no sooner than that he revoked all, and entertained a hatred against those that first proposed those Actions, and particularly against the Bishop, whose Name of the rest first mentioned it. Farther in want of Money, he borrowed a great deal of Officers, which was the first occasion of making employments vendible; for he turned out those who refused to lend the Sums he asked, and about ten days after having well provided for the security of the City, he went to raise Men and Money *mandy*.

In the mean time *Charolois* marching to *Breton*, staid at *Estampes* to refresh his Men, and dress the wounded, who amounted to near 1000, and in three days the Duke of *Bretagne* came to him, with *Dunois*, *Dammartin*, and other great Commanders, besides 800 Men at Arms, and six thousand Horse. Here it happening that *Monsieur* sent for many wounded Soldiers, dropped some Excesses that intimated his Repentance for engaging in that Enterprize; and the same being heard by *Charles* and perhaps also that the *Bretons*, upon a report of the King's Death, had consulted how to be rid of him, that they might have the sole Government of the new King; with this Apprehension he sent *Edward IV.* King of *England*, to treat of an Alliance with him, and desire his Sister *Margaret* in Marriage. His Design was indeed to amuse King *Edward*

K. Lewis
the same
still in his
Actions.

that he might enter into a League with King
for he mortally hated the House of *York*,
as in the Interest of that of *Lancaster*; never-
by over-acting the Dissembler, he engaged him-
far as to compleat the Match, and received the
of the Garter.

Princes having stayed a Fortnight at *Estampes*, *Princes*
l once more to try *Paris*; having therefore fo- *attempts*
be *Gastinois*, they passed the *Seine* between *Paris* in
and *Montereau*, and were there joined by the *vain*.
f *Calabria* King *René's* Son, and a great Com-
with the Forces of both *Burgundys*; and
his Infantry there were 500 *Swiss*, the first
re seen in *France*. When all the Lords were
gether, there were near 100000 Horse in their
the *Burgundian* had his Head Quarters at
on, the Dukes of *Berry* and *Calabria* at *St. Maur*,
rest at *St. Dennis* and the adjacent Places. Things
with an ill Aspect now upon the King, who not to
ing to himself, and taking upon him to encourage
izens; by telling them, the *Burgundians* should
oy them as they had done; he was answered
ctor of the *Chastelet*, *Yea Sir, but they gather*
ies and eat our Grapes, and we cannot help it.
ch the King replied, *It were better they should*
Grapes, than come and take the Money you have

ing informed that the Duke of *Bourbon*, who
in that Country, had by some secret Intellig
Master of *Roan*, and that all the Prov
to revolt, as being allured with a Desir
a Duke of their own, as well as *Bre*
People lived well under him; he was inclin
them what they already held. The Tre
cluded on the 29th of *October*, by which
had the Cities of the *Somme*, redeemabl
his Decease for 200000 Crowns, and besid
ties of *Guisnes*, *Bologn* and *Pontieu*: *T*
St. Paul who governed him had the Con
and *Armagnac*, and the rest had their

consult of Methods to ease the People and redress
 evances. Next day the King and the Princes had
 Interview at Vincennes, where the King told
 at Charolois, Brother, I know you are a Gentleman,
 of the House of France: Why my Lord? answered
 Count; Because, said the King, When the Fool
 villiers spake so boldly to you, you sent me word I
 ld repent of the Words he had spoken before the
 was out, and you have not failed even be-
 the time. This indeed was all Dissimulation,

Morvilliers was disgraced, and that the King was
 complaisant as to conduct the Count as far as Villiers
 till in his way home; where the King not long
 er found a means to imbroid him with the Princi-
 pality of Liege, but the particular Actions between
 n do not come within the Compass of our Histo-

The Duke of Bretagne departed also with Mon-
 into Normandy, to see him take possession of that
 chy, for which he had already done Homage to
 King.

Now the Duke of Bretagne being desirous to mono- *The Prin-*
 ze weak Monsieur to himself, and to enjoy all the ces at
 ours he could confer in Normandy; and the Duke *variance.*
 Calabria with the old Servants of Charles VII.
 ng their Pretensions also, Divisions grew amongst
 and you need not doubt, but the King had his

by way of Sequestration be put into the hands of *Oder Daydic-Lescun*, afterwards Count of *Con*

While the King was in this Country, the *Bourbon* shifting sides, did all he could to put *André* into the King's possession, to the great Mortification of the Duke of *Burgundy*, since he whom *André* loved above all the Men in the World, so soon turned his Back upon him, and ruined his Designs. *Louviers* and *Pont de Larche* being sent to the King, *Roan* also on the 10th of *January* given up upon Articles; and their miserable destitute of Friends, Money, Heart and escaped in a pitiful Plight into *Bretagne*, afterwards held the Dutchy but two Months: However the dictive King could not forget the Passion for the *Normans* to have a Prince of their own, therefore he cut off a great many of the considerable Persons in that Country.

King recovers
Normandy.

1466.

Assembly of
Notables.

Charolois, as we hinted to you, was taken by the *Liegeois*, and his Father Duke *Philip* grasped so that they could not prevent this Revolution ever during the Noise that was every where of this Irruption, and the murmurings of the Members of discontented Persons, the King answered the People with the hopes of easing them; and having summoned an Assembly of Notables they pickt 21 Commissioners out of them, who on the 16th of *July* began to apply themselves to the Count of *Dunois* was President, and it was amongst so many Princes, that attended it, a laudable Zeal he hath transmitted to all his to procure the publick Good.

Now the excessive Heats of the Summer bred many contagious Distempers, which more particularly swept away above 4000 and frightened away a greater number; desiring to repeople it, by an Edict invited of Nations and People to come and dwell, extended the same even to Exiles and Criminals whom besides the abolition of their Offences Privileges and Franchises: And this City it were his Bulwark against the *Grandeess* not love him, he ordered all the Inhabitants, to

1467.

sticks not excepted, to list themselves under the Colours of their Principals or Sub-Principals, that is,

Colonels or Captains, and to furnish themselves with Arms; and at a General Muster made on the 4th *General Muster at Paris.* *Septemvoer*, they were found to be between 70 and 8000 Men, between the Ages of 16 and 60; but in other the following Year, they amounted to 84000, which was very considerable in those times.

But not altogether to forget how it stood between the See of *Rome* and the *French*, in respect to the Pragmatick formerly mentioned: We are to note, at the same being still subsisting, *Paul II.* sent a Legate to the King, to get the Revocation verified, who employed the Bishop of *Angiers* to carry the Letters from the King to the *Chastelet* and the Parliament; they passed without opposition at the *Chastelet*; but in the Parliament he found *St. Romain* the Advocate opposing him to his Face; and the University sent to the Legate to signify their Appeal to the next Council, and then entred it into the Register of the *Chastelet*.

But to leave this Ecclesiastical Brangling, and but just mention the Death of *Philip*, the good Duke of *Burgundy*, in the 72^d Year of his Age, who was succeeded by his Son *Charles*, by whom the *Liegeois* were humbled, and to whom the seditious *Ghentois* submitted: we proceed and shew that King *Lewis*

the Essential Ministers thereof, as Members of that Body whereof he was Head; he would therefore free them from all doubts they might have of falling into the Inconveniencies of Change and Deprivation, and provide for their security; and therefore he ordained that thenceforward there should be no Office disposed of, unless it became vacant by Death, voluntary Resignation, or Forfeiture, and adjudged and judicially declared by a proper Judge.

The King's Army the rest of Autumn did not much for as cunning as he was, he was amused by the Breton with the hopes of an Accommodation; however he did not totally lose time, for towards the end of the Year he debauched Rene Count of Pentecôte the Duke of Alençon's Son, to his Interest, who betrayed his own Father and gave up the Castle of Alençon, which in those days was reckoned a considerable Place: The Breton forsook the Town, so that the King finding Monsieur and the Duke amazed at this Accident, he made use of the Pope's Legate to let them know he would refer all Disputes to the Judgment of the General States; and for that purpose he summoned them to meet the first of April at Tours. There all the Deputies proved to be so much at his Devotion, that they did every thing he desired, and ordained that Normandy being united to the Crown, it could not be dismembred and given to his Brother; that that young Prince should be perswaded to be satisfied with 12000 Livres yearly paid him, from Lands assigned for his Appannage, and 60000 Livres Annual Pension, but this not to be a Precedent for the future Sons of France; that the Breton should give up the Places he had in Normandy; and if he refused, to obey they should make War upon him with all their Forces; and to do this they offered their Lives and Fortunes. This the King caused immediately to be signified to his Brother and the Breton and at the same time his Army under the Conduct of the Admiral entred Bretagne, took Chantocé and Ancenis, and penetrated far into the Country; whilst himself after he had visited Paris went towards the Frontiers of Piccardy, to make use of some Instrument to disjoin, if possible, the Duke of Burgundy from them.

Now the Duke at that time having vanquished the
gois, had sent to the King to desire him to leave his
 ends at quiet, otherwise he should be obliged to
 pour them, and indeed he advanced by long Marches
 that end; while the two Princes terrified at their
 dows, hastned their Compliance with the Re-
 tation of the States: Of this the King gave the
Burgundian speedy notice, but he could believe nothing
 at; nay the Duke of *Bretagne's* Herald, who car-
 l the News, was in danger of being hanged as a
 rned Person, because he had seen the King in his
 rney. He did indeed at length believe it, however he
 amped his Army in excellent order along the *Somme*,
 was the first of our Modern Heroes that renew-
 the *Roman* method of intrenching and fortifying
 Camp; but it was not long before the King and
 agreed to a Truce for 120000 Crowns of Gold for
 Duke. King *Lewis* had indeed a Genius that was
 eeding subtil, insinuating and intriguing; and know-
 full well if he could but have a Conference with
Burgundian, he could disunite him from the other
 , or at least sow Seeds of Jealousy between them,
 therefore negotiated an Interview, and went to
 him at *Peronne*, without taking any Guards with
 , but only Cardinal *Le Ballue*, the Duke of *Boierbon*,
 nt of *St. Paul*, and two or three other Lords,
 ehy to shew an entire Confidence: Soon after came

where *Hebert* Count of *Vermandois* had formerly *Charles* the Simple to death. In short, he had lost, had he not found means to gain some of the Domesticks, among whom the excellent *Philip*, *mines* endeavoured to soften the Duke his *Spirits*: At length they entred into a Treaty *Oliver de la Manche* says, the King was still so uneasy as soon as he saw the Duke enter his Chamber, he said, *Brother, am I safe in your House and Country* which the Duke replied, *Yes Sir, And so safe as if I saw an Arrow come towards you, I would expose my self to save you*: Then he rejoined; *I will go where I have promised; but I will keep the Peace be presently sworn to*. Which being accordingly, *Monsieur* was thereby to have the Counties of *Champagne* and *Brie*, and the King to follow the *Burgundian* to the destruction of the unhappy *Liegeois*, with what numbers of Men he pleased. The *Liegeois* for some time defended themselves very gallantly, but the Place was at length taken Sunday after Dinner, when they were left upon Guard; happy were those who could fly over the Bridge to the Forest of *Ardenne*, where yet above half of them perished with Hunger and Cold.

Fear made the King applaud the Duke's Action four days after he managed it so, that he was obliged to depart, and caused the Treaty of *Peronne* to be verified in Parliament, without which, as *Comin* says, the Treaties were of no value; and the Duke made him so ill-favoured Excuses for leading him thither, conducted him only half a League way. Now the *Parisians* being not able to find any fault in the King's Policy that brought him into a Trap at *Peronne*, he contrived a way to divert them somewhat else, by sending to their Houses to take all their Deer, Goats, Cranes, Swans, Corn, and other Creatures, which they kept for Pleasure; likewise all such Birds as were taught to whistle or speak. Perhaps they had instructed some Parrots to say, *Peronne*. But not to anticipate Matters, when he parted with the Duke, he asked him what he would do, in case his Brother would not be contented with *Champagne* and *Brie* for his Appennage. The

Lewis
makes a
Treaty
with the
Burgundian.

An odd
Action of
Lewis.

if he would not take it, and that the King could
satisfy him, he would leave it to them two ;
with inconsiderate Words he failed not to take the
age, as being unwilling his Brother should be so
Neighbour to the *Burgundian* ; and that young
being wholly governed by the Lord of *Lescun*
n, was perswaded to relinquish *Champagne*,
pt of *Guyenne* and the City of *Rochel*. This
was the Loss of that young Prince : Cardinal
before whom the Treaty of *Peronne* had been
with much regret suffered it to be altered,
out of love to *Monsieur*, or that he would
the King still involved in some Perplexity, is not
known, and therefore he and *Heraucoux* wrote to
him to dissuade him from the Exchange, and
promised many things to him for his advantage, tho'
contrary to the King's Intentions : But the Letters be-
recepted, they made an ingenuous Confession,
the King sending the Information to his Brother,
suffered himself to be overcome by his Caresses, ac-
cepted of *Guyenne*, and went to meet him at *Tours*.
The Duke was inclosed in an Iron Cage, a Punishment
deserved, since he was the Inventor of it. The
Duke was put into the Bastile, where he remained
years. The good Correspondence between the
Kings seemed to have been fixed ; and the King, to
keep *Monsieur's* Heart from the Countries on this

lived in Peace, if the Constable and tho
had not still excited him to a Rupture :
ends therein were their Fears, in case of
Peace, the King might think of retrenchin
Allowances ; and his active Mind, if
with Actions abroad, might be put upon
vations at home : Besides these, there wa
trigue of the *Bretons* and Constable, c
favour of *Monsieur* ; who, as they were
strengthen him against the King, had i
with a Desire of marrying the Duke o
only Daughter : And because they knew
would not easily consent to it, they ri

d of complying raised Soldiers at half Pay, but have been at this charge three Months, and seeing no body else, he took it for a Bravado, and so discharged them. The House of *Burgundy* spared their Country so much, that they kept up no Militia nor Garisons in their Towns; however when the Duke had disbanded, he received divers Informations, that all was ready to overwhelm him; *John de Chaalons* Prince of *Orange*, and one of his own Domesticks forsook him; *Baldwin* one of his late Brothers plotted to poison him, the *Breton* renounced his Alliance, and the Constable of *France* was upon *St. Quintin*: So that all he could do for present was to advance with 300 Horse, to cover other Cities on the *Somme*; but upon sight of him the People of *Amiens* turned their Backs, and received the King's Forces, and *Albeville* would have done as much if *Desquerdes* had not hindred it. The Duke thereupon retired hastily to *Arras*, and sent privately to the Constable, to desire him not to push things on to an extremity: But the Answer returned was, that unless *Fleur* would declare for him, he could not be serviceable therein, but that he was ready to undertake his service if he would give him his Daughter in Marriage. A Note from *Monsieur*, conveyed to him in a Letter of Wax, assured him of the same thing; and *Breton* gave him Intelligence that all his Cities of *Rouen* and *Chartres* were ready to revolt, and

Ruin. The Treaty being signed, the King v
Tourain, Monsieur to his Appennage of Gye
the Burgundian into Flanders.'

Sixtus IV. now succeeding *Paul II.* in t
 Chair, he solicited the Christian Princes
 themselves against the *Turks*; for which purpos
 sent Cardinal *Besarion*, a *Greek* by Birth, and
 of great Merit, to the King of *France* and th
 of *Burgundy*; the Cardinal having seen the Du
 the King was so much offended at it, that
 him wait a long time before he would admit
 to his Presence, and when he gave him Audie
 ed him very contemptuously and with much R
 In the mean time the Duke of *Burgundy* was no
 fed with the late Truce, no more were *Monsie*
Breton, nor Constable; so that all four soug
 nite in an Interest: The Marriage of *Monsieur*
 could have been the only Tie, the *Burgundian*
 fed, tho he had no Inclination to it; and upon
 they renewed the League, but the Constable fol
 other Princes to enter into it, the Duke of
 gave the King notice of his Practices, who w
 sembling the matter, contrived to be quit w
 by the same Methods; for he daily par'd awa
 part of his Brother's Appennage, threw one rubo
 and another the next, debauched his Friend
 him, corrupted his Servants, and got them to
 all their Master's Secrets. Now by the Tre
Constans, *John Count of Armagnac* had been r
 to his Lands, but the King having caused the
 seized again, and with the Government of
 bestowed them upon *Monsieur*, he growing disc
 ed, caused the Count to return; and by hi
 with the assistance of the Count of *Foix*,
 Lord *Albret*, he raised Men, either that he m
 be surprized, or for some Enterprize; but w
 the Designs of this young Prince were, th
 blasted by a detestable and cruel Remedy: H
 a Lady, who was the Daughter of the Lord
rean, and Widow of *Lewis d' Amboise*, wh
 fessor was a certain *Benedictine* of *St. John d'*
 named *Versois*; now this wicked Monk poison
 fair Peach, and giving it to that Lady, she at

in steeped it in Wine, and presenting one half of Monsieur to the Prince, eat the other herself, of which she poisoned. died soon after ; the Prince more robust, sustained for while the Attacks of the Venom, but however could not conquer it, and at last died by it on the 12th May.

The King had in the Spring drawn his Troops towards *Guyenne* ; and in the mean time the *Burgundian* passionately desiring to recover *St. Quintin* and *Amiens*, entred into a Treaty with *Lewis*, who promised to foreit, and leave the Counts of *Nevers* and *St. Paul* to his Mercy. Now neither of these two Princes meant of keeping their Word, the Duke first signified but the King deferred it from day to day, expecting what would become of his Brother, and when he had certain advice of his Death, he ridiculed the Duke of *Burgundy*, and seized *Guyenne* again.

When the *Burgundian* heard of the Duke of *Guyenne's* Death, he was in a great Rage, and perhaps not a little concerned also that *Philip de Comines* should leave his Service, and go to the *French King* ; he therefore entred *Piccardy* with Fire in the one hand, and his Sword in the other, made a Bonfire of all the open Country, and sacrificed all that fell under his Power to his Friend's Ghost. *Nesle* taken by Assault, endured all sorts of Cruelties, and such as escaped the

D. of Burgundy ravages Piccardy.

1472.

repulsed before *Diep*, and then before *Rouen*; having threatned *Noyon*, he retired to *Albeville*. On the other hand the King passed from *Guyenne* into *Burgundy* to force the Duke to renounce the League, and to render the Monk to him, that had poisoned *Maurel* for *Oder-Daydic* had seized and carried him to *Paris*; however the Monk was found dead in the Devil as they said, having broke his Neck the before Sentence was to be pronounced upon him. This was what the King would have, that so the of the Murder might perish with the Execution of it; the consequence hereof was his granting a Peace to the *Breton*, which at length was converted to Peace, and the same brought about by the Mediation of *Oder-Daydic*, whom the King by great Rewards had assured to his Service. The *Burgundian* also at the beginning of Winter accepted of a Truce in *February* this Year, the Duke of *Alençon* who had an unquiet Mind, for having contrived I know not what League with him, was confined a Prisoner at *Louvres*, and on the 18th of *July*, the following Year was by a Sentence of Parliament condemned to his Head; but the King being his Godson gave him his Life, and 17 Months after took him out of Prison and put him into a Citizen's House at *Paris* under a good Guard, where he soon after died.

1473.

D. of Alençon's Death.

1474.

About this time *John V.* Count of *Armagnac* who had been once more expelled his Country, fled to the Death of *Monseigneur* seized again upon him at *Leyroure*, and there surprized *Beausieu* Governor of *Guyenne*; but he enjoyed it not long, before the City was closely besieged therein by the King's Army, the Cardinal of *Arras*, and 'tis said, that having capitulated with him, the false Prelate broke his Faith, so that the City was attacked during the Cessation of Arms, and the Count miserably murdered in his House, while his Brother *Charles* was carried Prisoner to *Paris*.

1473.

King *Lewis* at the same time leaving the *Burgundian* to manage his Affairs in *Guelderland*, and with the Emperor *Frederick*, as well as he could, endeavored to recover *Perpignan*, of which *John* King of *Armenia* had repossessed himself by Intelligence: I mea

n only, for the Castle was still in the *French*
ds. King *John* himself was within the Place, and
bove 70 Years old, made a brave defence for two
ths together, till his Son *Ferdinand* came to assist
relieve him. But to leave the Frontiers of *Spain*,
s return again to the *Burgundian*, whose Ambition
g unsatiable, he encouraged *Edward IV.* King of
and to make a descent upon *France*, where he pro-
d to do as much by the Correspondence he had,
hey could with their Forces; and yet instead of
ing for them, he went and ruined his Army before
c on the *Rhine*. King *Charles* in the mean time ac-
culated Enemies on that side against him, parti-
arly the *Swiss Cantons*, whose Alliance he had
ned with the Cities of *Bafil* and *Strasburg*, and o-
s upon the *Rhine*, *Sigismund* Duke of *Austria*,
e Duke of *Lorain*, and even the Emperor *Frede-*
himself: *Sigismund* with the Assistance of the *Swiss*
ntred the County of *Ferrete*, and caused *Hagen-*
s Head, the Duke's Governor there, and the first
t made the *Germans* hate his Master, to be struck
The Duke of *Lorain* sent to declare War against
, even before *Nuz*, by a *Moor* that belonged to
Lord of *Craon*, and *Frederick* armed all the Pow-
f the Empire to force him to raise the Siege; yet
durst not attack him, tho he was four times his

1474

The Bur-
gundian
besieges
Nuz in
vain.

standing he was within ten days of taking mine, he agreed it should be put into the Hands: That done, he went post to find th at *Calais*, leaving his Forces in the Dutchy but in so shattered a Condition that he durst them be seen; he conducted King *Edward* ne, and from thence went to see the Constal *Quintin*, who gave his Word he would give City and all his other Places to the *English*: on their Approach, they basely fired upon th hard to exprefs which was then greater, mazement or their Rage; but the Duke hav a great many Words to interpret the Action best Sense, returned to the Country of *Bar* t his Forces.

On the other hand, King *Edward* by th Historians is represented as a voluptuous Prince fat and slow, and that he had undertaken this ther to screw Money out of his Subjects, th quire Honour and enlarge his Dominions; and fore he had carried over with him some of the Citizens of *London*, who mightily loved th that so their Toil and Weariness might make sooner willing to have a Peace; wherefore t *Lewis*, who feared this War more than an and indeed for a time grew very pensive with prehensions of it, found a way in the Absenc *Burgundian*, by the Power of Intrigues, Flat some Presents, to dispose King *Edward* and cil to hearken to an Accommodation; tho t still afraid *Edward's* Answer to *Lewis's* Heral have been, *We will talk of it in Paris*. Indeed ceedings of the Duke of *Burgundy*, who h the *English* wait too long, and what was w double Dealing and Perfidiousness of the C with the Approach of Winter, gave them a Pretence and Inclination to agree.

At first *Edward's* Plenipotentiaries wor King *Lewis* no other Title in the Negotia their Master's Cousin *Lewis* of *France*, which was forced to give way to; but at length th to a better Understanding, and agreed to a nine Years, wherein the Dukes of *Burgundy*

Peace be-
tween Eng-
land and
France.

might be comprehended, if they pleased, upon condition that the *French* should pay the *English* 100 Crowns of Gold in ready Money, and that the Dauphin was to be married to the King of *England's* Daughter, for the maintenance of whom King *Lewis* should allow the Revenue of *Guyenne* for nine years, or 50000 Crowns annually, which should be carried to the Tower of *London* for the King of *England*. When the Duke of *Burgundy* had notice of what was proposed, he posted to King *Edward*, talked big, and told him, he had procured him a good opportunity to lose his Business, which he should never recover, and so to lose his Right; that it was not for his own Interest that he had engaged therein; and continued he, *To let you see how little I value the Truce, by St. George I will treat with the King, before you have returned into England, and staid there three Months.* Nay the Duke exceeding all bounds of Modesty, spared not to allege, that he ought not to come over Sea, since that Treaty ruined the Reputation of the Kings of *England*, and that he wanted that * *Lion's Heart* that was tried at *Roan*; but all this bluster availing little, the Truce was agreed to, and whilst the Kings were to perform the Treaty, King *Edward* advanced with his Army within half a League of *Amiens*, to whom *Lewis* sent three hundred Waggons laden with the best

if he would not give way, then said he, I will re-
 self to you both. *Edward* being returned home
Burgundian would not accept of the Truce till O-
 and in the mean time he discharged his Indig-
 upon young *Rene Duke of Lorain*, whom he li-
 of his Dukedom all but *Nancy*, which defended
 above two Months. By this time also the *Con-*
 who thought to have maygamed all the three I-
 by promising each of them his Town of *Str. Q.*
 found himself now exposed as the Butt for all o-
 to shoot at; and unhappily his Wife, who was
 Queen's Sister, died: So that at last being very
 tain what course to take, he retired into the C-
 of the *Burgundian*, whom he guessed to be the
 exorable, and who in effect had promised he
 go thither in Safety; but he was no sooner go-
Str. Quintin, than the King seized it, who g-
 tice thereof to the Duke of *Burgundy*, requir-
 to deliver up that Infidel, in exchange for the
 conformable to an Article of the Truce between
 The Duke being then before *Nancy*, and un-
 leave it, ordered the Constable to be seized at
 from whence he was carried to *Peronne*, with
 that his People should not deliver him up, til
 tain remote day enough, wherein he believed he
 take *Nancy*, and then he flattered himself he
 recal his Order; but the Place defending it self
 Expectation, the Constable with all his Paper-
 ven up to his Enemies, tried and condemned to
 the Parliament, and on the 19th of Dec. exe-
 Greve; and we may add also in this Place, th-
 the end of this Year, *Perpignan*, after eighteen
 Siege, and the enduring of the greatest Scarc-
 surrendered, and so the Country of *Roussillon*
 ed once more in the Hands of the French.

Constable
seized.

Executed.

1477.

But a little to proceed with the Adventure
 Duke of *Burgundy*, he being not content with
 Conquest of *Lorain*, would go upon farther ar-
 et Enterprizes, and therefore begun with the
 whom he would needs force to stoop to his I-
 refused their humble Submissions and Offers of
 into an Alliance with him, and renounce all o-
 ven that with King *Lewis*: His pretence to att-

6. *The Reign of Lewis XI.*

403

Invasion they had made upon the Lands of the
of Romand, the Quarrel between them having
 ly about a Cart-load of Sheep-Skins, which
 nt had taken from them. To be short, they
 nd of an Engagement on the 5th of *April* at
 , wherein the Duke lost his Infantry and rich
 ge, and on the 20th of *June* all his Forces, e-
 he number of 18000 Men before *Murat*; and
 in the 5th of *January*, his own Life and the *D. of Bur-*
ir of his House, before *Nancy*; for you must gundy
 at after the Battel of *Murat*, Duke *Rene* had slain.
Nancy, and the *Burgundian* besieging it aga
 here surrounded by the Enemy, defeated and
 h three Wounds, in the 46th Year of his Age,
 ; had ruled only eight. There is a vast heap
 remaining to this Day at *Muret*, with this
 on, *Caroli fortissimi Burgundiorum Ducis*
us Muretum obsidens, ab Helvetiis casus, hoc
numentum reliquit. His Standards and Co-
 represently carried to Duke *Rene*, who ob-
 the Fuzils or Irons to strike which they carri-
 , *What a pity is it, that when this Prince would*
self, he could not make use of these Fuzils to
re wish? for you must know the Duke in his
 carried an Iron to strike Fire between two
 rds of Wood, whereby he intimated it was

The Reign of Lewis XI. Boc

As to the first, indeed he almost brought it to pass, and without much difficulty, there were few Governors left that were Proof against his Birth, the Fears of losing their Estates. *Albeville* was the first that surrendered, and when he appeared in *Paris*, *Bischof*, a Man of a mean Condition, accepted by the late Duke *Charles*, gave him up, while others delivered *Hain* and *Bouchain*; *St. Martin*, *Roye* and *Montdidier* were taken by the King. Now while the King was at *Peronne*, came Ambassadors to him from the Princess *Mary* to sue for Peace, to offer him all Obedience, and the Marriage of the Dauphin. He neither accepted nor refused the Terms, but obliged them, in order to conclude the Peace, to acquit *Desquerdes* of the Treason he had made to the House of *Burgundy*, and to give him up *Arras* to the French; this he having already underhand engaged to enter in their Service, and caused *Hesdin*, *Bologne* and *Combray* to be likewise surrendered to him. *Arras* had taken an Oath to the King, but soon after for what they had done, they would have some Forces that were at *Domay*, being the same that had been defeated at *Nancy*; but they were cut off in the Plain Field, and the Lord de *Beaumont* taken Prisoner, the King went on to lay Siege to *Arras*, and he was so far from being softened with Anger, that he would needs raze it to the Ground; but tho' *Desquerdes* interposed and pleaded against that Resolution, yet many of the Citizens suffered, and lost even their Lives contrary to the Capitulation.

On the other hand, the Prince of *Orange* now a second time reconciled himself to the King, he persuaded the Estates of the Dutchy and of *Burgundy*, partly by Argument, and partly by Force, to submit themselves to him, which was easily accomplished by him, because *Verges* a potent and zealous Lord of those Countries was a Prisoner. Indeed *Orange* had been fed with hopes of having the Government of both Countries conferred upon him, and to have some Territories restored to him, which Duke *Charles* had cat-

by a Sentence given in favour of his Uncles the Lewis
of *Montguyon*: And as a farther Lure to the seizes upon
, he insinuated to them, that the King did not both Bur-
upon those Countries to detain them, but to pre- gundies.
them only for the Princess against the *Swiss* and
ans; but when he once got into possession, the
was quite changed, and the King's Title declared,
, that of Reversion for want of Heirs Male to
utchy, and that of Donation to the County,
he pretended had been given to the Crown of
e by Count *Orto V.* of that Name, when he
ed his Daughter to *Philip the Long*.
led the greatest Disorder in the Affairs of the The Trou-
of *Burgundy* did rise from the *Ghentois*, who bles of the
they heard of Duke *Charles* his Death, re Nether-
their Commotions, slew their Magistrates, lands.
ized upon the Person of their Princess, and
would needs manage every thing at their Plea-
Those of her Council were the Dutchess Dow-
Margaret Sister to *Edward IV.* the Lord *Ravestein*,
Cancellour Hugonet, and the Lord *Imbercourt*.
likewise called to their Assistance the Bishop of
Duke of *Cleves*, and the Count of *St. Paul's*
who were all divided about the Marriage of the
In the mean time the Deputies of *Ghent*
gone to the *French King*, on the behalf of the
of *Flanders*, and said they had full Power to

amused with the Marriage of his Daughter to the Dauphin, and loved his ease so much that he could not live in it.

Princess of
Burgundy
married.

Now *Olivier le Dain*, King *Lewis* his Barber, who would make himself to be believed to be some considerable Person, took a Commission to reduce the City of *Ghent*, as thinking he had much Credit amongst them, because he was a Country-man's Son of those Parts; but the *Ghentois* baffled him according to his Deserts, and therefore retreating from thence he hapned to surprize *Tournay*; at which the *Ghentois* taking the Alarm, they went Headlong to attack the Place, and *Adolph de Guelares* was killed upon this Retreat. Indeed their Design was he should marry the Princess, who being very glad to have been delivered so from him, at last resolved which to take of many Husbands proposed to her; and she pitched upon *Maximilian* Son to the Emperor *Frick*, to whom she was betrothed in her Father's Life time. The Marriage was consummated at *Ghent* about the end of *July*; but he was so poor that his Wife was forced to be at the Charge of the Wedding, his Equipage, and Maintenance of his Servants. She had little Advantage at first by her Marriage, either from his Covetous Father, or rich Uncle *Sigismund*: However the King in respect to the Emperor entered into some Conferences with *Maximilian*, granted him a Years Truce, and restored *Quefroy*, *Bouchain* and *Cambray*, which were within the Territories belonging to the Empire; tho' others say, they drove out the French Garisons, and surrendered to *Maximilian*.

A Truce.

In the mean time *Trimoville* Lord of *Craon*, General of King *Lewis* his Army in *Burgundy*, treating the Prince of *Orange* ill, and not restoring to him the Lands, for which he had an expresse Order from the King; the Prince struck in with *Vaudrey* and got more of the Nobility of the Country, and afterwards drew off the whole Province. It's true, the Battle afterwards lost near *Monguyon* brought back the Dutchy, but the War did not end there as to the County: And amongst other Actions, *Craon* had shamefully raised the Siege of *Dole*, the King w

ry at this and the Devastations he made, that he
him out, and put *Charles d'Amboise Chaumont*
Place. This was the Person who laid the Foun-
of the first League between the Kings of *France*
be *Swiss*, whereby he stipulated that the King
allow the Cantons an Annual Pension of 20000
, and as much to some particular People: In
ration of which they were to furnish him with
Men to be maintained at the King's Pay, and
e him the first Rank amongst all their Allies;
ch they somewhat boggled, because the Duke
wy had ever held it.

*The first
League be-
tween the
Swiss and
French,*

Truce being now expired between *France* and *War r-*
sh-Duke *Maximilian*, he caused some Forces to *newed.*
to *Burgundy*, who more by the Affection of *1478.*
people concerned for the Race of their an-
ninces, than by their own proper Strength,
saume, Chastillon, Bar, Semur, and divers other
with so much ease, that if the Emperor had
his Son never so little, he had at that time re-
red all the Dutchy: But *D'Amboise* who had
d Money enough, chased him almost as easily
in, and thereupon the Truces were renewed
e Months.

it this time it was that King *Lewis* constituted
ain over the Gentlemen Pensioners, and in-
their number: the same had been a long time

Council, and continuing the Pragmatick; wherefore he convened all the Prelates and Deputies of the Universities of the Kingdom at *Orleans*; and dispatched a Splendid Embassy to the Pope, to require him to revoke the Excommunication he had thundred out against the *Florentines*, and that they should severely punish all the Accomplishes of that Conspiracy.

1479.

French
take Dole.

To return again to the Actions of the Field: The second Truce being expired, *Chaumont* took the Field first, and scowred all the Country even to *Dole*; which being taken by the Treachery of the *Garn* Forces, who entring therein to relieve it, introduced the *French*; they sacked and destroyed it, so that it remained for some Years buried in its own Ruins. At the same time *Maximilian* with his Army laid Siege to *Tournay*, but upon the Approach of the *French* Army under *Desquerdes* he drew off to give him Battel: They engaged near the Village of *Campasle*; the *Flemings* at first were forced to give Ground, but the *French* pushing it too far, the Counts of *Nassau* and *Romont* rallying some Troops, put the *French* to flight, and left the Field to *Maximilian*, tho much more covered with the Carcases of his own Men than his Enemies; however this Day regained some Reputation to his Affairs: But the Loss which the *Flemings* sustained this Year by Sea was of vast Consideration; for the *Normans* took 80 of their Ships laden with Wheat, coming from *Prussia*, and all their Fleet of Herrings.

Maximi-
lian beats
the
French.

Lewis lost
his Senses.
1480.

Now as all things almost went well with King *Lewis* according to his Desire, it so hapned, that being at Village near *Chinon* in *March*, he was suddenly deprived of his Speech and Senses, and recovered neither of them in less than two days; and even then his Body remained so weak and languishing, that could never recover his full Strength: Hereupon a Legate, who was the Pope's Nephew, took the opportunity to intercede for the Cardinal *De la Baluz*, who on his Part did so cunningly feign his Urine stopped, that the King being perswaded he could not live long, and being loth to let him die in Prison set him at Liberty towards the end of *November*, upon condition he should leave the Kingdom.

actually retired to *Rome*. In the mean time
 ge, Jealousy and Distrust, which are the Signs
 weak and ill-tempered Soul, increased upon the
 Spirits, while he decreased in Strength: He
 afraid, if they thought him incapable of acting,
 would usurp the Government; the Duke of *Bour-*
 ing almost the only Prince that had the Quali-
 ns necessary for such a Pretension, he hated
 to that Degree, that he seized his Estate, and
 for some colourable occasions to ruine him.
 same time, whether it were that he grew mis-
 it of his Natural Subjects, or for some other
 n, he disbanded the *French* Archers, and raised
 nies of Foreigners, especially of *Swissers*, in *A Truce*
 head: In this Condition he was glad to make *between*
 he with *Maximilian* for seven Months, to com- *the French*
 in *August*, and the same was prolonged the fol- *and Maxi-*
 Year for a twelve Month longer. *milian.*

have already hinted, that *Charles* Duke of *Bur-*
 , a Prince whose Thoughts were ever intent for
 desiring to imitate the *Roman* Discipline,
 begun to keep and excercise his Men in Camps;
 fore King *Lewis* after his Example caused one
 made in a Plain near *Pont de Larche*, retrenched
 locked up with Wagons; the Command of which
 inferred upon *Desqueredes*, and posted therein
 Foot, consisting of Pikemen and Halberdeers

Savoy, upon pretence that these young Prince his Sister's Children.

K. Lewis
jealous of
everything.
1481.

Now every thing suggesting Apprehensions
ger to the King, he kept the Queen his W
distance from him, and for these last Years co
her in *Savoy*; he bred his Son like a Captive
boise amongst Servants, lest he should grow t
spirited, and always took along with him t
Prince of the Blood *Lewis* Duke of *Orleans*,
fering any to cultivate his Intellectuals by any
tion. Indeed this Year he married him to J
of his own Daughters, a most wise Princess; l
and lame, and one whom the Physicians assur
uncapable of bearing Children, since perhap
had taken a course to prevent it. It was not lo
the King's Return from *St. Claud* that he fell t
time into a Swooning Fit, and' caused himself
carried to *Clery*, where he had built a Church, de
to the Virgin; and there he received some Rel
it was of no long duration.

Provence
left to
Lewis by
Will.

But now to pursue all Transactions as far
as we can, that interfered before the King's
Charles d' Anjou Count of *Mayn* dying on the
December at *Marseilles*, did by his last Will co
King *Lewis* his universal Heir in all his Lands a
ritories to him and the Kings of *France* his Su
for ever, and most earnestly recommended to
maintain *Provence* in all its Liberties, Customs a
rogatives. Now *Rene* Duke of *Lorain*, and th
Toland of *Anjou* exclaimed against this D
maintaining it ought not to be made to his Pr
while the King on the contrary justified it to b
because *Provence* was a Country governed by a
Law, according to which any Person might
of his own in favour of whom he pleased;
the Earls of *Provence* had always called th
to their Succession, to the prejudice of the Da
and because *Souliers* had so managed the h
Charles, as to make these Reasons go down w
for Authentick, he gave him the Governm
rather the Sovereignty of *Provence* during hi
Life. Again, *France* had been afflicted with
Famine this Year, after which followed an E

Famine and
Sickness.

Distemper altogether extraordinary, that seized Great and Small, the same being a continued and hot Fever, which set the Head on fire, whereof most People fell into Frenzies, and as it were died

on the other hand, when the Affairs of *Mary Dutches* of *Burgundy* began to be settled, that Prince- of Bur-
going out a hunting fell from her Horse, and died gundy's
at *Ghent* on the 25th of *May*, with the Fruit Death.
with her Womb was pregnant, leaving how- 1482,
two Children behind her, *Philip* and *Margaret*,
whom we shall hear more in the Sequel of this
story. But her Death revived the Troubles of the
nations, her Husband having so little Authority
ought them that he was forced to suffer his Children
her, to remain under the Guard of the *Ghentois*.
Guordes had indeed even last Year made himself
her of *Aire* for fifty thousand Crowns bestowed on
Governor; and so being possess'd with such an ad-
mirable Post for the bridling of the *Flemings*, he
ought them to incline, as well by Policy as Force,
treat of a Marriage between *Margaret* the Daugh-
ter of their deceased Princess, and the Dauphin *Charles*,
she was scarce two Years old, and *Charles* al-
most twelve. The Ambassadors from *Ghent* hav-
seen the King at *Clery*, gave their Council an
account of his Intentions, and that he required only

of to have been the occasion of his Death, which hapned on the 4th of *April* the same Year: Where they farther add, *France* was delivered from the Apprehensions of many Mischiefs he might have done during the minority of *Charles VIII.*

But now more particularly to come to King *Lewis* his own State; 'tis singular in History to read, what the fear of Death, and of losing his Authority, made this King do during the last Year of his Reign; as the dancing of young Maidens about his Court, and the numbers of Physicians that played on Flagelets, and were brought from all parts to divert him; the Processions made all the Kingdom over for his Health, publick Prayers put up to Heaven, to prevent the blowing of some sorts of Winds which incommoded him; a great heap of Reliques which he sent for from all Corners, even the *S. Amples*, or Holy Oil, with which he seemed as if he would have armed himself against Death; the great Sway his Physician *Cottier* had over him, who growled at him as if he were his Servant, and squeezed 55000 Crowns out of him, besides many other Boons in the space of five Months; nay, he had the Impudence one day to brave him, saying, *I very well know that one of these Mornings you will chase me away, as you have done by others; but I swear by my Maker you shall not live eight days longer:* The Baths of Childrens Blood which he made use of to sweeten his sharp and purgent Humours: Lastly, his voluntary confining himself to the Castle of *Du Plessis le Touais*, into which none could enter but thro a Wicket, the Walls of which were well defended with Iron Spikes, and lined Day and Night with Cross-Bars. He was every Hour upon the brink of Eternity, and yet he strove to persuade those about him that he was well, and sent Embassies to all Princes, bought up all manner of Curiosities out of Foreign Countries; and made it appear he was alive by the bloody Effects of his Vengeance, which could not die but with him.

His greatest Hopes were in a holy Hermit, named *Francis Marchile*, a Native of *Calabria*, the Founder of the Order of the *Minimes*, whom he caused purpose to come into *France*, upon the same of

Word

lers he had wrought ; he flattered him, cast him-
 r his Feet, implored him to prolong his Days,
 hat not ; nay he built the two Convents for his
 : But the Hermit talk'd to him only of God,
 hortod him to think more of the Life to come
 this ; tho *Philip de Comines* says only, *That he*
red the King as a wise Man should do, without
 us the Curiosity of having the Particulars.
 Monday the 25th of *August* he grew very sick,
 was forced to acknowledg himself not only Mortal
 in a dying Condition, but as dead ; and therefore
 all those that were about him, *Go to my Son your*
, and serve him faithfully. Then he sent for his
 from *Amboise*, and gave him excellent Counsel, *Lewis his*
 rting him to be governed by the Advice of *Advice to*
 Princes of the Blood, his Lords, and other *his Son.*
 Subjects ; not to change his Officers after
 Decease, to ease his Subjects, and reduce the
 es of Money to the antient Methods of the King-
 , which imported the raising none without the
 Gent of the People ; for he had increased the
 es to 4700000 Livres, an excessive Sum for those
 s, whereby the People were miserably oppressed :
 ordered them to tell *Desquardes* that they should
 over the Enterprize they had formed against
 us, lest the *English* should be incensed ; that he

Golden Chain of Government, and by more Arts than had been formerly known, subverted Laws by which the Fury of his Predecessors had been restrained, and taught others to do the like; in that *Mezeray* observes he was the first that *méchors de Page*, or brought those Kings out of Goshop; which must needs be the Laws by which they were limited and restrained. Then that he went to a high Degree, is manifest in that he had put People to Death by exquisite Torments, and sometimes gratified his savage Nature by being a Spectator of their Miseries: Nay, most of them were executed without the Formality of the Law, many were drowned with a Stone about their Necks, precipitated over a versatile Plank, from whence they fell upon Wheels armed with Spikes and sharp Saws, while others were stifled in Dungeons; *Tristram* Provost of his Household being alone both Witness and Executioner.

That he was devout in outward Appearance is certain, so he had a persuasive and attracting influence: He was wonderful subtil in setting his Enemies at variance one with another, and in unravelling Quarrels again: Neither must his Liberality in rewarding Services, when they hit his Fancy, go unobserved. I cannot say, as the *French* Historians do, that he was praise-worthy in not suffering an Ambassador from Sultan *Bajazet* to come nearer to him than *seilles*, as believing one could not be a Christian who had Communication with the Enemies of the Faith, since Embassies are civil Acts of Government, and necessarily to be allowed of between all Nations. But indeed his undertaking to reduce all Weights and Measures to one Standard, and to set up a Common Custom in all the Provinces, was very commendable, so was his Intention and Resolution to have Justice administered to every particular Person: He had instituted two Parliaments, that of *Bordeaux*, which had been promised by *Charles VII.* his Father, and the other of *Burgundy*; the Letters Patents of the First being dated *June 7th 1462*, and the other of the 18th of *March, 1476*.

would not allow his Son to be brought up in good
 nature, either from an Apprehension of making him
 knowing (which indeed was ridiculous) or for fear
 might injure his delicate and tender Complexion by
 Study ; not that he himself despised Learning,
 was altogether ignorant, as some have suggested ;
Comines says, *He was well enough read, that he had*
her sort of Education than the Lords of his King-
dom ; and that according to Gaguin he understood Books,
had more Learning than Kings were wont to have.
 which we may add, that he much increased the
 al Library begun by *Charles V.* at *Fontainbleau*,
 which was transferred to the *Louvre* by *Charles VI.*
 he gave a kind Reception, and favourably enter-
 ed those learned Men who made their Escape out
 of Greece after the taking of *Constantinople* ; that he
 pleasure to induce some out of foreign Parts to
 into *France*, with large Presents ; and amongst
 s, the famous *Galeotus Martinus* was one ; and
 he gave himself the trouble of compleating
 Reformation of the University of *Paris*, by the
 of *John Boccard* Bishop of *Auranches*, and a
 Telier named *Wesel Gransfort*, a Native of *Gron-*
en : Besides, 'tis certain the Kings of *France*, and
 ularly those of the third Race, have all been
 uted in good Learning, except *Philip de Valois*.

C H A P. VII.

*The Reign of CHARLES V.
named the Affable or Cour.*

*Disputes
about the
Regency.
1483.*

THE late King having by Will ment to the Lady of Be out mentioning the Regency, tring into his fourteenth year; r Blood, I mean *Lewis* Duke of O Duke of *Bourbon*, disputed it with ner, and that King *Charles* ought to be counted a cause of the weakness of his Co want of Education; his Father havi fore hinted, shut him up in the Cause bred amongst inferior Servants. *Lewis* were grounded upon his being first r Blood, but he himself was not yet at l the Duke of *Bourbon*, as having mar Aunt, esteemed himself more proper of it than a Woman; who in *Fi* thought capable of governing, since looked upon to be fit to reign. But petitioners being not able to agree wh they referred the Contest to the Deter General States, and the King's C Year following.

*Assembly of
the States.
1484.*

In the mean time, they chose a C Persons, whereof some were put in by another, but they were such as other Court, and were trained up to m v ing learned nothing but what was produce nothing that was substantially leave these Wicked Ministers, the met at *Tours*, whither the Kin ten ces of the Blood, and all t c Kingdom, went; and the f v o Chancellor *de Rochefort* in the great mal the Archbishop, where it was enacted,

attained to fourteen, he should be reputed of Age; he should preside in Council, *Orleans* in his Absence, and in case he failed, then the Duke of *Bourbon*: That the Lady *Beaujeu* should have the Government of the young King, for whom a Council of 12 should be chosen, consisting of the Princes of the blood, and other most considerable Persons in the Kingdom. In the mean time, the Office of Constable was lodged in the Duke of *Bourbon*, and Governments and Pensions conferred upon *Orleans* and the other Princes.

They never had such a fair Opportunity to redress *Some Grievances* and erect Bulwarks, for the defence of the *vances redressed* Liberty as now; but the President of the *Parliament*, divers Ecclesiasticks, Deputies of the City of *Paris*, and some others suffered themselves to be deluded and steered by the Court-Gale and Compass, and they betrayed the Publick Cause: However they did not prevent them from annulling most of the *Edicts* made by *Lewis XI.* exclaiming against his excess-Donations, setting a Brand-mark upon the Memory of those that had been the Ministers of his Unwisdom, nor from discharging the People from a great part of the Taxes, and Soldiers quartered upon them. The Assembly being over, the Advocate General of Parliament, upon certain Accusations, made Prosecution of the most infamous and insolent Mini-

the Lords of the Country at the time that the Estate were held at *Tours*, assumed the Confidence to try to force him away from the Duke; but failing in their Enterprize, he let loose all the Authority of his Prince against them, and reduced them to the Necessity of defending themselves. Now the Duke of *Orleans*, who was then at *Tours*, having a Project in his Head of acquiring *Bretagne* by marrying the Duke's eldest Daughter, he went into that Country to offer *Lordais* his Assistance, being persuaded that by such an Obligation laid upon him, he might help him to that great Match: The Lords indeed would willingly have taken shelter under the Protection of this young Prince, but *Lordais* having forestalled them, they made their Application to the Lady *Beaujeu* his Enemy, who immediately espoused their Cause. 'Tis true, this Fire lay hid for some Years under its Ashes, but at last broke out to the Ruin of *Bretagne*, as we shall have occasion to observe in proper Time and Place.

Charles
owned.

In the mean while, King *Charles* was on the good *June* crowned at *Rheims* with the usual Ceremony and Magnificence; and being returned to *Paris*, he was encountred with Complaints from the Duke of *Bretagne*, for having supported the Rebellion of his Subjects; but the Lady *Beaujeu*, according to her Father's wonted Method, instead of returning him an Answer, debauched his Ambassadors from his Service, by making *d'Urfe* Grand Escuyer, and bestowing upon *Riviere* the Mayoralty of *Bordeaux*. Indeed the Council constituted by the Estates had neither Power nor Virtue, the Lady *Beaujeu* usurped all the Authority, turning out all from the King's Service that were not at her Devotion, and brought in *Urfe*, *Riviere* and *Graville* the Great Chamberlain, who watched and as it were cooped up the young King, so as if he were besieged. Now these People wanting for brave daring Hero to oppose the Duke of *Orleans* likewise kept *Rene* Duke of *Lorain* at Court, to whom they restored the Dutchy of *Bar*, till such time as King should be at Age, to do him Justice in respect of *Provence*, assigning him an annual Pension of thirty thousand Livres, and a Company of an hundred Lances.

Now during these Disorders in *France*, the Scene is quite changed in *England*; for *Henry* Earl of *Richmond* of the House of *Lancaster*, after many years Confinement in *Bretagne*, upon the Death of *Edward IV.* having obtained his Liberty, and *Richard* having usurped the Crown with the Destruction of two Nephews the Sons of *Edward*, he returned to *England*, and having defeated and slain *Richard* Battle, got the Crown of *England* established upon himself and Family. But to return into *France* again, the Duke of *Orleans*, and the Constable the Duke of *Bourbon*, made a new Party against the Government; into which they engaged the Duke of *Bre-* *Civil*
tagne, *Charles* Earl of *Angoulesme*, the Duke of *Alen-* *Broils.*
and *John de Chaalons* Prince of *Orange*, who is a Sister's Son of the Duke of *Bretagne*; of all which *Charles* Earl of *Dunois* was the *Primum Mobile*. *Dunois* was the first that spoke, and being withdrawn from the Assembly, demanded an Assembly of the States; to which they immediately carried the King thither, besieged and forced him to an Accommodation, whereby it was agreed the Earl of *Dunois* should return to *Ast* in *Piedmont*. This done, they got the King to march against *Bourbon*, who finding him on a sudden in the midst of his Country, accepted of such conditions as they would impose upon him; most of

1485.

Londais
anged.

Lords of the Country for the Administration of the Publick Affairs. *Londais* being informed of this, would have the Chancellor sign an Instrument, whereby all the Duke's Commanders, who had entred into that Capitulation with the Rebels, should be declared Traytors; but the Chancellor was so far from doing of that, that being summoned by the Lords to bring *Londais* to Justice, he took several Informations, upon which an Order was made to seize *Londais's* Person; and the Lords of the Duke's Council and others joining in with them, he was taken in the Duke's Chamber, and by the way of the Gallows quickly sent into another World, to answer for the many Crimes he had committed.

1486.

Archduke *Maximilian* was now elected King of the *Romans*, and on the 12th of April crowned at *Aix la Chappelle* with *Charlemain's* Crown; he had before surprized the City of *Tournay*, for which the *Mareschal d'Esquerdes* made a sharp War upon him, and pressed him so hard, that he was forced to write to all those Cities in the Kingdom who had undertaken the Guaranty of the Treaty he had made with the King, complaining of this Unjustice done him by that Lord and the Lady *Beaujeu* in the King's Name: One of his Heralds brought the Letter, which was read in the Town-Hall of *Paris*; but he received no other Answer than what those about the King were pleased to dictate; and *Maximilian* proving unsuccessful almost in every thing, and withal very poor, he retired to *Malines*, where he caused his Son to be kept and brought up.

All this while the Duke of *Bretagne* was almost overwhelmed with Grief for the loss of his *Londais*; however he was forced to contain himself, and grant a General Act of Indempnity; but all the Precautions he could take, would not serve turn, for the time almost come to put a Period to that State, and I know not what Fatality hurried them to it. Now *Beaujeu* being informed that *Orleans* was forming some Design against her, commanded him to come to Court, the Duke complied upon the second Summons; the next day being the 5th of *January* he went into the Country upon pretence of hawking, and fled.

Bret.

Bretagne, where he met with an extraordinary kind of Reception, even to make the Lords of the Country conscious of him; and the King's Council being sensible of their Apprehensions, offered them all imaginable Assistance to help them to expel the Duke, and the Duke of the *French* out of their Country. The wisest were not for engaging so great a Power in their Interest, but the other prevailing, they made a League with King *Charles*, whereby he was tied to bring no more than four hundred Lances into their Country, four thousand Foot; that they should be recalled on as ever the Duke of *Orleans* and his Party had possessed *Bretagne*; and that he should neither take nor give any Place without the consent of the *Marschal de Rieux*, nor lay any Claim or Pretence to the Country. But whatever the Treaty contained, the King's Council were persuaded *Bretagne* appertained to them, by virtue of a Cession made by the Heirs of *Jeanne* to *Lewis XI.* nay some of the *Bretons* themselves, who loved to swim in deep and large Waters, hoped to find fairer Fortunes in the Court of France, confirmed them in this Opinion; and it was by his Design they carried the King to the Frontiers of that Country: Being at *Amboise*, he had private Intelligence that the Count of *Dunois*, contrary to his Commands, was returned from *Ast* to *Pernay* in *Poi-*

in an Iron Cage, condemned by Parliament to lose the fourth of his Estate, and to be confined to one of his own Houses for ten Years.

At the same time the Earl of *Angoulême*, and the Lord de *Ponts* made a rising in *Guyenne*, where *Oder-Daydie*, Brother to the Earl of *Cominge*, held *Saintes*, *Fronsac*, *la Reoule*, *Dags* and *Bayonne*, while the Duke of *Orleans* raised Men in *Bretagne*. But the Towns of *Guyenne* surrendered at first sight and naming of the King; *Albret* had got some Men to support them, but durst not appear; and at length the King dividing his Army into four Parts, they fell upon *Bretagne* in as many several Quarters, the King himself staying in the mean while at *Laval* to see the Event: The Duke hereupon withdrew to the Heart of his Country, while the French took *Ploetmel*, *Vann* and *Dinant*; and then it was that the Lords who perceived the Error they had committed in urging them to come in: This done, they besieged *Nantes*, wherein the Duke himself was with all the Soldiers he had left him, and from whence he had dispatched the Count of *Dunois* to *Henry VII.* King of *England* for Assistance: This Count being two or three times retarded back by bad Weather, armed the Common People of the lower *Bretagne*, at least to the number of 60000 Men, and was so fortunate, that with this confused Multitude he so terrified the French, as to get an Opportunity to put Relief into the Town, which afterwards valued not the Siege that after about six Weeks time the Enemy raised: But the King's Forces brought the Lord of *Albret* to disband and submit at the Castle of *Nontron*, upon the Borders of *Limosin*.

French
besiege
Nantes in
vain.

1488.

During these Transactions, *Desquerdes* by Intelligence surprized *St. Omers* and *Tournay*, and defeated the Forces of *Ravestein*, whom they had drawn thither by a pretended Bargain for the City of *Brabant* where the Duke of *Cleve* and Count of *Nassau*, fighting on foot, were taken Prisoners. And indeed they went worse and worse with *Maximilian*, who was last seized and made Prisoner by the People of *Brabant* and with much ado he got them to forbear delivering him up to the French King, and obtained his Liberty.

to leave this Prince to retire to his Father the
 r into *Germany*, and the Government of his
 lip and his Territories to *Albert Duke of Sax-*
 e are to observe that besides force of Arms,
 ncil proceeded in a form of Justice against the
 in League with the *Breton*; and in *February*
 ; in Parliament, ordered the Dukes of *Bretagne*
 ans to be summoned to appear at the Marble
 and the same was sent by the Provost of *Pa-*
 mpanied with a Member of that Court, and
 ef Usher, and all Advantages of Defaults
 en against them. Now *de Rieux* and some of
 ls of *Bretagne*, finding he went much farther
 e bounds of the Treaty, they petitioned him
 oceed, and offered to send the Duke of *Orle-*
 f the Country with all the *French* that belong-
 n; who indeed shewed themselves willing e-
 lay down their Arms, and retire to their re-
 homes, provided they might live in Safety :
 gen thinking she was now above all Danger,
 ntly replied, *The King would have no Rival nor*
bat he would not stop there, but proceed with his
ce : The Lords perceiving his Intentions here-
 nciled themselves to their Duke, Marechal
 openly declared for him, received some of
 into *Ancennis*, and took upon him the Com-
 the Army: but for *Reyn* and *Quistin* his

French
defeat the
Bretons.

but being on their March, they heard it had capitulated as well as *St. Aubin*; but the King's Army under *Trimoville* apprehending they would go and retake that Place, marched up to oppose them, and Battel with them on the 28th of July, near the *Village of Orange* between *Rennes* and *St. Aubin*: The Fight was very bloody, but at last *Trimoville* obtained Victory; and the Duke of *Orleans* with the Prince of *Orange*, who fought on Foot for the Bretons, made Prisoners, and six thousand of their Men. The Duke of *Orleans* was soon after set at Liberty by the *Beaujeu*, he having married her Husband's Daughter, and she made him the King's Lieutenant in *Bretagne*; but she kept the Duke of *Orleans* in safe Custody at the Castle of *Lusignan*, and afterwards in the Tower at *Bourges*. There was some days before the Battle a strange Prefage of this Battel observed in that Country, for great Flocks of Choughs, and a multitude of Ravens grappled so furiously with their Beaks and Talons against one another, that a vast deal of Ground was covered with their dead Carcases.

Peace be-
tween
France and
Bretagne.

Indeed the Fidelity of the Breton Lords was shaken by this rude shock of Fortune; the *Duke of Roan* encouraged to declare the Pretensions of the Duke of *Bretagne* to the Dutchy, as being the Son of *Mary* Sister of the Duke of *Bretagne*, as he alledged, partly Heiress of Duke *Francoys* who had caused *Dinan* and *St. Malo* to fall into his Hands. But the People of *Rennes* very bravely refused to be nothing, rather than unfaithful to their Duke thus distressed was advised to endeavour to obtain a Commodation with the King, to whom he sent the *Count of Dunois*, and wrote with a submission usual to the Dukes of *Bretagne*. The King had some Pretensions to the Dutchy, and required the Guardianship of the Duke's Daughters: At last they agreed upon Arbitrators to judge the Right; but in the mean time he consented to grant them a Peace, upon condition he should not marry any of his Children without his Consent; that he should remove all Foreign Leagues and Alliances, and let him retain all the Places he had conquered in that Country. So the Duke grown very old, overwhelmed with

urt with a Fall from his Horse, died on the 9th of *Duke of*
ber at *Nantes*, having reigned 32 Years; and *Bretagne*
s Will appointed the Marechal *De Rieux* to be *dies.*
daughters Guardian, with whom he joined *Oder-*
ie, Earl of *Cominges* his intimate Friend, and
ed the Lady *Chasteau Briand* to be their Gover-
who were only two, *Ann* and *Isabel*, whereof
ft died about two Years after; but now they re-
to the City of *Guerrande*.

e Duke of *Lorain* after the Decease of the *Breton*
ciled himself to the Court of *France*, in hopes
braining some Assistance for the recovering of
Kingdom of *Naples*; and the opportunity was
adapt, since most of the Barons of that Coun-
had revolted against King *Ferdinand* because
s Tyrannies, and invited *Rene* to go and take
llion of that Crown. *Innocent VIII.* favoured
and his Gallies waited a long while in the
of *Genua* to take him on Board, and several
e *French* Nobility shewed a great deal of for-
ness to follow him; but those that had the Ascen-
over the King thwarted him all they could, as
ng him the Glory of this Conquest; so that mak-
o long a Delay, the Pope agreed with *Ferdinand*,
he whole Design miscarried.

t to resume the Affairs of *Bretagne*, tho they were *The Af-*
fairs of

1489.

Disputes were like to have come to Blows: The French fearing to be besieged in *Redon* by the English, would needs retire to *Nantes*, into which the Marechal would not admit her, but only her own Domesticks; upon which she goes to *Renne*, where the Inhabitants gave her a solemn Reception. The Dutchy was divided into two Parties, one stuck to the Dutchess, and the other sided with the Marechal her Guardian.

During these Turmoils King *Charles* seized *Normandy* and *Conquer*, and the Question was put in his mind whether he should compleat the Conquest of *France* by Force of Arms: But this being opposed by the Chancellor *Rocheport*, who represented that a Christian King ought not to measure his Conquest by the Sword, but his Justice; and that it was a shame to despoil a Minor, and innocent Person of his own Kindred and Vassals, when he might have the Dutchy by Marriage, which was a more honest and commendable Method, it was deferred: To which in all probability the Army of 6000 *English*, with which she garisoned her, did not a little contribute, to the great regret of

1490.

Lady *Beaujeu*, who had already a Grant of the County of *Nantes*. But all this could not keep them at home, tho upon divers Ruptures they had Negotiations; and the *French* and *Breton* Army being thought too much a Party, the King and Dutchess agreed upon *Maximilian* of *Austria*, Duke of *Bourbon*, a Prince of great Integrity, withal no great Friend to the Lady *Beaujeu*. Commissioners met at *Francfort*, where it was provisionally agreed, that the King should restore the Places to the Dutchess, except *St. Aubin*, *Fougères* and *St. Malo*, which were sequestered in the Hands of the two Arbitrators, who should bring them up to those to whom the Dutchy should be judged of Right to belong; that in the mean time they should turn out all the *French* and *English* Soldiers, and the two Parties produce their Titles to certain Lawyers appointed to examine them separately; and that the Deputies should meet again on the 25th of *March*, to hear the sentence pronounced by the Arbitrators.

Now in the midst of these Traverses there was
 other Treaty secretly carried on, of which the
 King's Council had not the least Suspicion; and that
 the Marriage of *Maximilian* with the Dutchess,
 which was so far advanced the preceding Year, that
 the Dutchess was married to him by his Proxy, who
 was the Earl of *Nassau*. The matter was concealed
 long time, and yet nothing executed of what was
 agreed on at *Frankfort*; so that King *Charles* at last
 took up Arms again, and caused his Forces to march
 to besiege the Dutchess in *Renes*, but they were
 intermanded, for what Reasons we do not know.
 The Princesses pressed for Assistance from *England* and
Germany in vain, *Maximilian* never furnished her
 with above 2000 Men. In the mean time *Bretagne*
 was invaded on all hands by the *French*; and *Albret*
 was forced to see himself supplanted by a *German*, gave
 the City of *Nantes* up to the *French*, upon condition
 of some Compensation promised him for those Pretensions
 he had to the Dutchy; his Claim being derived
 from his Wife *Frances* of *Bretagne*, Daughter to *William*
 Count of *Limoges*, the youngest Son of the House
 of *Montmorency*.

During these Disorders nothing could have been
 so easy for King *Charles* than to have taken the
 Dutchess away by Force: However he was advised to

endeavoured to form himself to Goodne
Inclination, giving his Mind to the Study
of useful Books, and delighting in the C
knowing Men; but the flattering Courti
Humour a wise and serious Prince proves
som Master, diverted him from all th
Exercises, and plunged him anew in Deb
The Marriage being consummated wit
els *Ann*, the *French* were considering
back *Margaret* of *Austria*, to whom *Cha*
contracted: At which *Maximilian* cru
and justly accused *Charles* of having forl
Wife, to ravish the Wife of his Father-i

and, for the Charge of his Expedition, and 25000
 Crowns yearly, for the Charge he had been at in
 assisting the *Bretans*. And this Capitulation being
 somewhat indefinitely made, without fixing when it
 should determine or expire; it made the *English* look
 on it as a Tribute, and the Truth of it is, it was
 paid both to this King and *Henry VIII.* his Son, longer
 than it could have continued upon any Computation
 of Charges. In the mean time *Maximilian* surprized
Bras and *St. Omers*; but at last agreed to a Truce
 for a Year, in the Name of his Son *Philip*, but he
 could neither be comprised nor named in it himself.
 On the other hand *Spain* was grown very great under
Ferdinand and *Isabel*, by the Conquest of *Granada*,
 and the intire Expulsion of the *Moors*, and the Dis-
 covery of a new World: And that nothing might be
 wanting to the Happiness of that Country, *Charles*
 rendered the Counties of *Roussillon* and *Cerdagne* to
Ferdinand without requiring the three hundred thou-
 sand Crowns for which they were engaged, but only
 promised that he should be a Friend to *France*; but
 would not be lulled asleep in the Expedition to
Italy, as was supposed the *French* intended hereby.
Ferdinand made use of two Monks to compass it;
 one of them being Confessor to the Lady *Beaujeu*,
 and the other of *Bourbon* by the Death of her Husband's

Beginning
of the War
in Italy.

on Foot concerning his Title to the Kingdoms, and Arguments used to inflame that youth with the Desire and Love of so fair a Conquest. The Earl of *Salerno*, and those Gentlemen who were banished from *Naples*, having taken *Saint France*, made the first Proposals of it; then *Sforza* became the principal Agent, and brought the King to resolve upon the Enterprize. The whole Thread of *Lodowic's* Design, which was with incredible Artifice, tended to no more than to make himself Master of the Dutchy of *Abruzz*, which he had married his Sister to the *Lithuanian* King of the *Romans*, and had secretly obtained the Investiture of that Dutchy, as vacant for the Death of *Homage*: But this he must wrest from *John*, his elder Brother's Son, who held it by a right. *John* was indeed a young Man of little Countenance, having married a valiant and beautiful Wife, the Daughter of *Alphonso* Duke of *Calabria*, of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*, she was able to give Assistance of her Brother to retard his malicious designs. And here for the better understanding of the History we are to observe, that in those days there were five great Governments, or Powers in Italy: two Republicks, *Venice* and *Florence*, the Ecclesiastical State, the Kingdom of *Naples*, and *Duchy of Milan*. *Venice* was governed by their *Senators*; *Florence* the *Medici* had usurped the whole Authority. *Lewis Sforza* governed the *Milanese*, he being a crafty, sanguinary and crafty Person, and very much surnamed the *Moor*, not only because of his dark Skin, but likewise because he exceeded the others in Treachery. *Alexander* the VI. was then Pope, and the Character which the faithful *Mezzanino* of him is, that he had intruded into the See, that any *Mahometan* Prince was more impious or faithless than he; and if any one exceeded his Abominations, it was *Cesar Borgia* his own Son. In *Naples* reigned *Ferdinand* the Bastard, *Alphonso* King of *Arragon*; he had two Sons, *Isabella* and *Frederic*, and the first had a Son named *Alphonso* about 22 Years old, who seemed to be of a good Disposition, having gained the Love

ity and People, whereas his Father and Grand-
 were held in execration amongst all their Sub-
 for their Oppression and Wickedness. Now
 being two Men that wholly influenced King
 les his Mind, who were *Stephen de Vers* his Cham-
 in, and *William Bricconnet* his Treasurer General
 Bishop of *St. Malo*, the War was undertaken
 their means, tho *Bricconnet* having afterwards more
 ighly considered and weighed it, became of a
 contrary Opinion; so that the matter was once
 ed on, afterwards laid aside, and then again
 under Consideration and in Debate. There was
 Wisdom enough in the King's Council, no Money
 : Coffers, no Assurance of his Allies, for in *Italy*
 ad none but the perfidious *Lewis*; whereas the
Venetians were under-hand against him, and
 y Pope *Alexander* and *Peter de Medicis*.

on the Rumor of this War, the King of *Naples*
 o offer *Charles* Homage, and pay him a yearly
 ate of 50000 Crowns; but these Offers being re-
 l, he died of Grief towards the beginning of this
 , at the Age of 72, and was succeeded by *Alphon-*
 At length the King leaving *Paris* in *July* after he
 conferred the Regency upon *Peter* Duke of *Bour-*
 he remained a while at *Lyons* in great uncer-
 y what he should do; then again at *Vienne*, from
 he rest to *da* where he was killed of the

1494.

lands at *Rapalo*, thinking to make the *Genuese* the Duke of *Orleans* who commanded the *French* beat the others, and *Daubigny* having with his Troops out-marched *Ferdinand*, and got before him, prevented his getting into *Romagnia*.

Charles being encouraged to proceed by these successes, at *Turin* borrowed the Dutchess of *Savoy* Rings, and at *Cassal* the Marchioness of *Montferrat* and pawned them for 20000 Ducats. *Lewis* his Wife came to receive him at *Vigene*, and accompanied him as far as *Piacenza*; he arrived at *Pavia* the 15th of *October*, and there found Duke *Galeazzo* Visconti, some Dose his Uncle *Lewis* had caused to be put in him, of which he died soon after; while *Lewis* the King to go and reap the Fruit of his Wife's Treachery, and made sure of the Dutchy, without any other had to *Galeazzo's* Son, who was yet but five Years old. The *French* indeed trembling with horror at the Cruelty of this Wretch, who would bring them to be a Witness of a Parricide upon the Person of his Cousin German, they thought it much better to revenge his Death and conquer the Duke of *Milan*, than march any farther; and notwithstanding the Death of that great Soldier *Desquerdes* could not hinder it. After which *Lodowic* by his Intrigues gained *Stephen de Vers*, overthrew all the French Counsel: And then the King marched forward into *Tuscany*, where taking a small Castle by Storm, he took the Confines of *Florence*, and then the Fort of *Serravalle* upon Articles, with the Defeat of some of the *French* marching up under *Paul Ursine*; this so alarmed *Peter de Medicis*, that he consigned four Places to the King's Hands, that were the very Keys of the *French* Country, to keep them for such a limited time, that he agreed he should borrow two hundred thousand in Gold of that City.

Lewis Sforza fancied the King would have put the *French* Places into his Hands, and therefore lent him 100000 Ducats; but that being fairly refused him, he retired off himself, but left *Emiliaries* about the *French* to watch his Motions. *Pisa* now crys out for Liberty, and the King grants it; *Florence*, at all times devoted to the *French*, took this opportunity of the

Charles
successful
in Flo-
rence.

Ap

approach, to banish *Peter de Medicis* by a Sentence of the Senate, and recovered their Liberty; and on the 17th of *November* the King, entred that City with his Army in Battel-Array, himself armed at all Points, with his Lance upon his Thigh. Here the *Florentines* yielded by Force, and partly by good Will, entred into a Confederacy with him, which was proclaimed in all the Cities of *Italy*, with a Manifesto importing, that the King was come thither only to chase away the Tyrants, and from thence to carry his Arms against the *Turks*.

This prodigious Success of the *French*, and their great Train of Artillery, bred a Terror in all the Country; young *Ferdinand* soon retreated from before *Naples* even to *Rome*, and his Uncle *Frederic* getting of *Leghorn* returned to *Naples*: The Places about *Naples* strove who should first surrender, and the *Orsini* made their Peace with the King; nay the Pope *Charles* himself was forced to let him enter into *Rome*, he retired to the Castle of *St. Angelo*, from whence he thought it best to capitulate, and grant him whatever he desired; and more particularly, to let him have 5 or 6 of his best Places for a certain limited time, the Investiture of the Kingdom of *Naples*, for *Borgia* his Natural Son, and the Cardinal of *Arundel* for Hostages, with *Zemes* the exiled Brother

the See of *Rome*: The *French* replied smartly, and the Dispute grew so hot, that the Ambassador tore the Treaty in pieces before the King's Face; and this so incensed them, that they could scarce forbear offering Violence to his Person. The same day he had News of *Alphonso's* Flight to *Messina*, having first resigned his Crown to his Son *Ferdinand*, after which he did not long survive.

The Misfortunes of this House, or rather the Divine Judgments pursued the Son, as they had done the Father and Grandfather. *Ferdinand* posted himself at *Cancello* near the Abby of *St. Germain's*, to defend the Passage into his Kingdom; but as soon as ever the *Marschal De Rieux* drew near to attack him, he retreated, and his Troops disbanded. *Trivulzio* came up to the King, which set an Example to all the rest to do the like; *Naples* shut her Gates against him, so that the poor Prince retired to the Isle of *Istria*, leaving the Defence of the Castle of *Naples* to his most trusty Officers. *Charles* on the 22d of February made his publick Entry into *Naples*, after which the Castles did not hold out long; and thus in fifteen days *Charles* conquered the whole Kingdom of *Naples*, except only *Brindes*, which made Pope *Alexander* jestingly say, *The French marched into Italy with Chalk in their Hands, to mark out their Lodgings, rather than with Swords to fight.* But this Sun-shine of Fortune so dazzled the young King and his Courtiers, that they scarce had any care at all of the Government; several Cities that had set up the Colours of the *French*, returned to the *Arragonians*, for want of sending him body to take possession of them for the King: His Favourites on whom he conferred the Government squandered away the Stores, his Soldiers lived at Discretion, and his Lords grew insolent; the Pope were not eased, no Justice done to the Gentlemen of the *Angevine* Faction, who had been dispossessed of the Estates; so that the Love they had at first for the *French* was converted into Hatred, and this made them forget the Troubles they underwent under the preceding Tyrants.

Now whilst the King and his young foppish Courtiers spent their time in Feasting, Dancing, Gaming

K. Charles
conquers
Naples.

the like ; the *Venetians* endeavoured to engage
 Pope, Emperor, Arch-Duke, *Ferdinand* King of
ragon, and *Lewis Sforza* in a League against them :
 was a whole Year before it could be perfected ;
 was at first would by no means engage therein, but
 the contrary did his utmost to obstruct it, till hav-
 obtained his own ends, he grew zealous in the
 noting of it. The King being informed hereof,
 put upon Thoughts of returning home, but first
 would needs make his triumphant Entry into *Naples*
 Horseback, in an Imperial Habit, with a Crown
 on his Head, the Globe in his right Hand, and the
 scepter in his left, under a Canopy carried by the
 chiefest Lords of that Country, and the People shout-
 aloud, *Long live the August Emperor* : In which
 he was conducted to the great Church, where
 received anew their Oath of Fidelity. This done,
 left in all 4000 Men to defend that Kingdom, and
 Country supplied him with twice as many : He
 made the Duke of *Montpesier* Vice-Roy, a good Man,
 of little Judgment, and one that loved his ease
 such that he seldom got out of his Bed till Noon ;
Labigny had the Office of Constable conferred upon
 him, and the Government of *Calabria* ; *George de Sully*
 of the Dutchy of *Tarento*, *Guerre* a *Gascon* that
 of *Abruzzo*, and *Stephen de Vers* the Dutchy of *Nola*.

Charles
defeats the
Confeder-
ates.

the Command of the Marquess of *Mantua*, have been thought they would have done great against the King, who was hardly 9000 strong they durst not attack him in the Mountains, led for him at his Descent near the Village of about nine Miles on the other side of *Piacenza* whence the King sent to the Confederates to a Passage, but receiving no answer, they came on the 6th of *July*, and the Confederates than a quarter of an hour were beat back very Camp with the loss of three thousand whereas on the King's side there did not fall a man. So that this important Action secured him the *Apennines*, where he arrived on the 15th, much and tired. From hence he went to *Quiers* and where he was solicited by the *Florentine* Ambassadors for the restitution of their Towns. He constrained those Captains that had the Charge of them, to march them up; but he was so easy and little absolute instead of obeying, they presumed to sell the Town to the *Pisans*, and the rest to the *Venetians*.

The Confederates, after the Battel of *Fornovo* being besieged, and much straitened the Duke of *Guine* *Navarre*; and the King at length went to the aid in order to relieve him, and his Army daily increased. A Treaty was set on foot, whereby they allowed him three days after his whole Garrison, nearly half hunger-starved, to travel out of the City. If he was left to the Charge of the Inhabitants, and if they did not finally agree, the Duke was to return into the Castle, where some of his troops kept guard. Some few days after, when the Siege was almost perfected, came 16000 *Swiss* and *French* Army, upon which *Orleans* insisted in giving the Enemy Battel; but they thought it prudent to make up matters with *Sforza*, Duke of *Navarre*, and the Port of *la Spezia*; and he promised the King to furnish him with 6000 men and Men for the Conquest of *Naples*, to give a *French* Passage thro his Country; to pay 80000 Crowns, and 50000 to the Duke of *Savoy* to make restitution of the eight Gallies taken from the *Genuese* at *Rapallo*, and to allow the *French* to keep their Fleets in that Port.

Articles of
Peace.

The King was so impatient to be gone, that he would
 stay till the execution of this Treaty ; but as soon
 it was signed, he went away with all speed for *Lyons*,
 dance, masquerade, and follow his Amours ; which
 being observed by *Sforza*, he would not perform one
 Article of it. *Ferdinand* King of *Naples* did on his
 take advantage of his Absence and Neglect, and
 the Confederacy contributed to restore him to his
 Kingdom : He had an *Aragonian* Army sent to assist
 under the famous *Gonsales*, vulgarly called *Gon-*
so, and a Fleet at Sea under *Villamiarmo*. The
Venetians likewise set two Armies on foot, and imagined
 this Conjunction would in time gain them the
 sole Empire of *Italy* ; for *Ferdinand* engaged *Brindes*
Otranto to them, and soon after their Admiral *Gri-*
zi seized upon *Monopoli*, *Mola*, *Siponte* and *Trani* :
 the French could hardly save *Tarento* ; *Cajeta* revolted,
 and cooped them up in the Castle. On the other
 side, *Frederic* and *Gonsalvo* made themselves Masters
 of *Regio*, *St. Agatha* and *Seminaro*, in which last Place
 they were shut up by *Aubigny*, from whence falling
 to remove him, they lost the Battel ; but his Sick-
 ness made the French Affairs decline with him. *Fer-*
dinand was more fortunate at Sea ; for as soon as he
 appeared with some Ships upon the Coast, *Salerna*
Malfy set up his Colours, and the Citizens of *Naples*,
 durst not stir for three days together on the

*The Affairs
 of Naples.*

upon his approach, found their Intrenchments so well guarded, that he could not get near the Castle, and therefore returned to *Nola*.

In the mean time *de Vers*, whom the King had made Duke of *Nola*, being gone into *France* to sollicite for Succours, the *Florentine* Ambassadors, Cardinal of *St. Peters*, and the very *French*-men themselves, that had at first dissuaded the King from the Expedition, unanimously declared, that it now concerned the Honour of the Nation to preserve their Conquest; but Cardinal *Bricconnet*, who had a great hand in the Affairs of the Government, from what motive is not certainly known, hinder'd the rest from acting. However, the King at last resolv'd upon a new Effort, and so departing from *Tours*, where he left the Queen his Wife, he went first to *St. Dennis* for Devotion-sake, and then to *Lyons*, giving all the necessary Orders for this second Expedition into *Italy*; but then when it was believed he would have pass'd the Mountains, he return'd still to *Tours*, whither one of the Queen's Maids of Honour as it were forcibly attracted him; and so these grand Preparations amounted only to six Vessels laden with Men and Provisions for *Cajeta*: Insomuch that the *French* Affairs in *Naples* declined from bad to worse. *Aubigny* was still sick, *Percy* marr'd his greatest Success by his intolerable Pride, the *Germans* mutinied for want of Pay, and the *Garisons* were unprovided; and to compleat these Misfortunes, *Montpesier* suffer'd himself to be shut up by three Armies of *Venetians*, *Spaniards* and *Arragonians*, and for want of Provision capitulated to give up the whole Kingdom in a months time. Indeed *Aubigny*, *Guerre*, and others would not obey and comply with that Treaty; but in short, most of the *French* Soldiers being now in a manner worn out in this Country by Sword, Pestilence or otherwise, and *Montpesier* dying himself at *Puzzoli*, the *Comderates* pushed on their work vigorously. From *Antio* *Gonsalvo* went into *Calabria*, reduced *Mandefra* and *Cosenza*, and besieged *Daubigny* in *Gropoli*; defended himself so bravely, that he obtained honourable Articles, whereby he was allowed to carry his Forces into *France* with flying Colours; but the Surrender of *Cajeta* was comprehended in it: So that

1496.

French
decline in
Naples.

7. *The Reign of Charles VIII.*

439

was nothing now left of this glorious and sudden
 est, but a villanous Disease, got first by the Spa-
 in the Isle of *Florida*, where it was almost epi-
 l; from whence they brought it, and infected
 gdom of *Naples*, whose Women that had been
 with this Venom, communicated it to the

*The Origin
 of the
 French
 Disease.*

he mean time *Ferdinand* King of *Spain* (for so
 People called him, and the *French* by way of
 y, short-coat Jack) made an Inroad towards
 ne in favour of *Ferdinand* King of *Naples*; but
 g a Repulse by *St. Andre*, who also forced the
 f *Salses* in sight of the *Spanish* Army, they
 it best to enter into a Conference, which to-
 he end of the year produced a Truce for some
 . However, the *French* persisted still uneasy
 ing their loss of *Naples*, about which several
 were set on foot, and divers Means projected
 overing that Kingdom again. Sometimes they
 receive the Homage and Tribute of *Frederick*,
 ng of that Country, in the room of his Ne-
erdinand deceased; at other times they were
 eing with the Pope, who was Lord of the Fief,
 m to begin with the *Milaneses* under the Con-
 the Duke of *Orleans*. To this purpose new
 vere made among the *Swiss*, and the Cavalry
 d as far as 40; but the Duke refused that Com-

1497.

States, and that upon extraordinary Occasions; and intended to defray the Charge of the Civil List out of his own Revenue and Demesnes, and the antient Dues belonging to the Crown: But these good Intentions coming not into his Head, till he was almost incapable of putting them in execution, they proved of no use to the Nation.

K. Charles his Death and Character. He had resided for some time past at the Castle of Amboise, where he was building; and there on the 6th of April, about two in the Afternoon, being in a Gallery from whence he was looking upon those that were playing at Tennis hard by, he was seized with an Apoplectick Fit, which made him fall down backwards. Those that were about him observing this, they laid him down in the same place on a pitiful Bed-mat, where he expired about eleven at night, and they sent for him to ride Post-haste to the Duke of Orleans, his Successor, with the news: However it were, many believed he was poisoned with an Orange. He reigned fourteen years and a half, and had lived 27, and some Months. Of three Sons he had by Ann of Braganza his Wife, not one of them attained to be three years old. He was a Prince but of an ill Shape, low of Stature, weak and sickly; his Shoulders were round, his Face deformed, his Speech low and broken; but his Eyes quick and sparkling, his Thoughts sudden and sharp on great occasions, tho not lasting. He showed much Goodness, Humanity and Courtesy to all; but had so little Spirit, and was so careless, that he was but little obeyed: Indeed we do not find that he ever turned away any of his Domesticks, or as much as offended any one of his Subjects with a harsh Word.

The Death of Savanarola. Next day after this Prince's Death, happened that of Jerom Savanarola, a Dominican, a generous Victim for Truth and Liberty. He had foretold, either by the strength of his Reason and Judgment, or Divine Revelation, all those grand Revolutions in Italy, boldly preached up the Reformation of Princes, and of the Court of Rome, asserted that God had led the King by the hand, and defended the Liberties of his Country against all those Factions that started up against him, for which the wicked Pope having excommunicated him, the Cordeliers exclaiming against him in their

I *Sforza* and the *Venetians* soliciting his
Magistrates of the contrary Faction caused
unt alive.

C H A P. VIII.

*reign of LEWIS XII. surnamed
the Just.*

Duke of *Orleans* succeeded *Charles VIII.*
the next of the Male Line, and his Coun-
cil and fourth degree: He was crowned on
the first of *May* at *Rheims*, on the first of *July* at
and the day after made his publick Entry
where by a Decree of the Council he as-
sumed the title of King of *France*, and of both *Sicilies*,
of *Milan*, which last they will have to be-
come by the Right of *Valentine* his Grandfather.
He immediately applied himself to ease his
people to the due Administration of Justice. As to
he diminished the Taxes year after year, tho'
already easy enough, because he knew the
chequer was like the Spleen, the less it is,
the healthier the Body Politick ever finds it self.
He abhorred Impositions so much, that for the

Lewis re-
forms the
Govern-
ment.

Lewis is
divorced
and mar-
ries.

Minister ; in recompence of which the
to marry *Charlotte*, the Daughter of the
and engaged the new Duke to serve him
very of the *Milaneſe*, with a Promise
part, that he would afterwards aſſiſt him
all thoſe petty Lords, who detained the
mandiola, that now for about two Age
the Pope's Power was much in the Way
uſurped in Sovereignty by their reſpective

The King's Marriage with *Jane* was
the Commiſſioners, upon a clear Proof th
had forced him to it, tho in truth he aſt
ſummed it : and being now at liberty

Ferdinand and Isabel, and afterwards of Arch-
 : Ferdinand withdrew his Forces out of Italy,
 p the Places he held in Calabria to Frederic ;
 Duke by the Treaty recovered his Towns of *He makes*
 on condition he should do the King Homage *Alliances.*
 ountry, and for those of Flanders and Cha-
 ere was more difficulty to agree with Max-
 ho was engaged with Sforza, for which he
 ed large Sums of Money, and had already
 my to enter into the Dutchy of Burgundy ;
 aving been repul'd by the Count of Fox,
 ic having not Treasure enough to satisfy his
 lature, he was soon perswaded to a Truce for
 ths.

ean time the Florentines and Venetians, ha-
 osed their differences, the latter confederated
 is against Sforza, for which they were to
 be Towns of the Milanese on their side of
 , and they fancied they should have the
 ng's part also, who would sell or lose it, as
 effort had done Naples ; but they were mis-
 their Calculation : On the other hand, the
 Lodovic with all his Craft and Policy, had
 nd to stand by him, no not so much as the
 Ferrara his Father-in-law, and was there-
 to have recourse to Maximilian, and Sul-
 et.

ng's Forces in July entred the Milanese on the



Creatures, took Money of the King for the *Cape*, which was supposed to have been impregnable. The King who was then at *Lyons*, immediately went to *Milan*, into which he made his Entry in a Ducal Habit, and sojourned about three Months in that Country, where he presently took off a fourth part of the Imposts, allowed the Nobles the Liberty of hunting, which they enjoyed not before; and thinking to engage them to be more tight to his Interest, he parted a considerable part of his Demesns amongst them, particularly he was liberal to *Trivulcio*, on whom he likewise conferred the Government of the whole Duchy. All the Princes of *Italy* except *Frederic* congratulated his good Success, and the *Florentines* engaged to assist him in the Conquest of *Naples*, upon condition he would assist them to recover *Pisa*. After this he was obliged to make good his Engagements to *Cesar*, who by his help recovered the Cities of *Imola* and *Forli*, in which last was *Catherine Sforza* the Mother and Tutress of the *Riari*, whom he led away Prisoner to *Rome*.

But the change which hapned at the same time in the *Milanese*, retarded his Progress, *Lewis* lay in wait to re-enter; there were few *French* in the Towns; the Nobility were offended at the Pride and Insolency of *Trivulcio* their Equal, and could not be pleased with the Liberty the *French* took with their Wives: Hereupon *Lodowick* with five hundred *Burgundians*, and 12000 *Swiss* returned, and was received with open Arms; *Coma* expelled the *French*, *Trivulcio* fled from *Milan* in the Night, and retired to *Mortara* with his Cavalry; in short all Places submitted to *Lodowick*, but the Castle of *Milan*, and some of those the *Venetians* held. But behold a strange turn of Fortune, *Trivulcio* with a good Army from the King meeting him near *Novarre*, which had newly surrendered, the *Swiss* in his Service refused to fight, and retired to *Novarre*, whither he was forced to follow them, where next day being discovered in a Common Soldier's Habit, he was seized, and sent to the King at *Lyons*, from whence he was removed to *Loches*, where he was shut up till his Death ten Years after, with Severity so unusual and contrazy to the Mercy of the

Lodowick
taken Pri-
soner.

1500.

Prince, that it was thought to be a visitation from Heaven. And thus we leave this ill-fated and unfortunate Man, and his perfidious *Swiss* Arm, and in their Passage to take the City of *Be-neve*, which was an Inlet for them, when they entered it, into the Dutchy of *Milan*.

This Revolt cost *Milan* the Heads of ten or twelve of its Chiefs, and a Sum of two hundred thousand *Scudi*; but upon Good Friday, the Cardinal of *Lorraine* received the *Amende Honorable* of those People at the Town-hall, and in the King's Name pardoned them; the other Cities were fined moderate sums, which appeared rather like Subsidies than Punishments.

In the mean while the Apprehensions the King of *France* had of *Maximilian*, hindered his Forces from marching forward to the Conquest of *Naples*; but during his Treachery to him, he sent a Detachment under *Beaumont* to *assist* *Pisa* in favour of the *Florentines*, and another under *Allegre* to assist *Cesar Borgia* to expel the French from *Romandiola*. *Beaumont* failed in his Enterprize; but *Borgia* without striking a Stroke, drew *Pesaro* and *Rimini* into his Nets; *Fayau* also the next year, after a long resistance, was forced to surrender: the Protection which the King granted to *Bentivoglio* and the *Florentines*, kept him from seizing *Bologna* and *Pisa*, as he had a great mind to do.

a safe Conduct into *France*, where he had 30000 Crowns allowed him, and the same continued even after the *French* were driven from *Naples*.

The Spaniards conquer their Share.

Gonsalvo on his side had as little Trouble in getting the other part of the Kingdom; he sent his Son *Alphonso* into *Tarento*, which he easily took, having left the Care of him to the Earl of *Pontentianne*, and *Bilbo*, who timely capitulated, and promised to hold it four Months; had they held it but six, the same would have hapned between the *French* and *Spaniards*, as it hapned between the young Prince and it: but *Gonsalvo* ha

was sent to him to treat about it, with a magni-
 Equipage, his Retinue consisting at least of 800
 : The Emperor insisted much upon the Release
 of *Sforza*; his Brother the Cardinal of *Asca-*
ras set at Liberty; and a mutual Promise was
 for the Prolongation of the Truce, as also on
 Emperor's part of the Investiture, but only for
 ing's Daughters and not for his Sons: This Ex-
 u was made, because he was desirous of having
 ing's eldest Daughter, and that Dutchy in Dow-
 r *Charles* his Grandson; wherefore the Arch-
 s Ambassadors being come to the King at *Lyons*,
 Marriage was agreed the 10th of *Aug.* and con-
 ed again by the Archduke, and *Joan of Castile* his
 in *Nov.* in their Passage thro *France* into *Spain*.
 were magnificently received at *Paris*, and the
 duke took his Seat in Parliament in the Quality
 Peer of *France*. The King and Queen entertain-
 em for 15 Days together at *Blois*, and caused
 to be conducted to the Frontiers with all imagi-
 e Honour, nay even with the power of granting
 on in every City they passed thro.

at to return again to *Italy*, the Limits for the Di-
 of the Kingdom of *Naples* having been not well
 essed, there arose a dispute about the Country of
inata of very great Importance, because of the

War be-
 tween the
 French &c

the *Florentines*, there was a League formed of great Persons for the Restoration of *Peter* formerly mentioned to be expelled; but he brought all the petty Princes of *Italy* and spared not the King of *France* his was mightily complained of to the King every body; but he being as politick as warlike how to appease his Anger, by forcing the with grievous Menaces to surrender up to the *Florentines*, whereby he gained so much reputation at Court, that the King renewed his Alliance with *Alexander VI.* which drew the hat of *Italy* upon him, and perhaps the Curse of *Clement VII.* Lewis indeed left *Italy*, and returned the way of *Genoa* too soon: However the *French* were in a short time driven almost out of all of *Capitana*, *Puglia* and *Calabria*; and found himself pent up in *Barletta* without Food or Ammunition, so that the War had been if the *Venetians* had not speedily supplied *D^e Aubigny* had been believed, he would have forced the whole Army to have forced him there. The Duke of *Nemours* unluckily divided them in two Bodies to besiege the other Towns, while wisely timing his Affairs, recovered his Liberty. It's true, the Arch-Duke and his Wife repented, *France*, had a Conference with the King and treated of an Accommodation touching the City of *Naples*, whereby it was agreed his Son should be married to the King's eldest Daughter and have *Naples* for her Dowry; that the mean time should enjoy their Partitions, and the Country in debate should be sequestred into the Duke's hands. *Ferdinand's* Ambassadors proposed the Treaty, the Duke of *Nemours* upon notice obeyed it; but *Gonsales* refused to submit to it, he had a positive Order from *Ferdinand*; for a Regiment of 2000 *Germans* being newly come from *Spain*, the Assurance he had that the Pope and Cardinals declined *Lewis* his Interest, and the Informers told him that 4000 *French* landed at *Genoa* had for want of Pay, raised his Courage; and himself of being crowned King, provided he deserved it.

A Treaty
about
Naples.
1503.

This and other Incidencies gave a strange turn to
 things; *D' Aubigny* who ought to have drawn things
 to length, and wait for the *French* Succours, made
 much hast to fight the Body of the Army com-
 manded by *Cardonna Benavide* and *Leva*, on the 21st
April near *Liminara* in *Calabria*, being the same
 place where a few Years before he had got a memora-
 ble Victory, but now met with a contrary Fate.

By his Defeat was in some measure obliged to *The*
 his Fortune against *Gonsalvo* before he was reinfor- *French*
 by these victorious Troops: He engaged him near *worsted*
Agnoles in *Puglia* on the 28th of the same Month, *in Naples.*
 with a worse misfortune than the other, for he
 was slain upon the Place; *Aubigny* escaped to *Angitola*,
 wherein he was besieged and quickly forced to capitulate,
 that all his Men should quit the Kingdom, but
 himself to remain a Hostage till that were fully per-
 formed.

And now *Gonsales* carried all before him, *Naples*,
Avella and *Aversa* opened their Gates to him; and
Er de Navarre having sprung a Mine under
Beau-Neuf, that also was soon surrendred; the
Ele Del Ovo held out but three Weeks longer,
 had like to have been taken by the same new
 Ention: However there remained still divers Places
 in the Possession of the *French*, as *Aquileia*, and the

Suspence, that he might hold the King so too, lest he should make hast to relieve the Castles of *Naples* and *Cajeta*, that still held out: But when *Philip* let him know by a Courier he should not leave the Court of *France* till he had fully satisfied the King in this matter, he sent Ambassadors thither, who disowned his Proceedings, as having exceeded his Commission, which was not true. After which to gain time by new Tricks, a Proposal was made to surrender the Kingdom to *Frederick*, but *Lewis* would not give ear to any thing from a Prince he could not trust, and commanded them to depart his Kingdom; as for the Arch-Duke he was still civilly treated, and suffered to return into *Flanders*.

Great Preparations
of the
French.

Wherefore *Lewis*, far from putting up the Affront, set four Armies on Foot, three at Land, and one for the Sea; the greatest by Land was commanded by *Trimoville*, and consisted of 18000 Foot, and near 2000 Men at Arms, who were to recover the Kingdom of *Naples*; the other three were to attack *Spain*: The first commanded by the Lord *Albret* and the Marechal *De Gie*, were to make an Irruption towards *Fontarabia*, being 5000 Foot *Swiss* and *French*, and about 1000 Men at Arms; the second by the Marechal *De Rieux*. Almost twice the number had Orders to enter by *Roussillon*, while the Fleet was to scour the Coasts of *Catalonia* and *Valentia*.

Trimoville moved slowly towards *Italy*, and being arrived in the Territories of *Sienna* fell sick, and the King substituted *Charles de Gonzagues* Marquis of *Mantua* in his room, whose Faith seemed so weakly founded, being a reconciled Enemy, that the King himself had forbid the *Florentines* but the Year before to take him for their General. When they were come near *Rome*, Pope *Alexander* hapned to die by a strange Accident, and overturned the vast Design of his Son *Borgia*. The manner was briefly thus: *Borgia* having a Desire to enjoy the Spoil of Cardinal *Cornet*, had made an Appointment with the Pope, to go and sup with him in his Garden, and caused many Bottles of exquisite Wine to be brought thither, such as was mixed and prepared to poison their Food. Now it hapning that the Father and Son came thither

early and dry, by reason of the heat of the sun, and called for some Drink, while the Servant was privy to the Secret was gone somewhere out the way, another gave them some of that same; the Father who drank of it unmixed, died the day, *August 17.* but the Son more vigorous, mixed some Water with it, had time to use Remedies, and being wrapped up in the Belly Mule recovered, but remained in a languishing all his Life after, and was at last slain in 1516, in a Rencounter, by a private *Gens d' Arm* who knew not, after he had for some time refugiated himself for *John d' Albret* King of *Navarre* his Wife's brother.

*Alexander VI.
his Death.*

When he returned again to the Marquis of *Mantua* and his French Army, he made a Bridge over the *Gariglian*, and under the favour of his Cannon passed his Army in sight of *Gonsales*, tho the very same day the French Commanders entertained some Distrust of his success, because it seemed to them he spared the Spaniards, when if he had followed his Blow he had easily defeated them, and recovered the whole Kingdom. Some there were also that accused him of a secret Correspondence with the *Spaniards*, wherefore he feigned himself sick, that he might have an opportunity to withdraw, when he took along with him a part of the *Italian* Cavalry while the rest

day, that the Soldiers might depart freely, either by Sea or Land, and all Prisoners released without Ransom; but *Gonsales* interpreting this in his own Sense, excluded such as belonged to the Kingdom of *Naples*: *D' Ars* would not be comprehended in this Treaty, but retreated with Trumpets sounding, and Colours flying quite thro all *Italy*. The cause of these Misfortunes was laid at the door of the *Financiers*, and *Heroet* the Intendant was banished with so much the more Justice as being in the King's Favour, that yet he had a greater love for Money than for the Honour of so good a Master.

K. Lewis
sick.

The other Armies having done nothing memorable against *Spain* it self, we are to observe here that a Truce was made between the two Kings, for their Countries of *France* and *Spain*, by the Mediation of *Frederic*: *Ferdinand* made the poor Prince believe he was ready to restore him the Kingdom if *Lewis* would consent, and proposed to bestow his Sister in Marriage upon *Alphonso*, she being the Widow of *Ferdinand* the young King of *Naples*. In the mean time King *Lewis* his Discontent and Trouble of Mind for so much ill Success, for the loss of his Reputation, and failing to detect all those *Spanish* Intrigues, were so great as to cast him into a Fit of Sickness, which brought him to extremity; the Queen believing him to be dead, sent away her Equipage for *Bretagne*, which being stopped by the *Mareschal De Gie*, he incurred her Indignation, and she could never forgive him who was born her Subject; but he was prosecuted with that heat, that the King was forced to send his Process to the Parliament of *Tholouse* as the most severe in the Kingdom, where yet they could find no colour to condemn him to any other Punishment, than to be banished the Court.

Now the *Spanish* Proposals for a Peace being rejected, the King made an Alliance with the Emperor and the Arch-Duke, whereby they confirmed the Marriage of his eldest Daughter, or of the second in case the other died, with Prince *Charles*, which the King caused to be signed by *Francis de Valois* his presumptive Heir, and other Princes of the Blood: Hereupon the Emperor gave him the Investiture of the Dutchy of *Miloy*.

him and his Children, as well Males if he had any, as two Daughters, provided he paid 120000 in two six Months, presented a pair of Gold every *Christmas*-day, and assisted the Emperor 500 Lances, when he went to take the Imperial Crown at *Rome*.

The unfortunate *Frederic* King of *Naples* died about the same time, and that Great and Generous Princess *Isabella* Wife of *Ferdinand* departing this Life also towards the end of the Year, her Death changed the Aspect of all Princes: The Power of the Arch-Duke augmented by the Kingdom of *Castile*, and the Accession of *Henry VII.* King of *England*, whose Son *Arthur* had married *Catherine* his Sister-in-Law, began to create some Fears in *Lewis*, some Confidence in *Maximilian*, and some kind of Jealousy in *Ferdinand* himself, who perceived that his Son-in-Law would not leave him the Administration of *Castile*, which *Isabella* had ordained by her Will. By these Motives

and he made a Peace, upon which *Ferdinand* married *Germain* the Daughter of *John de Foix* Viscount of *Narbonne*, and of *Mary* the King's Sister, and conceded to him his share in the Kingdom of *Naples* for her Fortune, upon condition it should all go to her Husband if she died first, but should revert to *Lewis* if she survived and bore no Children. *Ferdinand* was exiled from *Naples* and the Gentlemen of the

A Peace
between
Lewis and
Ferdinand.
1505.


Treaty, which was to restore t e
 pay the 50000 Florins for the l
 send 500 Lances to attend him into
 formed every thing but the Payment of
 which was not yet due, but under-
 Duke of *Gueldres* against the Arch-B
 some Jealousy in the Heads of the Pope
 insomuch that they desired the Emperor not
 into *Italy*. Pope *Julius* set a great v
 Power he gave *Lewis* to dispose of the
 the *Milanese*, and other things; and in return
 was to employ his Forces to recover B
 from *Bentivoglio*: But a right Unde
 not long between them, for *Ju*
Genuese to revolt from *Lewis*, fr
vestin retired, leaving them to c a
 was a simple Dyer, named *Paul* *nova*
 peror also on his part, as well as the Pope,
 up this Flame as much as he could; yet b
 and the other left them in the Toil they
 them to: They had indeed raised a Fort
 Passage into the Mountains that surround
 and had posted themselves near it with
 litia; but the King approaching with 2000
 took it upon the first Assault, and
 rent; which astonished them so much,
 brought him the Keys of the City without
 Terms with him; into which he
 Entry on the 29th of *April* in Arm
 the People cried for Mercy, and the
 Children clothed in white threw the
 his Feet, so that there were none of t
 save *Justinian* and *De Nova*, but he
 300000 Ducats upon them, which f
 in building of Forts to bridle them.

Lewis and Ferdinand meet. *Lewis* in his Return had a Confer
Ferdinand, for you must know that
 dying in the Bloom of his Years, a
 Son *Charles* under the Guardianship of t
 (who took care to let him have in
 consisted not with the Benefit of
 upon the Death of her Husband grov
 posed as to lose her Senses, Fe

govern the Dominions of his Grandson ; and
view between him and *Lewis* hapned to be
na, where they treated one another with all
ble Respect and Demonstrations of mutual Af-
: *Lewis* went first to visit *Ferdinand* in his
and he returned the Visit on Shoar, and they
violably to preserve the Peace between them.
mean time the Princes of *Germany* in the Diet
nce being much heated against King *Lewis*,
ing his Army at *Genoa* was designed for the
t of *Italy*, they promised the Emperor great
; but when they heard of that Armies being
d, they would do nothing ; while the King,
d *Swiss* re-united against *Maximilian*, who
would have passed along the Vally of *Trent*
6000 Men only, the *Venetians* blocked up the
, at which he was extremely offended. How-
/ thinking fit to make a Truce with him for
Lewis was much concerned they had done it
his Concurrence, and had excluded the Duke
res ; and this Affront made up the measure
n or twenty more he had received : The Pope,
and *Ferdinand* hated them no less for different
nd particularly because they had encroached
h of their Territories.

1503.

indeed a hard matter to unite so many dif-
terests against them ; however *Lewis* having



they detained from them, that the Pope should admonish them to make Restitution of them, upon pain of Excommunication; and that the Emperor should grant the King the Investiture of the Duchy of Milan purely and simply for himself, for *Francis de Valois* and all their Descendants. The *Spanish* Ambassadors would not sign it till he had fresh Orders, nor the Pope till the *Venetians* should refuse to give up *Favara* and *Rimini*, for which he would have abandoned all the rest. Nothing appeared of all the Treaty but the Confirmation of the Peace between the Princes, and the League was kept so secret that the *Venetians* came sooner to know it by its Effects than Information, or other Discovery: They were strangely surprized to find King *Lewis* on the other side of the Mountains, beginning a War upon them with 40000 Men, and the Pope thundring at them with his Excommunications.

Lewis
very suc-
cessful a-
gainst the
Venetians.

The King having passed the *Adda*, pursued their Army so close, that on the 14th of *May* he fought and defeated them near the Village of *Aignadel* within four Miles of *Caravaz*, where all their Infantry were cut off, and their General *Alviane* having lost an Eye was taken Prisoner. Upon this the King in fifteen days recovered all the Places they detained from him; he might also have taken *Vicenza*, *Padua*, *Verona*, *Treviso*, and all those belonging to the Emperor, or House of *Austria*, but their Deputies that brought him the Keys he sent to the Emperor, who put Garrisons in them. The Pope had also an Army of above 12000 Men in *Romagna*, and *Ferdinand* a small Fleet in the Gulph, to make his Advantage as he saw occasion. But this was too much against that Noble Republick, who were now in such a Consternation upon the loss of the Battel of *Aignadel*, that despairing of their being able to keep any thing in the *Terra Firma*, they resolved to shut themselves up in the Islands of their Gulph, and therefore commanded the Governors of all Places that belonged to the Pope or *Ferdinand* to open the Gates to them, and recalled their Magistrates from *Verona*, *Padua*, *Vicenza* and other Towns, upon which the Emperor had any Pretensions. Thus they were strangely cooped up all on a sudden: nay some will have it that *Lewis* drew so near as to

Volleys of Random-shot to be made against Venice it self.

it were, *Lewis* thinking he had done all, *Milan*, and sent the Cardinal of *Amboise* for, between whom and the King there was a Day assigned for an Interview at *Guar-Borders* of the Valley of *Trent* and the about the Inhabitants of *Treviso* having in the denied Admission to a Governour whom he had sent thither; and put up *Venetian* Code this Accident an Excuse that he could not.

Resistance of *Treviso* making the *Venetians* that they had too hastily abandoned what was the *Terra Firma*, they resumed fresh Courage partly by Force, and partly by Surprise, retook the most important City of *Padua*, about the time *Lewis* returned into *France*. The Emperor was concerned hereat, and therefore with the aid of the Confederates, and more particularly *Spain*, he resolved to lay siege to it. His Army consisted of 36000 Foot, 1800 Men at Arms, and 10000 Light Horse; but there were 12000 Foot in *Padua*, 2000 Horse, 200 young Noble *Venetian* who every one of them were resolved to defend that City, the Preservation or Loss whereof was the Fate of their Republick: And indeed so gallant a Defence, that the Emperor de-

The Siege of Padua.

treated him with an unheard of Haughtiness obliged the Pope to come and meet him at *Bologna*, and would confer with none but him, obliging his Gentlemen to treat with those Cardinals sent to him.

Pope Julius
thus dis-
miss'd.

Trivalcio therefore renewed the War at *Concorda*, and upon his approach with the *French* to *Bologna*, the Pope retired to *Ravenna*, left the Cardinal of *Pavia* with *Francis Maria Urbino* his Brother's Son in the Place with some *Venetians* in the Neighbourhood; but by way he met with three mortal Displeasures, *Bolognians* had expelled his Soldiers, That he was dispersed, and, That the said *Maria Urbino*, his Nephew, had upon some Quarrel, seized the Cardinal of *Pavia*. Besides, he saw in the ties thro which he passed, the Indiction posted a General Council at *Pisa* on the first of *September* the same having been approved of by the *Empire* and *French King* in their Letters Patent of *July* last. The *Pope* Mock-Sanctity being thus distressed, he cast about for an Accommodation; but as soon as he understood the *King*, tired with the importunate Scruples of *Cardinal Trivalcio* had ordered *Trivalcio* not to meddle with the Ecclesiastical State, he appeared more stubborn and inflexible than ever, and by his Bulls convened a Council to meet at *Rome* in the *Lateran Palace*, declaring that of *Pisa*, and would degrade the three Cardinals concerned in the calling of it, unless they appeared in such a limited time to answer for what they had done before him. Indeed *K. Lewis* his Negligence and the Emperor's Chimerical Irresolutions heightened the rage: The *Pisans* had little respect for this, and from what Instigations soever it came about, they often quarrelled with the *French Soldiers*, and the *Members* were so alarmed, that they resolved to remove it to *Milan*, where they met with no better success nor Security.

In the mean time, *Julius* having concluded a League which they named the *Holy*, with the *French* and the *Venetians*, for the Peace of the Church, he said, abolishing the Council of *Pisa*, recovered the Lands belonging to the Holy See, and the ex-

those out of *Italy* that would obstruct the Execution of these Matters; their Confederate Army under *Bologna*, Vice-Roy of *Naples*, laid siege to *Bologna* at the beginning of this Year, and *Brescia* received the Venetians in, who besieged the Castle, when young Lewis suddenly overthrew them, and all their Designs; on the 16th Day of the Siege, while the Snow fell thick as to prevent his being discerned, he entred *Bologna*, and the Besiegers thereupon quickly drew off with no little shame. From thence marching with his choice men towards *Brescia*, he by the way defeated *Bailloni*, who commanded part of the Venetian Army: Then entring into the City by the way of the River, he forced their Works and Intrenchments, slew many men, and expelled the Enemy; which three grand exploits being performed in less than 15 days, raised the Fame of this Young Prince above all Commanders of his time.

Bologna besieg'd in vain.

1512.

The Venetians worsted by the French.

Notwithstanding all these Advantages, the Pontifical League being daily reinforced with some Troops, the *Florentines* renounced the Friendship of the French; report was spread of a sudden Irruption of the Spaniards, and the *English* were just upon breaking with France. Now *Lewis*, that he might not have so many Enemies at once, ordered *Foix*, during the Torrent of good fortune, to give the Army of the League battle, and declined it not, near *Ravenna* the 11th of April.

The Battel of Ravenna.

Emperor *Maximilian* at the same time were entring into the Country.

French
lose Milan,
Genoa,
&c.

In short, the *French* Troops being in number, wholly abandoned all the *Milimilian Sforza* was restored to that *Swiss*, who declared themselves *Protestants* revolted, and created a *Doge* of, about the same time *Henry VIII.* sent a nounce War against *France*; and th forsaking *Lewis*, entred into a new Alli *Julius*. Hereupon the Council of *Pis Milan to Lyons*, and were condemned *Lateran*: *Julius* also put the Kingde

est of *Guyenne*, that he landed a great Army ^{K. Ferdi-}
ar Fontarabia; but *Ferdinand* having for a hand con-
 formed a Design to conquer *Navarre*, instead ^{quers Na-}
 with the *English*, fell upon that unhappy ^{varre.}

which was basely abandoned by its King
Abret, who retired into *Bearn*; so that *Fer-*
ing got now into possession, made use of the
 ill for the detention of it, since it was thereby
 to the first Occupier, because *John* was said
 Abettor of the Council of *Pisa*, an Ally of
 King, and an Enemy to the Holy See. In
 time the Succours which the *French* King sent
 being ill conducted, did him no service; for
 of *Longueville* Governour of *Guyenne*, and
 Duke of *Bourbon*, who commanded them, could
 ; so that the King sent *Francis* Duke of *Va-*
r, who in despite of the Duke of *Alva* entred
 and besieged *Pampelona*; but the want of
 , and the Inconveniencies of the Season,
 n to decamp at the end of six weeks; and the
rdinand having reaped what fruit he could

by this War, did readily agree to a Truce ^{Makes a}
^{Truce with}
nce. On the other hand, the Wrath of *Ju-* ^{France.}
 ng no bounds, he framed a Decree in the ^{1513.}
 Name to transfer the Kingdom of *France*, and

of the most Christian King, to the King of
 but in 1513 he was upon the point of subli-

Swiss de-

Voices carrying it for the former, *Tri*
march on with the Van Guard, while *Tr*
yet tarry for some time longer at *Nova*
the *Swiss* if they made any Sallies; but
ing some Lands of his own in the Place
ordered to post himself, and being beside
haughty Man, he took another way, an
la Riota in a boggy Ground, and cut
with deep Trenches, so that the Horse o
service, nor be able to succour the Foot.
time, the *Swiss* in *Navarre* marching o
the night, and having joined the other B
riously charged the *French* Army by t

se Cities that had yielded to the *French*, submitted to the Mercy of *Sforza*, and for their defection were punished with large Fines, which served him to pay again.

Swiss. Hitherto *Maximilian*, tho he had abandoned the King, yet he had not formally declared himself; finding the Opportunity seasonable, he entred into Hostility against him, and then *France* was in the eminent danger than it had been in for a long time before; for the *Swiss* on the one side entred by the Duchy of *Burgundy*, and the Emperor with the King of *England* fell upon them in *Picardy*. A strong Confederacy against France.

The *Swiss* with 25000 men of their own, in conjunction with the Nobility of the *Franch Comte*, and the *German* Horse under the Duke of *Wirtemberg*, laid siege to *Dijon*: But *la Trimouville* having defended it six weeks, endeavoured to divert the terrible storm that by the taking of this Place must have fallen upon *France*; whereupon he entred into, and successfully managed a Treaty with them, as to send them into their own Country, upon condition the King should pay them 600000 Crowns, renounced the Council of *Pisa* and the Duchy of *Milan*: He had no express Orders for this; but thinking he might be allowed it for the saving of all *France*, and thereupon giving up the Hostages, the King refused to ratify the Treaty. At the same time the King of *England*, and the Em-

Tournay Churches. *Tournay* fearing the like Fate, surrendered in good time to the King of England, who built a Citadel to bridle it.

Lewis yields to agree with the Pope. K. *Lewis* however bore up bravely against all these Adversities, but he had a domestick Trouble that was greater than those of all his Enemies, which was his own Wife, who moved with Scruples common to her Sex, could not endure he should be at variance with the Pope, and maintain a Council against him: So that having a perpetual Noise in his Ears upon these two Points, and being at last quite tired with her Importunities, and the Remonstrances of his Subjects, he renounced the Council of *Pisa*, and by his Procurators adhered to that of the *Lateran*, his Mandate having been read in the 8th Session on the 14th of December, where the Pope then presided. He promised likewise to appear concerning the business of the Pragmatick; but by reason of so many Enemies that every way surrounded him, he demanded a competent time, which was allowed him: The Cardinals *Sancta Croce* and *Sanseverin* threw themselves at the Pope's Feet at Rome, and appearing before the Council in the Habit of simple Priests, begged Pardon upon their Knees, acknowledged they had been justly degraded by *Julius*, renounced the Assembly of *Pisa*, and so were restored to their Dignities. But tho the Pope upon these Submissions seemed to be well satisfied with K. *Lewis*, yet he omitted not under-hand to excite the Emperor against him, that he might have no more leisure to return to *Italy*.

Queen
Ann's
Death.
1514.

Queen *Ann*, who infinitely desired this Reconciliation, survived but a few days after, and died on the 9th of *January* this year in the Castle of *Blois*: The King, who entirely loved her, shut himself up for several Days in his Closet, and turned all the Fiddlers, Comedians, Juglers and Buffoons out of the Court. Having no Sons of his own, he had bred up *Francis* Duke of *Valois* with much Tenderness, whom the Laws of the Kingdom required to succeed him; but Queen *Ann*, out of the hatred she had ever bore to *Lovisa*, this Prince's Mother, had prevented his Marriage with her Daughter *Claude*: However, the King now had it consummated on the 18th of *May*, at *Beauvais*.

himself had then no thoughts of marrying again; the Duke of *Longueville*, who was a Prisoner in *England*, endeavouring to make a Peace between the *English* & *French*, talked of a Marriage between the King *Henry* the 8th's Sister, which *Lewis* will bearkned to, and so the Peace and Marriage concluded at *London* on the same Day, being the 11 of *August*, whereby *K. Henry* was to keep *Tour* and *Lewis* obliged to pay him 600000 Crowns at payments, as well for the Charge of his War, the Arrears of Pension (the *French* will have it so) that had been promised by the Treaty of *Bray*, and confirmed by that of *Estaples* in 1492: out of this Sum his Queen's Portion was deducted, was 400000 Crowns, and the Royal Wedding the 10th of *October* was consummated at *Albeville*. *Duke Valois*, who was all fire for the fair Ladies, did not want some Sparks for this new Queen; and *Charles Brandon* Duke of *Suffolk*, who loved her before this Marriage, and followed the *French* Court in quality of Ambassador from *England*, had not extinguished his first Flames: However, the Remonstrances of *Cardinal de Beaufort*, who had been his Governour, made *Valois* somewhat cool upon it; and for *Suffolk*, it will be long before he shall have the full Enjoyment of his fires, since indeed King *Lewis* his Grave was not far from his nuptial Bed: for as he was raising a potent

Peace between the English & French, and K. Lewis married.

had of what would be squandered away in
vain Prodigality after his Death by *Francis*
said, *Ah! we labour in vain, this great B*
The two Sons he had by *Ann of Bretagne*
Nurses Arins; so that he had only two E
who were *Claude*, married to *Francis I.*
who in 1528 was by that King married
Duke of *Breagne*, a petty Prince, whom
posely made choice of, that he might not
contend with him for the Dutchy of *Breagne*





BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

the Reign of FRANCIS I. surnamed the Great, and the Father of Learning.

THIS is the third time in the Capetian Race that the Scepter, for want of Males in the Direct Line, passed into a Collateral one. Lewis I. Duke of Orleans, had two Sons, Charles Duke of Orleans, and John Duke of Anjou; Lewis XII. was Charles's Son, and from John came another Charles, the Father of this Francis I. who was crowned at Rheims, January 25th, 1515, and assumed the Title of Duke of Milan with that of King of France. This Prince his first Cares were to Francis

On the other hand, *Ferdinand*, the Pope, Emperor, *Swiss*, and *Sforza* Duke of *Milan* confederated to compel *Francis* to renounce the Dutchy of *Milan*, and other matters. Now *Francis* having made *Charles de Bourbon* Constable, and *du Prat* Chancellor, by whose Advice new Taxes were laid upon the People without the Consent of the Estates; and the necessary Preparations of War being ready, he went to *Lyons*, where he staid some time, till *Trivalcio* and *de Morte* by incredible Difficulties got the Artillery over the Mountains to the Country of *Saluzzes*, while his Troops passed the *Alps* nearer *Provence*. *La Palice* quickly surpris'd *Prospero Colonna* the Pope's General, and took him and his Prisoners; of which the King was no sooner informed, but he left *Lyons* with a noble Retinue: having committed the Regency to *Lovisa* of *Savoy* his Mother, and was now accosted by an *English* Ambassador, who from his Master let him know he ought not to pass into *Italy*, for fear of disturbing the Peace of Christendom: But neither this Remonstrance, nor King *Ferdinand's* Menaces availed any thing to prevent his Expedition; but on he went, and drew his Troops together about *Turin*, while the Confederates abandoning *Chivass* and *Verceil*, retired to *Novarre*, where they staid not long, but went to *Galeate*, so that many of their Towns fell into the King's hands without striking a stroke. So that being now at variance amongst themselves, they set up a Treaty by the means of the Duke of *Savoy*; but a Reinforcement of 10000 men from *Germany* made them break it off, and they suddenly attacked the *French* Army at *Marignan*, within a League of *Milan*, on the 13th of *October*, and broke into their Camp with much Fury, and took some Cannon; but the King with the Flower of the Nobility and Soldiery hastening thither, they engaged in a terrible Fight for four hours within the Night, and nothing but their over-Weariness made them agree to a Truce till Day-light. The King with his Armour on rested upon the Carriage of a Gun, and was glad to get a little Water mixed with Blood and Dirt to quench his Thirst. Next Morning the *Swiss* renewed the Fight with more Vigour than before, but were broken by the *French* Horse and Artillery, and some Companies of them

Francis
successful
in Italy.

The Battel
of Marig-
nan.

cut to pieces in an adjacent Wood, whither they retired. In short, the Confederates retreated to *Milan*, and the *Venetians* will have their Cavalry and *Alvaine* to have been the chief Instruments of Victory. There were 10000 *Swiss* slain, and *French*, but of them abundance of Persons of City and Gentlemen.

The Consequence of this Victory was, that the *Swiss* discontented, and returned home, *Milan* City ordered; the Pope, without staying for the Emperor and Cantons, hasted to treat with the King, who, for him, the Ecclesiastical State and *Florence* under protection: He obliged himself also that the *Milans* from thenceforward should be furnished with Corn from *Cervia*, that the Vice-Roy of *Naples's* Fort would have free Passage to retire home, while the King was to recal the Soldiers he had sent to the Emperor against the *Venetians*, surrender *Piacenza* and *Parma* to the King, and *Modena* and *Reggio* to the Duke of *Ferrara*. Lastly, to compleat the Success of the King's Designs, the Constable having corrupted *Moron*, who was the unfortunate Duke *Sforza's* prime Counsellor, with Money, he was persuaded to capitulate the Castle of *Milan*, and resigned all his Right to the Dutchy, upon condition of a Sum of ready Money to pay his Debts, a Pension of 30000 Ducats in *France*, Francis conquers the Milanese.

1516.

The unsuccessful Expedition of the Emperor into Italy.

from the King, and to have their Pensions continued.

The King having now settled all things for the security of *Milan*, returned to *Lyons* much envied by the Emperor, *Ferdinand*, and King of *England*, who all resolved to make War upon him; but *Ferdinand* dying *February 22d*, of a Dropsy (as did also *Johann de Albret* the dispossessed King of *Navarre* some time after, leaving his Son *Henry* to inherit the Title, and a little Parcel of it on this side the *Pyrenees*) *Francis* thought it a proper time to invade *Naples*, as imagining *Charles* from some political Considerations would give him no Interruption therein: But in short, the Pope under-hand procured the *English*, *Swiss* and *Medicis* to break his Measures; the Emperor on his part entred the *Milanese* with 20000 *Swiss* of the five Cantons that refused to sign the late Treaty with *France*, 10000 *Germans*, and 4 or 5000 Horse, who after having relieved *Brescia* and *Verona*, much straitned by the *Venetians* and *French*, passed the *Adda*, and so ravaged the Country, that the *French* were ready to abandon *Milan*; but the Emperor's slowness giving the Constable that commanded there time to provide for his security, and being informed that 12000 *Swiss* were come to the Constable, they suddenly decamped and repassed the *Adda*; and in a short time his Troops mouldered to nothing for want of Pay, the *Swiss* returning home, and 3000 *Germans* and *Spaniards* going over to the Constable. It's not to be doubted but the Pope held Intelligence with the Emperor, tho' the King was so far from believing it, that he allowed him to dispossess *Maria* Duke of *Urbino*, to give the Dutchy to his Nephew *Laurence de Medicis*.

In the mean time, that the Concordat between the King and the Pope might not look like a simple Agreement between particular Persons, it was confirmed by the *Lateran* Council, notwithstanding all the Remonstrances of the Clergy, Universities and Parliaments of *France*, who at two Years end were forced to give way to absolute Authority, and record it in Parliament. Now the Council of *Charles* of *Austria* finding necessary for his Affairs to renew the Alliances with King *Francis*, thereby to have a free Passage in *Spain*, the same was done at *Noyon* on the 16th

*

August

: And the Articles were, That *Charles* should
:*Lovisa* the King's eldest Daughter, or upon
the second, and so on; or else *Renee* the
:*Sister*, who for her Dowry should have the
pretended share of *Naples*, with Reversion in
your, in case of want of Issue; that *Charles*
pay 100000 Crowns yearly for the Maintenance
Daughter, give up *Navarre* within six Months to
d' Albret, but otherwise *Francis* to be free to assist
hat the Emperor might come into the Treaty;
he surrendred *Verona* to the *Venetians*, they should
n 200000 Crowns, and *Francis* give him a Dis-
for the 300000 lent him by *Lewis XII.* to make
pon them. The Emperor complied, and more par-
y gave up *Verona* to the Republick for the Sum spe-
nd allowed the five dissenting Cantons to conse-
with *France*, as the rest had done. The King all
ile did whatever he could to gain the Pope, the
to carry on his Designs in *Italy*; and therefore
him against *Maria*, who endeavoured to re-
rbin, which War lasted 8 Months: The *Me-*
last gained the *Spanish* Troops with Money,
: Emperor continued the Truce with the *Vene-*
r five Years, while King *Francis* the more still to
the Pope, gave it under his hand, he would
er *Reggio* and *Modena* to the Duke of *Ferrara*.
leave these meddling matters and not to enter

Maximilian's Death.

1519.

Charles V. chosen Emperor.

1520.

Now *Maximilian* Emperor of *Germany* dying on the 22d of *January* this Year, the two great Competitors for the Imperial Diadem were his Grandson *Charles* and King *Francis*, without shewing however the least Pique against one another: The *Swiss* denied *Francis* their Interest with the Electors; the Pope pretended to favour him, but in reality he was for neither of the two Princes, because they were too potent; and if he recommended *Francis*, it was only to get some suffrages from *Charles*, in order to the Election of some other *German* Prince; the Electors also were in suspense for a while, and after many Arguments, Altercations, and largely fingering of *Charles* his Money, *Charles* carried it: Which *Francis* disssembled as well as he could; however fearing the worst, he took more care to gain the Pope's Friendship, and the King of *England's*; but the Pope following Fortune, gave *Charles* the Investiture of *Naples*. His Election hastned the Interview between the Kings of *England* and *France*, in *June* between *Ardres* and *Guisnes*, who being Princes equally pompous and vain, made their Magnificence appear to the highest Profusion: This Interview was called *The Camp of Cloth of Gold*; when they had saluted one another on Horseback, they entred into a Pavillion erected on purpose for them, each with two or three Ministers of State, and there talked a few Moments about their Affairs; that done, they spent ten or twelve days in Turnaments and Feastings: After which *Francis* returned to *Ardres*, and *Henry* to *Guisnes*; but before they parted, they consumed the Treaty in the solemnest manner, and took the Sacrament together upon it. However it were, *Charles V.* going from *Spain* to the Low Countries, and passing first into *England*, saw King *Henry* with less Splendor, and perhaps more Fruit; for *Henry* promised him, in case of any difference between him and *Francis*, he would be Arbitrator, and declare himself an Enemy to the Party that should not stand to his Award. His Intention wisely enough was to keep a Ballance; and therefore at his late Interview with *Francis*, he caused the Figure of an Archer to be placed over his Tent-Door with these Words, *He that accompanies or joins with him is Master.*

Chap. 1. *The Reign of Francis I.*

But to leave King *Henry VIII.* for the present, and he great Emperor *Charles* to be crowned at *Aix la Chapelle* on the 22d of *October* : We are here to observe that *Spain* in his Absence was not altogether free from Disturbances; but more particularly, *Navarre* The War of Navarre. 1521. revolted, and it would have been easy for *Francis*, while the Vice-Roys had drain'd the Garisons, to make head against them to regain that Kingdom; but he did not dream of it till the Spring following, and then he sent an Army thither under the Command of *Andrew de Foix* and Lord *D'Esparres*, who recovered it all in a few days, having met with no resistance but from the Castle of *Pampelona*, which at last surrendred upon Articles; but *D'Esparres* not satisfied with what he had successfully done, entred *Castile*, and besieg'd *Logrogne* : Upon this the Vice-Roys returning from subduing the Rebels, marched directly to fight him; but his Lieutenant General *Colombe* having casheered part of his Men, that by false Musters he might put a good deal of Money into his Pocket, he was necessitated to retire to *Pampelona*; but there not staying for a Re-inforcement of 6000 Men rashly gave them Battel, but was well beaten for it, insomuch that *Pampelona* and the rest of the Towns were recovered by the *Spaniards* in as little time as they had lost them, and the Emperor ordered most of its Castles to be demolished and Towns dismantled.

'Tis true indeed, this War did not contravene the Treaty of *Noyon*, since the six Months were expired; but *Charles* and *Francis* for all that would find Pretences to quarrel : *Francis* was the more forward to undertake, because he raised Subsidies as he pleased, whereas the other could raise none without difficulty; however he was a much better Husband, and made but very few idle Expences. The King of *England* kept himself neuter, the Pope was unconstant, but at last, whatever his Reasons were, he entred into a League with the Emperor for the mutual Defence of their Territories, to re-establish *Sforza* in *Milan*, and to recover *Ferrara* for the Holy See.

Now the Lord of *Sedan* who was Duke of *Bovillon* being disgraced in the *French* Court, he went to the Emperor's; but it hapning that the Emperor's Council had receiv'd

receiv'd an Appeal from a Judgment, which the Peers of his Dutchy of *Bovillon* had granted, in a certain Cause between the Lord of *Simay* and *D' Emery*, the Duke was so turbulent and impetuous, that he took it as an Affront, and would revenge it; wherefore reconciling himself to *Francis*, he was thereupon so rash and impertinent, as to send a Challenge to the Emperor in the Diet of *Worms*; and afterwards his Son *Florenge*s with 3000 Men laid Siege to *Vireton* in *Luxemburg*: The King of *England* presently mediates between them, upon which *Francis* commanded *Florenge*s to withdraw; but the Emperor not taking this to be a sufficient satisfaction for the Affront, raised a great Army under *Henry* Count of *Nassau*, who took four or five little Places from *Bovillon*, and then granted him a Truce for forty days. However the Imperial Troops having at the same time seized *St. Amand*, and besieged *Mortain*, as was also *Tournay* by the Governor of *Flanders*, *Francis* took this for no other than a Declaration of War: However *Henry VIII.* as much as he could to prevent it, desired both Parties might send Commissioners to him at *Calais*, to decide their Differences, and gave them plainly to understand, he would declare himself an open Enemy to him that should refuse it; so that both Parties being necessitated to comply, the Emperor at first demanded no less than the Dutchy of *Burgundy*, and to be discharged of all Homage for *Flanders* and *Artois*.

The Imperialists
besiege
Monzon
in vain.

During this Conference the Count of *Nassau* passing the *Meuse* besieged *Monzon*, which some of the Garrison would have surrendered to him upon very disadvantageous Terms; but *Baynard* not only defended himself like a brave Soldier, but by counterfeit Letters sowed such Division between *Nassau* and *Sickinghen*, who commanded that part of the Emperor's Army that lay on the *French* side of the *Meuse*, that he made them raise their Siege: However 'tis memorable that Bombs, as 'tis thought, were now first used against this Place. *Francis* on the other hand having got his Army together, burnt and dismantled *Bapaume*, reduced *Landrecy* and *Bouchain*, and passed the *Scheld* to engage the Emperor himself, who under the favour of a Fog drew off and retired: Upon

this

p. 1. *The Reign of Francis I,*

occasion the King to content his Mother, who had the Constable *de Bourbon*, because he disdained Love, gave the Command of the Van-guard to the Duke of *Alençon*, and what was worse slighted Advice he gave him to fall upon the Rear of the peror's Army.

On the other hand, the French Admiral *Bonnivet* having feigned a March towards *Pampelona*, turned port by *St. John de Luz*, and besieged *Fontarabia*, which he took on the 18th of Octob. In the mean time the Commissioners of both Parties were still at *Paris* and had agreed upon every thing, more particularly that the Emperor should raise the Siege of *Tournay*, and recal his Troops out of *Milan*; but as coming just then of the taking of *Fontarabia*, he refused to ratify the Treaty, unless they would restore that Place to him; and *Bonnivet* full of vain Desire to perpetuate the Glory of his Conquest, perswaded the King to preserve it, and so by a fantastical and ambitious Minister, involved the Kingdom in a War of 5 Years Duration. *Francis* was incamped upon the *Scheldt*, when he had News of the Treaty; but being not able to relieve *Tournay*, he retired to *Picardy*, and left the Army under the Constable and Duke of *Vendôme*, who took *Hesdin*, and some other little Places; at *Tournay* was at length surrendered upon Articles to the Imperialists.

Tournay
surrendered to the
Imperialists.

In *Italy*, the Pope and the Emperor not being able to make *Genoa* and *Milan* revolt, the Governor *Lautrec* and his Brother *Lescun* at length furnished the Pope with a pretence by their haughty and severe Proscriptions, which caused so many Exiles that they drew together at *Reggio*, against whom *Lescun* marched with 500 Horse, and endeavoured to surprize the Town; which the Pope made very loud Complaints in the Consistory, and protested that *Francis* having violated the Alliance between them, he thought himself no longer obliged to observe it, and so prepared for a Breach. In the mean time the King perceiving he must have a War on that side, sent *Lautrec*, now in *France*, thither; but he refusing to go till he had the 300000 Crowns that had been assigned him, he was at least by *Madam* the King's Mother and the Treasurers persuaded

The Italian
War.

ded to it upon promise of immediate Remit
 but his Fears were just enough, for as soon as
 out of sight, the King thought no more of him,
Madam who hated him, diverted the Funds to o
 uses. The Enemy had besieged *Parma*, and 1
 with 3000 Men in it; but News being come to
 Besieged, that the Duke of *Ferrara* had taken *F*
 and *St. Felix*, and that he might also get both *Re*
 and *Modena* from them, they raised the Siege and
 turned to *St. Lazare*; and the *Germans* for
 Pay having abandoned them in their March,
 had now been an end of their Army, if *Lautrec*
 but pursued and smartly charged them: He might
 have oppressed them at *Rebeque* upon the *Oglio*; but
 quietly repassing that River in the Night, were
 after joined by 10000 *Swiss*, which Cardinal S
 obtained of the *Cantons*, for the defence of the
 and See of *Rome*. Now the Lords of the L
 having sent Couriers to command the *Swiss* both
 the one and the other Army to depart, those that
 ried the Orders to the Confederates were cor
 and stopt, while the others going directly with
 Commands to the *French* Army, the *Swiss* imm
 ly left them; so that *Lautrec* now with the rei
 of the Forces got first to *Casson*, and then ret
Milan, which he held not long; for the Enemy
 incamped at *Marignan*, on the 19th of *Nov.*
 he least expected they should attempt any thi
 he was walking unarmed in the Streets, w
 ther a-bed, he was amazed to find the
 the Suburbs, which was basely quitted to
Venetians, and at the same time the
Gibeline Faction let them into the City,
Spaniards rancked for eight Days toget
 in the mean time having reinforced the Can
 to *Como* and *Bergamo*, the first of which
 ken, as were also *Parma* and *Piacenza*. *Leo*
 with these Successes, falls into a Fever
 that he having been the grand Project
 of this War, it might have been tho
 would have recovered their Losses, fi
 minded things so little, that *Ferrara* n
 Towns *Leo* had taken from him,

Spaniards
take Mi-
lan, &c.
from the
French.

Dutchies of *Urbino* and *Camerino*: But the Affront they received at *Parma*, they having been beaten off by a few Soldiers and People half armed, gave the other Towns greater Courage to resist them; after which both Armies rested for six Weeks, the *French* for want of Men, and indeed both of them for want of Money.

During this Recess, as I may call it, *Colonna* took all the Care imaginable for the defence of and animating *Milan* against the *French*, and inspired them with Affection for *Francis Sforza*, *Lodowick's* second Son, and the Brother of *Maximilian*; *Leo* with the Emperor's Consent having designed to restore him to his Father's Dutchy; but he was yet at *Trent*, expecting a levy of 8000 *Germans* to conduct him thither. In the mean time, notwithstanding the Cabals of the Imperialists and other Obstructions, the *Cantons* allowed *Francis* a Levy of 12000 *Swiss*, that marched into *Lombardy* under the Command of the Bastard of *Savoy*; soon after which *John de Medicis* engaged in the King's Service, and joined his Army with 3000 Men. *Lautrec* thus strongly reinforced, besieged *Milan* in form; but hearing that *Sforza* and his Men were arrived at *Piacenza*, and that the Marquess of *Mantua* was to convoy him with his Horse to *Pavia*, from whence he designed to lay hold of the first favourable Opportunity to go to *Milan*, he decamped and posted himself upon the *Cassine* to prevent it; but his Brother *Lescun* taking *Navarre* protracted the time, *Sforza gets* and gave *Sforza* an Opportunity to get into *Milan*, into Milan. whereby the Courage of the Inhabitants was greatly increased. Hereupon *Lautrec* laid Siege to *Pavia*, but failing to take it, he advanced as far as *Monce* to receive the Money sent him from *France*; but a Body of the Enemy having posted themselves in the way, and the *Swiss* being impatient for their Pay, they would engage the General against his Judgment to fight the Enemies Army, that was very advantageously posted at *Bicoque* within three Miles of *Milan*, and where *Colonna* the General waited their coming: *Lautrec* and his Brother in the Wings could do no great matter against them, but the *Swiss* did Wonders, tho they paid dear enough for their Rashness by the Death of

French un-
successful
in Italy.

3000 of their Number, and being forced to retire. Next day their Blood being cooled, and *Lautrec* having passed the *Adda*, they retired home so disheartened, that for many Years they did nothing worth their antient Valour, but indeed became more manageable than before. *Lautrec* hereupon goes into *Italy* for Succours, and in his absence *Colonna* besieged *Cremona*, and *Lescun* in it, who capitulated to surrender within forty Days, if the *French* came not with an Army that should force their way over the Alps, and take some considerable Place in the Dutchy of *Mantua*, and likewise promised, that the other Holds that were in the *Milanese* should be evacuated, except the *Castles* of *Cremona*, *Novara* and *Milan*: The time came, he got some Days added, but at last executed the Treaty and returned to *France*; tho' before his Departure he was farther mortified with the news, that *Colonna* had made himself Master of *Genoa*, so much that *Francis* now being out of all hopes of doing any thing in the *Milanese* this Year, countermanded those Forces he was sending thither.

The Miscarriages indeed chiefly proceeded from the King's own Negligence, in not sending seasonable Supplies; however *Samblancay* the Superintendant of Finances suffered for it, who thro' the Malice of the Chancellor *Duprat* was condemned to be hanged. In the mean time they made use of all ways and means to get Money by alienating the Crown-Lands, selling of Offices and the like indirect Methods, to the neglect of nothing of Tallies, and new Imposts, whereby the antient Laws of the Kingdom were subverted. In the mean while *Francis* had no less to do in *Gascony* and *Picardy*, than *Italy*; for the Emperor going to *Spain* thro' *England*, prevailed with *Henry VI* to take his part against the *French*, and having quickly suppressed the Revolt of the *Castilians*, he with the mainders of that Insurrection and some others, raised up an Army, which besieged *Fontarabia*, while *Henry* landed another at *Calais* under the Duke of *Suffolk*, and sent an Herald to defy *Francis* at *Paris*. But *Belgrade* and *Rhodes* hapning to be lost about the same time to the *Turks*, Pope *Adrian* employed all his Cares to make a Peace, or at least a Truce between them.

Christian Princes, that so with united Force they might make War upon the Infidels. *Francis* would yield to nothing but a very short Truce, which not at all suiting with the Pope's Designs, he would needs bring him to it by force, and therefore engaged the Emperor, *Venetians* and King of *England* to drive him out of *Italy*; but the King for all this would have gone thither in Person, had not the Conspiracy of the Duke of *Bourbon* prevented it.

Madam had for many Years sought all Opportunities to ruin him, and the Chancellor and Admiral were here chief Instruments in it; so that besides other Mortifications, they proceeded in Parliament to strip him even of the Dutchy of *Bourbon*, and the other great Estate of his Wife *Susanna*, who in the Year 1521 died Childless, the Succession of which *Madam* pretended did belong to her as next Heiress: The Constable made a very good defence, in vindication of his Right both to the one and the other, and believed his Cause would have been very good in any other Times, and against any other Party; but supposing they were resolved to cast him right or wrong, he rashly and in a Fury threw himself into the Emperor's Arms, and the King of *England* came into the Treaty made between them, which imported, that they three should share *France* between them; that *Bourbon* should have the antient Kingdom of *Arles*, and marry *Eleanor* the Emperor's Sister. Now while the King was at *St. Peter le Monstier*, and that two of the Constable's Servants there discovered the whole Correspondence to him, he would needs be satisfied from his own Mouth at *Moulins*, where the Constable owned he had been solicited by the Count of *Rieux*, but stiffly denied he had given any Ear to it; they would perhaps have seized him here if they durst, therefore he was only commanded to follow the King to Court, in order to which he travelled easy Journeys in his Litter; but hearing at *la Palice*, that there was a Decree issued to put his Estate under Sequestration, he dispatched the Bishop of *Aurun* to the King, to beseech him to stop the Execution of it; but finding nothing could be done in his favour, he fled to his Castel of *Chantelle*, but not being safe there, he escaped

*Bourbon's
Conspiracy.
1523.*

to

Maximilian's
Death.
1519.

Charles V.
Emperor.
1520.

Now *Maximilian* Emperor of *Germany* dying on the 22d of *January* this Year, the two great Competitors for the Imperial Diadem were his Grandson *Charles* and King *Francis*, without shewing however the least Pique against one another: The *Swiss* denied *Francis* their Interest with the Electors; the Pope pretended to favour him, but in reality he was for neither of the two Princes, because they were too potent; and if he recommended *Francis*, it was only to get some suffrages from *Charles*, in order to the Election of some other *German* Prince; the Electors also were in suspense for a while, and after many Arguments, Altercations, and largely fingering of *Charles* his Money, *Charles* carried it: Which *Francis* dissembled as well as he could; however fearing the worst, he took more care to gain the Pope's Friendship, and the King of *England's*; but the Pope following Fortune, gave *Charles* the Investiture of *Naples*. His Election hastned the Interview between the Kings of *England* and *France*, in *June* between *Ardes* and *Guisnes*, who being Princes equally pompous and vain, made their Magnificence appear to the highest Profusion: This Interview was called *The Camp of Cloth of Gold*; when they had saluted one another on Horseback, they entred into a Pavilion erected on purpose for them, each with two or three Ministers of State, and there talked a few Moments about their Affairs; that done, they spent ten or twelve days in Turnaments and Feastings: After which *Francis* returned to *Ardes*, and *Henry* to *Guisnes*; but before they parted, they confirmed the Treaty in the solemnest manner, and took the Sacrament together upon it. However it were, *Charles* V. going from *Spain* to the Low Countries, and passing first into *England*, saw King *Henry* with less Splendor, and perhaps more Fruit; for *Henry* promised him, in case of any difference between him and *Francis*, he would be Arbitrator, and declare himself an Enemy to the Party that should not stand to his Award. His Intention wisely enough was to keep a Ballance; and therefore at his late Interview with *Francis*, he caused the Figure of an Archer to be placed over his Tent-Door with these Words, *He that accompanies or joins with him is Master.*

to leave King *Henry VIII.* for the present, and great Emperor *Charles* to be crowned at *Aix la lle* on the 22d of *October*: We are here to observe that *Spain* in his Absence was not altogether free from Disturbances; but more particularly, *Navarre* The War of Navarre. 1521. the Vice-Roys had drain'd the Garisons, to make against them to regain that Kingdom; but he did dream of it till the Spring following, and then he sent an Army thither under the Command of *Andrew de* and Lord *D'Esparres*, who recovered it all in a few days, having met with no resistance but from the garrison of *Pampelona*, which at last surrendred upon terms; but *D'Esparres* not satisfied with what he had successfully done, entred *Castile*, and besieg'd *Logne*: Upon this the Vice-Roys returning from suppressing the Rebels, marched directly to fight him; his Lieutenant General *Colombe* having cashiered half of his Men, that by false Musters he might put a good deal of Money into his Pocket, he was necessitated to retire to *Pampelona*; but there not staying long, a Re-inforcement of 6000 Men rashly gave them battle, but was well beaten for it, insomuch that *Pampelona* and the rest of the Towns were recovered by the *Spaniards* in as little time as they had lost them, whereupon the Emperor ordered most of its Castles to be demolished and Towns dismantled.

receiv'd an Appeal from a Judgment, which the
of his Dutchy of *Bovillon* had granted, in a
Cause between the Lord of *Simay* and *D' Emery*.
Duke was so turbulent and impetuous, that he
as an Affront, and would revenge it; wherefore
ciling himself to *Francis*, he was thereupon so ra
impertinent, as to send a Challenge to the Em
in the Diet of *Worms*; and afterwards his *S*
renses with 3000 Men laid Siege to *Vireton* in
emburg: The King of *England* presently media
tween them, upon which *Francis* commanded
ges to withdraw; but the Emperor not taking
be a sufficient satisfaction for the Affront, r
great Army under *Henry* Count of *Nassau*, wh
four or five little Places from *Bovillon*, and then
ed him a Truce for forty days. However the
rial Troops having at the same time seized *Str*
and besieged *Mortain*, as was also *Tournay* by t
vornor of *Flanders*, *Francis* took this for no other
Declaration of War: However *Henry VIII.* as
he could to prevent it, desired both Parties mig
Commissioners to him at *Calais*, to decide their Di
ces, and gave them plainly to understand, he wo
clare himself an open Enemy to him that sho
fuse it; so that both Parties being necessitated t
ply, the Emperor at first demanded no less t
Dutchy of *Burgundy*, and to be discharged of
mage for *Flanders* and *Artois*.

The Impe-
rialists
besiege
Monzon
in vain.

During this Conference the Count of *Nassau*
the *Meuse* besieged *Monzon*, which some of
rison would have surrendered to him upon very
vantageous Terms; but *Baynard* not only d
himself like a brave Soldier, but by counter
ters sowed such Division between *Nassau* and
ben, who commanded that part of the Em
Army that lay on the *French* side of the *Meu*
he made them raise their Siege: However 'tis
rable that Bombs, as 'tis thought, were now fir
against this Place. *Francis* on the other hand
got his Army together, burnt and dismant
paume, reduced *Landrecy* and *Bouchain*, and
the *Scheld* to engage the Emperor himself, wh
the favour of a Fog drew off and retired:

occasion the King to content his Mother, who had the Constable *de Bourbon*, because he disdained love, gave the Command of the Van-guard to Duke of *Alençon*, and what was worse slighted advice he gave him to fall upon the Rear of the Emperor's Army.

On the other hand, the French Admiral *Bonnivet* feigned a March towards *Pampelona*, turned by *St. John de Luz*, and besieged *Fontarabia*, which he took on the 18th of *Octob.* In the mean time the Commissioners of both Parties were still at *Tour* and had agreed upon every thing, more particularly that the Emperor should raise the Siege of *Tour*, and recal his Troops out of *Milan*; but becoming just then of the taking of *Fontarabia*, he refused to ratify the Treaty, unless they would restore *Fontarabia* to him; and *Bonnivet* full of vain Desire to secure the Glory of his Conquest, perswaded the King to preserve it, and so by a fantastical and ambitious Minister, involved the Kingdom in a War of Years Duration. *Francis* was incamped upon the *Meuse*, when he had News of the Treaty; but being unable to relieve *Tour*, he retired to *Picardy*, and the Army under the Constable and Duke of *Vendôme*, who took *Hesdin*, and some other little Places; *Tour* was at length surrendered upon Articles of Capitulation to the Imperialists.

Tour
surrendered
to the
Imperialists

The Reign of F

ded to it upon promise of
 but his Fears were just eno
 out of sight, the King th no
Madam who hated him, cruel
 uses. The Enemy had besieged
 with 3000 Men in it ; but Nev
 Besieged, that the Duke of *Ferrara*
 and *St. Felix*, and that he might also ge
 and *Modena* from them, they raised
 turned to *St. Lazare* ; and the *Ge*
Pay having abandoned them in their
 had now been an end of their Army,
 but pursued and smartly charged them : th
 have oppressed them at *Rebeque* upon the *O*
 quietly repassing that River in the Ni
 after joined by 10000 *Swiss*, which *Car*
 obtained of the *Cantons*, for the defence
 and See of *Rome*. Now the Lords of
 having sent *Couriers* to command the
 the one and the other Army to depart, to
 ried the Orders to the *Confederates*
 and stopt, while the others going to ec
 Commands to the *French* Army, the
 ly left them ; so that *Lautrec* now with
 of the Forces got first to *Casson*, and then
Milun, which he held not long ; for
 incamped at *Marignun*, on the 19th of
 he least expected they should attempt any
 he was walking unarmed in the eets,
 ther a-bed, he was amazed to n
 the Suburbs, which was basely reed
Venetians, and at the same time u
Gibeline Faction let them into t Cal--
Spaniards ransacked for eight Days
 in the mean time having reinforced un
 to *Comu* and *Bergamo*, the first
 ken, as were also *Parmi* and *Pia*
 with these Successes, falls into a
 that he having been the grand
 of this War, it might have be
 would have recovered their Loss
 minded things so little, that *Fer*
 Towns *Leo* had taken from him,

Spaniards
sake Mi-
lan, &c.
from the
French.

hies of *Urbino* and *Camerino*: But the Affront they
ved at *Parma*, they having been beaten off by a
Soldiers and People half armed, gave the other
ns greater Courage to resist them; after which
Armies rested for six Weeks, the *French* for
t of Men, and indeed both of them for want of
ney.

oring this Recess, as I may call it, *Colonna* took
he Care imaginable for the defence of and ani-
ing *Milan* against the *French*, and inspired them
a Affection for *Francis Sforza*, *Lodowick's* second
, and the Brother of *Maximilian*; *Leo* with the
peror's Consent having designed to restore him to
Father's Dutchy; but he was yet at *Trent*, expect-
a levy of 8000 *Germans* to conduct him thither.
the mean time, notwithstanding the Cabals of the
perialists and other Obstructions, the *Cantons* allow-
Francis a Levy of 12000 *Swiss*, that marched into
Lombardy under the Command of the Bastard of
oy; soon after which *John de Medicis* engaged in the
ng's Service, and joined his Army with 3000 Men.
utrec thus strongly reinforced, besieged *Milan* in
m; but hearing that *Sforza* and his Men were ar-
ed at *Piacenza*, and that the Marquess of *Mantua*
s to convoy him with his Horse to *Pavia*, from
ence he designed to lay hold of the first favourable

1522.

French un-
successful
in Italy.

3000 of their Number, and being forced to
Next day their Blood being cooled, and *Lautrec*
ing passed the *Adda*, they retired home so dis-
ed, that for many Years they did nothing with
their antient Valour, but indeed became more
able than before. *Lautrec* hereupon goes into
for Succours, and in his absence *Colonna* besieged
na, and *Lescun* in it, who capitulated to surrender
within forty Days, if the *French* came not
Army that should force their way over the
take some considerable Place in the Dutchy of
and likewise promised, that the other Holds
in the *Milanese* should be evacuated, except the
of *Cremona*, *Novara* and *Milan*: The time
come, he got some Days added, but at last
the Treaty and returned to *France*; tho' before
Departure he was farther mortified with
that *Colonna* had made himself Master of *Genoa*
somuch that *Francis* now being out of all hope
ing any thing in the *Milanese* this Year, count-
ed those Forces he was sending thither.

The Miscarriages indeed chiefly proceeded from
King's own Negligence, in not sending seasonal
plies; however *Samblancay* the Superintendent of
Finances suffered for it, who thro' the Malice
Chancellor *Duprat* was condemned to be hanged
the mean time they made use of all ways and
to get Money by alienating the Crown-Lan-
ling of Offices and the like indirect Methods
nothing of Tallies, and new Impositions, where
the antient Laws of the Kingdom were subverted
the mean while *Francis* had no less to do in
and *Picardy*, than *Italy*; for the Emperor going
Spain thro' *England*, prevailed with *Henry* to
take his part against the *French*, and having quelled
the Revolt of the *Castilians*, he with the re-
mainders of that Insurrection and some other
up an Army, which besieged *Fontarabia*, where
Henry landed another at *Calais* under the Duke of
Suffolk, and sent an Herald to defy *Francis* at
But *Belgrade* and *Rhodes* hapning to be lost at
time to the *Turks*, Pope *Adrian* employed
Cares to make a Peace, or at least a Truce betwixt

Princes, that so with united Force they might
 at upon the Infidels. *Francis* would yield to
 at a very short Truce, which not at all fur-
 the Pope's Designs, he would needs bring
 by force, and therefore engaged the Empe-
 rors and King of *England* to drive him out
 but the King for all this would have gone
 Person, had not the Conspiracy of the Duke
 prevented it.

we had for many Years sought all Opportunities *Bourbon's*
 him, and the Chancellor and Admiral were *Conspirators*
 of Instruments in it; so that besides other
 1543
 ations, they proceeded in Parliament to strip
 of the Duchy of *Bourbon*, and the other
 state of his Wife *Suzanna*, who in the Year
 and Childless, the Succession of which *Madam*
 did belong to her as next Heiress: The
 le made a very good defence, in vindication of
 it both to the one and the other, and believed
 it would have been very good in any other
 and against any other Party; but supposing
 ere resolved to cast him right or wrong, he
 and in a Fury threw himself into the Empe-
 rors, and the King of *England* came into the
 made between them, which imported, that they
 ould share *France* between them; that *Bour-*
 ald have the antient Kingdom of *Arles*, and

1528.
Francis
challenges
the Em-
peror.

riage, which yet was not consummated till 2. In the mean time a Treaty of Peace at to nothing, there were Heralds from the to denounce War against the Emperor; who that of King *Francis*, that his Master had Faith, and two Years before refused to decide their Quarrel by a single Combat; *Francis* to clear himself of the Scandal erected a Scaffold in his great Hall, and there in the Presence of the *Spanish* Ambassador and others, caused a Challenge to be read, which gave the Emperor the Lie, and required him to fight him; the Ambassador refusing to carry the Challenge, it was sent by a Herald, and the King of *England* did the like by a Messenger of his own.

But tho the Emperor wisely enough eluded these Challenges, things went but badly with him in *Italy*, so that he was necessitated to set the Pope at Liberty, but first endeavoured to ty him to hard Conditions, and he had almost recovered the whole *Milanese*; then entering *Romagnia*, marched and overtook the Imperial Army at *Abruzzo*, to whom he presented Battel, but they retired to *Naples*. On the other hand, some of the *French* Ships made a Descent upon *Sardinia*, and plundered *Sassary*, which was the cause of great Misfortunes, for most of the Soldiers surfeited with eating died of the Disentery: The King grew very remiss in sending *Lantrec* Supplies; *Doria* and *Cere* could not agree, so that the first of them retired home with his Gallies to *Genua*, with an Intention to restore the Liberty of his Country.

In the mean time the *French* Army lay under *Lantrec*, whose Brother *Philip* defeated the *Spaniards* at Sea, this heightened *Lantrec*'s Hopes, and so encouraged them, that they put in divers small *Naples*, and likewise cut off his Provision the Plague began now to infect his Army, a Defection grew more manifest than the General sent to the King, to give satisfaction whatever came on't: But instead of giving *Savonna* to the *Genuese*, D. a. into Management of the Chancellor, seized by *Barbeseux* Admiral of the

Bonnivet who had a Wound in his Arm, got before, for fear of falling into his Hands, and the Retreat to be managed by *Baynard* and *Vendev* who acquitted themselves very generously, tho' French of them were slain by Musket-shot. The rest of *lose all in Italy.* army not being pursued, retired towards the the *Swiss* returned home by the Valley of *A-* and the *French* by the way of *Turin*: After Departure the Confederates easily recovered Places, whilst they in the Castle of *Novarra* ordered to *Sforza*, *Loda* to the Duke of *Urbino*, *Alexandria* to the Marquess of *Pescara*. But notwithstanding all this ill Success, Madam knew so how to temper the King's mind in favour of *vet*, that all the Blame was laid upon the Force of War; and the better to cover it, the King himself was persuaded to go with a great Army in *Per-* to *Italy*.

Now *Clement* the VII. being lately elected into the Chair, would fain have brought the Potentates to Truce or Peace; but *Henry VIII.* at *Woolsey's* Instigation being for neither of them, as supposing he might make mighty Advantages of *Bourbon* for the recovery of his Right to *France*, with this prospect he made a new Treaty with the Emperor, consisting of several Particulars; but however the same was in reali-

Francis
marches
into Italy.

1524.

peror's Money, that the Confederate States of *Italy* would not assist him, and that *Henry VIII.* had raised no Men, he resolved to follow *Bourbon* by great Marches; being persuaded, if he could either reach or get before him, nothing could obstruct his conquering of that Dutchy. The King arrived at *Ferceil*, at the same time that the Enemy got to *Alba*, from whence they got in two days to *Parma*, having marched 36 Miles in one day, being resolved to keep *Milan*, and therefore incamped at *Binasque*; but upon the King's Approach they retired to *Loda*, and the King pursuant to *Bonniwet's* Advice, declining to pursue them, which in all probability would have done his Business, left *Trimoville* with 6000 Men in *Milan* to besiege the Castle, and went himself, and on the 27th of *Oct.* sat down before *Pavia*; he thinking himself already so sure of *Milan*, that he made a Detachment of 10000 Foot, and 600 Men at Arms, with some Horse of his own Army, under the conduct of *Joh. Stuart Duke of Albany*, to go and conquer the Kingdom of *Naples*; and not long after he sent 4000 men more to *Savonna*, under the Marquess of *Saluzzo*, to make War upon those of *Genoa*.

In the mean while the Siege of *Milan* was found to be no more advanced after two Months continuance than the first day: At the same time *Charles of Bourbon* returned out of *Germany* with a Reinforcement of 10000 Foot, and 1000 Horse, and joined *Lo. noy's* Army near *Loda*, which making together a considerable Army, they tried all manner of ways to put some relief into *Pavia*, which yet was in no great danger unless it were from its own Garrison, who were ready to mutiny for want of Pay. Castle *St. Angelo* between *Pavia* and *Milan*, would have cut off their Provision had they left it behind them; but the same being entrusted to an *Italian* by *Bonniwet*, he quickly surrendered both Town and Castle into their Hands: Here upon the King's best Commanders were for raising the Siege, and gave so many important Reasons for that tis unaccountable he did not comply therewith *Bonniwet's* Obstinacy, and the Shame he fancied would be to quit the Design, after he had with so many magnificent Speeches proclaimed he would take it

Pla

e or die before it, obliged him to continue the
 e. The Armies were now very near, and the Enemy
 rving the confusion of the *French*, they drew nigh
 Park-Wall of *Pavia* on the 23th or 24th of Feb.
 ight, and having thrown down about 60 Fathom
 t, marched directly to *Mirabel-Castle*, the King's
 rters; the King's Cannon tho well planted could
 o great Execution while it was dark, but as soon as
 ew light, it so annoyed their Rear, as to break
 Ranks, at which he greatly rejoiced, and much
 e still at the News of the Duke of *Alençon's* having
 tted a great Body of the *Spaniards*, and taken four
 s of Cannon: So that believing they were half
 ed, he imprudently went out of his Camp to *The Battel*
 ge them; at first he broke in amongst their Horse; *of Pavia.*
 Their Harque-busiers having put his Men to a
 , *Bourbon* and *Lanoy* with their Men gave a furi-
 Charge, *Alençon* fled and died with Grief at *Ly-*
 the *Swiss* lying open, made but a poor Fight, and
 withdrew; but 3 or 4000 *German* Foot stood to
 last, and were all cut in pieces; so that all the
 n falling upon the King, and his Horse killed un-
 him, at last meeting and knowing *Pomperan*, he sur-
 dered himself to him: All the *French* Baggage and *Francis*
 mon were taken, and 8000 men slain upon the *made a*

On the other hand, the Emperor during the six Years Peace, endeavoured to compose the Affairs of the Empire, and going now to *Ratisbonne* he obtained a Supply against the *Turks*, who were with a powerful Army ready to fall upon *Hungary*, and with a Fleet by Sea upon *Italy*; wherefore he made use of this occasion to require *Francis* to lend him Money, and his *Gens d'Arms*: But to the first he answered, *He was no Banker, and for his Horse, they were the Strength of his Government, and that he would lend them no more than he would do his Sword, but would fight at the head of them, that he might have his share in the Honour or the Danger.* And therefore he and the King of *England* made a League to set 80000 Men on Foot against the common Enemy, and *Francis* more particularly offered to defend *Italy*: Indeed the Union appeared very strict between *Francis* and *Henry VIII.* who being desirous to confer together about these Affairs, met at *St. Joquevert* in *October*, between *Bologna* and *Calais*; they were both of them much dissatisfied with the Pope, and projected Leagues and Designs against him: While the Pope and the Emperor had an Interview at *Bologna*, with the same Demonstrations of Affection as at first, but with much different Sentiments; for they could hardly agree at last in any one particular, and parted very ill satisfied with one another; and more especially the Emperor was concerned that the Pope was not so forward as he expected to excommunicate *Henry VIII.* for his going to divorce *Catharine* his Aunt. On the other hand, *Henry* made most vehement Instances to *Francis*, that he would impetrate the Pope he might have Judges appointed on the Place, to examine into his Marriage: But in short, after some canvassing this matter to and fro, *Henry's* amorous Impatience, or somewhat else, caused the Marriage to be proclaim'd null by his own Arch-bishop *Crammer*; at which the Pope and Emperor were highly concerned, and the same ended at last in the Pope's Excommunicating the King, and the Reformation of the Church in *England*; but of this enough.

This Year in *October* the Pope in his Gallies arrived at *Marseilles*, and was there magnificently entertained by

Henry
VIII. di-
vorced.

1533.

an Princes, *Bourbon* and others, were con-
the King should be carried to *Spain*, the
of the former having been to drive the
of *Milan*, and not to introduce the *Spa-*
to restore *Sforza*; yet the Emperor car-
t as absolute Master, and *Sforza* was no-
ned of; the Pope and *Venetians* were for
is Interest, and they altogether thinking
antage of *Pescara's* discontent, proposed
bsence to make him King of *Naples*: He
cruple the Offer at first, in respect to the
it; but appearing to be satisfied at last,
learnt the whole Intrigue, he communi-
the Emperor, and so taking the Opportu-
tive the unhappy *Sforza* of his Dutchy,
is strongest Places from him by a Wile, and
him up in the Castle of *Milan*, with a
tion, but he died in the beginning of
th an ill Character.

negotiation was all this while carried on at
whither went *Margaret* the King's Sister
to that purpose, from whence by the In-
Bourbon she returned without accomplishing
; however she scattered Money in those
that she gained some of the Emperor's
d most of the King's Guards, with whom
ned a Project for his Escape: but the Em-

Lawrence all in intire Sovereignty to the Emperor, also the Homage for *Flanders* and *Artois*, and his Pretensions to *Naples*, *Milan*, *Genoa*, *Ast*, *Tourn*, *Lisle* and *Hesdin*; to get *Henry d'Albret* to renounce the Kingdom of *Navarre*, but if otherwise not assist him; to restore the Duke of *Bourbon* and his Followers to their Estates, as likewise to give *Philippe Chaulons* his Liberty and the Principality of *Orange* and to *Michael Antony* his Marquisate of *Saluzzo* to give the Duke of *Guelldres* no assistance, and at Death to procure his Cities to return to the Emperor to pay the King of *England's* Arrears of Pensions which was 500000 Crowns; to lend the Emperor when he should go to take the Imperial Crown in Italy, 12 Gallies and 4 Great Ships, and to pay him 200000 Crowns, instead of the Land Army he had promised him. Farther, the King engaged his Father if he could not procure the full Execution of the Articles, he would voluntarily return a Prisoner again.

The Emperor's Chancellor would not sign this Treaty, so that he was forced to it himself; then the Princes conversed familiarly together; and the King being set at Liberty, his two Sons were given in charge and carried into Spain. But *Francis* fell from one Captivity into another, being quickly after return smitten with the Beauty of *Ann de Pisse* whom he afterwards honoured with the Title of Dutchess of *Esampes*. As soon as he was in France he highly complained both at home and abroad of the Injustice of the Treaty, which enraged the Emperor to a high degree; however he sent *Bourbon* to Rome and endeavoured to amuse the Pope; but when *Francis* understood by the Imperial Ambassador *Mouton* that his Master must have *Burgundy*, and would give of no Equivalent, he complied for fear the King of *England*, and the Princes of *Italy*, with whom he was now in Treaty, should agree with the Emperor. It was proclaimed the 28th of June at Concord between the King, Pope, *Venetians*, *Florentine*, *Sforza*; that they would procure the Liberty of the King's Children, restore *Naples* to the See of *Spain* and maintain *Sforza* in *Milan*, the King reserving to

Francis
set at Liberty.

nothing in *Italy* but *Genoa*. All seemed to favour the Confederates, *Milan* revolted, the *Spanish* Army in an ill State; but of all the Members of this League there were none but the *Venetians* that did in perform their Obligation, the Pope proceeded and ambiguously, *Sforza* was amused by the French, and the King giving himself up to Pleasure, his Army under the Marquis of *Saluzzes* did not enter *Italy* till *September*, neither did his Gallies join early to regain *Genoa*, and prevent *Bourbon's* Progress; And the *Venetian* General the Duke of *Urbino* out of some grudge to the House of *Medicis*, declined to give the Castle of *Milan*, so that *Sforza* at last was forced to surrender it to *Bourbon*, but reserved a small Revenue to himself, and the Liberty of going to the Emperor to make his own Justification. *Urbino* being still the same Man, retarded the Reduction of *Monza*, and made them lose the opportunity of taking *Milan* after he had been considerably reinforced as well as the taking of *Genoa*.

It pass over the Contests between Pope *Clement* and *Colonna's*, and the Progress of the *Turks* in *Syria*, to which the *Austrians* would have King *Francis* contributed; and observe that amidst the Distractions of the Emperor's Affairs concerning *Milan*, he offered the Confederates ten Months Truce; but they were trotting up and down about it.

too late, *Turin* soon surrendred, from whence the Duke had before retired to *Vercell*.

Now *Sforza* dying while the Emperor tarried in *Sicily*, and without leaving any Children behind him, and being under *Charles* his Power, he made use of it as a Lure to amuse *Francis* all his Life after; wherefore his Chancellor told *Vely* the French Ambassador, his Master would not dispose of that Dutchy, till he were satisfied how the King intended to demean himself in these Particulars, the first was in the War against the *Turks*, then in the Reduction of all Christian Princes to the Catholick Religion, and lastly in settling a firm Peace thro *Christendom*; to which he added, that the Emperor was desirous rather to bestow the Dutchy upon the King's third Son than the second, and required the second should accompany him to the Siege of *Algiers*. Hereupon the King demanded the Dutchy for his second Son *Henry* Duke of *Orleans*, and offered to give 400000 Crowns of Gold for the Investiture: But the Emperor gave little heed thereunto, made an Alliance with the *Venetians*, married his Bastard Daughter to *Alexander de Medicis*, confirmed now in the Government of *Florence*, made great Preparations both of Men and Money, and at *Rome* made great Complaints and Menaces against King *Francis*, would needs give an Assembly of Cardinals an account of all Transactions between them from the time of *Lewis XII.* accused him of having ever broken the Peace, and being a common Disturber; and lastly concluded that of three things the King must chuse one, either to take *Milan* for his third Son, upon condition *Savoy* was restored to its own Duke, or accept of a single Combat between them personally with what Arms the King pleased, upon condition the Conqueror should employ his Forces as the Pope pleased against the Hereticks and Infidels, or resolve upon a War, that should be so bloody as to ruin one of the two.

Francis answered all this in very modest terms; and divers Overtures were made that they might not come to a Rupture, wherefore the King commanded his General *Brion* to undertake nothing more in *Piedmont*, but to return into *Dauphine*, after he had provided and well garisoned the Places he had taken; while

The Empe-
ror's Com-
plaints
against
Francis.

opportunity to go and deliver the Pope, but he
 ng many Excuses and Pretences, the Pope on the
 of *June* surrendred himself to the Imperialists,
 remained a Prisoner for six whole Months; during
 h the *Venetians* his Allies seized upon *Ravenna*
Cervia with the Salt-Pits, *Malatesta* on *Rimini*,
 Duke of *Ferrara* on *Reggio* and *Modena*, and the
 of *Flbrence* almost brought under the Yoke
 he *Medicis*, threw it off, and returned to their
 lar State of Government.

ow the Disorders of the Soldiers and other causes
 ucing a Plague at *Rome*, they were like to carry
 Pope to *Cajeta*, and thence into *Spain*, which the
 eror most passionately desired. In the mean time
 Union between the Kings of *England* and *France*
 ing more strict, and the Emperor having refused
 render the Pope and the King's Children, they
 resolved to carry the War into *Italy* with all their
 es; wherefore having concerted their Measures
 dingly, *Francis* on the 17th of *September* having
 an Assembly of the most notable Persons of the
 Estates of the Kingdom, for their Advice touch-
 he Liberty of his Children, he offered to return
 isoner, if they thought he was obliged so to do,
 r than undertake any thing prejudicial to the State;
 which each of the three Orders separately, upon
 20th of that Month answered. That his Person

1527.

An Assem-
 bly of
 Notables.

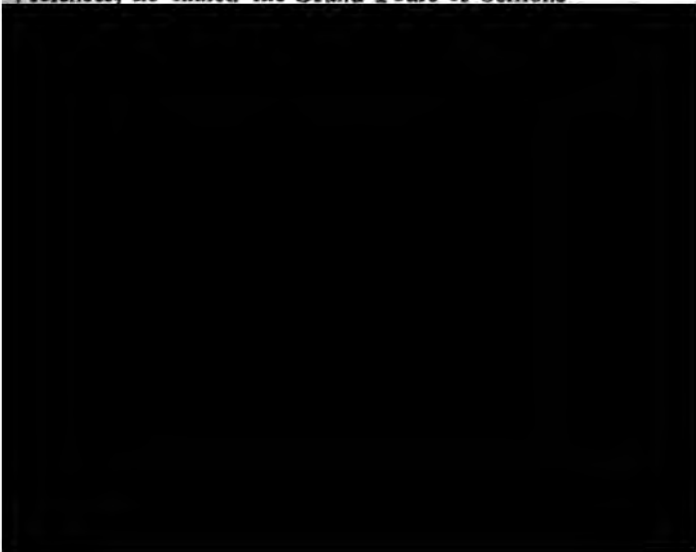
The Peace
of Cam-
bray.

Dugast had taken, but *St. Paul* was by *Leva* surpris'd at *Landriana*, and taken Prisoner. After which Defeat there was a kind of a tacit Truce between the Princes, and the minds of all of them seem'd to be for a Peace: About *June* it was first concluded between the Pope and Emperor, upon advantageous Terms to the former; and in *July* *Margaret* the Emperor's daughter, and *Lovisa* the King's Mother, meeting at *Cambray* in order to a Treaty, the same was concluded between the Ambassadors of the Pope, King of *England*, and the *Venetians*, and published on the 5th of *May*. The Articles were almost the same as those of *Madrid*, saving that *Francis* was to retain *Burgundy*, to which the Emperor reserv'd his Rights to be pursued by friendly Methods; that the Sentence of Condemnation against *Bourbon* should be revoked, and his Estate restored to his Heirs; and as for the King's Ransom he was to pay to the Emperor two Millions of Gold Crowns, i. e. 1200000 Crowns ready Money, upon the Releasement of his Children; 400000 to the King of *England*, as from him; and for the security of the rest should engage to him the Lands which *Mary of Luxemburg* formerly had in *Flanders*, *Brabant* and *Haynault*: Further, that he should redeem the *Flower de Luce*, which was a valuable Jewel that Duke *Philip* the Good had pawn'd to the King of *England*, whom he should likewise satisfy on the Emperor's behalf for the Sum of 500000 Crowns in Gold, which he had promised that King, in case he did not marry his Daughter. The *Venetians* and *Florentines* were also compris'd in the Treaty; King *Henry*, tho' the Treaty was concluded without his Knowledge, yet having need of the Interest of *Francis* for the vacating of his Marriage, he forgave him the 500000 Crowns, and gratified his Son *Henry* with the Redemption of the *Flower de Luce*.

And here not to enter upon the particulars of the great Sultan *Solyman's* Progress in *Hungary*, or the manner how the *Florentines* lost their Liberty to the House of *Medicis*; we are to acquaint you that *Francis* had much ado to make up the 1200000 Crowns promised by the Treaty of *Cambray*; but at last *Alms* and *mercancy* carried them to *Endaya* in *June* this Year.

received the two Princes in exchange, and the soon after married *Eleonora* the Emperor's Sister *King married.* *rin*; she was not handſom, and ſo never poſſeſſed Heart of her Husband, which wandered other s: However *Francis* during the Calms of Peace, Francis he Love of Ladies, joined that of Learning: *incourages Learning.* is XII. had cauſed him to be brought up in the lege of the *Varre*, and ſo got a great Guſto for the 1531. al Sciences, ſo that he kept near him the ableſt Men is Kingdom, who ſtudied to make handſom and bodical Diſcourſes to him upon all parts of Learn- and moſtly while he ſate at Dinner; which he oved ſo well, that he became as knowing as the teſt Maſters. In acknowledgment of thoſe ineſti- e Benefits, he preferred many of them; he alſo nted the Royal Profeſſors at *Paris* for the Sci- and Tongues; and further had a Deſign to build ollege, and ſettle a Fund of 50000 Crowns for Education and Maintenance of 600 Gentlemen; ot together a great number of antient Manu- ts: And in ſhort, he merited the glorious Sir- e of the Father or Patron, and Reſtorer of Learn-

ow the long and tedious Wars, and his Captivity, ag accuſtomed the Nobility to all ſorts of Crimes Violences, he cauſed the Grand Tours or Seſſions



On the other hand, the Emperor during the Peace, endeavoured to compose the Affairs of Empire, and going now to *Ratisbonne* he obtained Supply against the *Turks*, who were with a powerful Army ready to fall upon *Hungary*, and with by Sea upon *Italy*; wherefore he made use of occasion to require *Francis* to lend him Money of his *Gens d'Arms*: But to the first he answered *was no Banker, and for his Horse, they were the Strength of his Government, and that he would not do them no more than he would do his Sword, but fight at the head of them, that he might have his in the Honour or the Danger.* And therefore the King of *England* made a League to set 8000 on Foot against the common Enemy, and *Francis* particularly offered to defend *Italy*: Indeed there appeared very strict between *Francis* and *Henry*, who being desirous to confer together about Affairs, met at *St. Joquevert* in *October*, between *Logn* and *Calais*; they were both of them much satisfied with the Pope, and projected League and Designs against him: While the Pope and the Emperor had an Interview at *Bologna*, with the Demonstrations of Affection as at first, but with much different Sentiments; for they could not agree at last in any one particular, and parted ill satisfied with one another; and more especially the Emperor was concerned that the Pope was not so forward as he expected to excommunicate *Henry VIII.* for his going to divorce *Catharine* his Aunt. On the other hand, *Henry* made most importunate Instances to *Francis*, that he would interpose the Pope he might have Judges appointed on the part to examine into his Marriage: But in short, after canvassing this matter to and fro, *Henry's* impatience, or somewhat else, caused the Marriage to be proclaim'd null by his own Arch-bishop *Cromwell* at which the Pope and Emperor were highly concerned, and the same ended at last in the Pope communicating the King, and the Reformation of the Church in *England*; but of this enough.

This Year in *October* the Pope in his Gallies came to *Marseilles*, and was there magnificently entertained.

Henry
VIII. divorced.

1533.

Book I. *The Reign of Francis I.*

King *Francis*, who upon this occasion shewed his Magnificence to the Cardinals, and made the use even of his Mind and Eloquence to outshine the lustre of his Gifts. They parted on the 22^d of November much satisfied, only that the King had excluded from his Holiness four Cardinals Hats: But for as much as there was no new League made between them contrary to the expectation of all the World: And as for the business of the King of *England*, *Francis* could not prevail with the Pope to revoke the Excommunication; but his overhaught, humanly speaking, lost him *England*: For 'tis observable, if the Pope had deferred the Judgment but ten Months, Death would have disengaged him from those Intricacies by the death of *Catharine*, which hapned in *January* follow-

ing *Francis* his Constancy to the *Romish* Faith in now to be much staggered by two strong Temptations; the one was King *Henry* soliciting him to break with the Pope, in order to the preserving of the *Protestant* Unity that was between them; while his Sister *Margaret* on the other hand pressed him to call in *Philip* of *Spain*, and give him Audience concerning the business he had to propose for accommodating the differences about Religion; however his Answer to *Henry* was, *A Friend even to the Altar*: and for the other

1534.

drawn up in *Latin* but in *French*, a matter we are deficient in, in respect to some Proceedings of our Law, and wants to be reformed.

Ghentois
revolt.

1539.

Emperor's
Passage
thro, and
Reception
in France.

1540.

The Emperor still caressed the King, perhaps because he should not undertake the Protection of the *Ghentois*, who now revolted because of some Imposts laid upon them by Queen *Mary* of *Hungary* their Governors; but *Francis* was so far from accepting their Offers, notwithstanding his late great Formality in confiscating *Flanders* and *Artois*, that by an excess of Generosity he gave the Emperor notice of it: But the Rebellion for all this growing greater and greater, the Emperor desired leave to go thro *France* thither to suppress them; and the two Sons of *France* with the Constable *Montmorancy*, who opposed the Council in tying *Charles* to any previous Conditions, went as far as *Bayonne* to meet him, and offered to go into *Spain* as Hostages, which he refused: The King himself, tho indisposed, went as far as *Chastelrand*, where they embraced each other, and *Francis* caused him to be received in every City with the same Honour, and suffered to exercise the same Authority as himself, for he held the Chapter of his Order on *St. Andrews Day* at *Bourdeaux*, granted Pardons, and cleared the Prisons in many Places. He made his Entry into *Paris* on the first of *Jan.* when the Parliament went in a Body to complement him; the Sheriffs bore the Canopy of State over his Head, the two Sons of *France* being on either side of him, the Constable marched before with his Sword drawn: He released all Prisoners, and the City presented him with the Silver Statue of *Hercules* as big as the Life. At his Departure the King accompanied him to *St. Quintin*, and his two Sons to *Valenciennes*; and *Francis* not only promised to go and visit him in *Flanders*, but granted him a free Passage for a thousand of his *Italian* Forces to go for *Flanders*, and furnished them with Provisions.

The Emperor in some time having subdued the *Ghentois*, and taken severe Revenge upon them, required that *Francis* should restore the Duke of *Savoy* to all his Territories, to declare himself a Friend to his Friends, and an Enemy to his Enemies: Upon which the King finding himself deceived in his Expectations,

★

grew

instead *Friend* of the Duke, for which he
him *Lands in France*, and to complete the
of his Daughter *Margaret* with Prince
Savoy.

For the King at last concerned himself in it
at the Duke should do him Justice, about the
of his Mother *Louis*, who was this Duke
is Sister, as also the late *Philippe* his Prede-
or which and a free Passage for his Troops,
sident of the Parliament of *Paris*, was sent
but not receiving a satisfactory Answer, the
ared War against him in Feb. this Year: In
of which, the Admiral *Briau* entred his
with the Army that had been raised to fall French in-
lan, and at the very noise of his March all *1562* 24-
of the *Bres* and those of *Savoy* on this *101*.
at *Cenis*, opened their Gates to the French
pposition; the Duke was wholly unprovided
, so that he could do no more till the time
urn than only temporize, and in the mean
nd himself by Submissions and Respects:
e Emperor, he having foreseen the Clouds
ering from all Quarters against him by the
ng, King of *England*, Princes of *Italy* and
gave out he was going to make War a-
amous *Barbarossa*; and having actually lan-
ica with 50000 men, took *Goletra*, refect-
Affairs *Genoa* kept *Barbarossa* by Land

towards the Reformation, courted both the King and the Emperor divers ways. The Emperor on his part had another Game to play, which was to recover the good Will of the Protestant Princes, amuse the *Turk*, as also the *French King*, with making new Offers of the Low Countries, under the Title of the Kingdom of *Belgica* to *Charles Duke of Orleans*, but *Francis* believed nothing of it.

1541.

But here a new Cause of Rupture was offered between the King and *Charles*, which was, the Murder of his two Ambassadors, *Fregosa* and *Rincon*, by the *Spaniards*. The first was going to *Constantinople*, to preserve Amity with *Solyman*; the other to *Venice*, to endeavour to unlink that Republick from the Emperor's Interest, and enter into a League with *France*. The Fact was perpetrated, as they were going down the *Po* in a Bark, by the contrivance of *Du Guast*; and *Langey* Governour of *Piedmont* being informed of it, the King had quickly an Account thereof, who demanded Reparation of the Emperor, but was chiefly answered by Recriminations. Farther, it having been well known the *Spaniards* had murdered many other of the King's Subjects and Messengers in divers Places, the King resolved to declare War against the Emperor, if he did not give him satisfaction within a limited time, tho whilst he was yet on his Voyage to *Algiers*, he had so much Generosity as to undertake nothing against him; but next year he sent him a Defiance in outrageous Terms, with bloody Reproaches, having before-hand commanded publick Prayers and a general Procession to be made to appease the Displeasure of God, and implore his Assistance.

French
Armies set
on foot a-
gainst the
Emperor.


1542.

After the Death of *Rincon*, *Iscafin* Baron de la *Garde* was sent to sollicite *Solyman* against the Emperor, as also the Republick of *Venice*; while *Francis*, in pursuance of his Declaration of War, set five Armies on foot; one about *Luxemburgh*, commanded by *Orleans* his second Son, under the Conduct of the Duke of *Guise*; another at *Perpignan* by the Dauphin, with *Armebaut* and others for his Council; the third was to be sent under *Longueval* and *Morin* into *Brabant*; a fourth under the Duke of *Vendosme* to scour the Frontiers of *Flanders*; and the fifth was to be in *Piedmont*, under

the Places belonging to the Duke of *Savoy*, that not possess'd by the *French*; so that the unfortunate Prince had nothing left him but the City and : of *Nice*, where he made his Residence.

the Fear they had conceived in *Italy* lest the Em- should conquer *France*, made several petty Prin- der the Count of *Rangon* their General, private- confederate against him; and having set 1000 men t, tho they failed in their attempt upon *Genoa*, hen the *Spaniards* rais'd the Siege of *Turin*, they *Carignan*, *Racenis*, *Carmagnole*, and most of the aifate of *Saluzzes*. On the other hand, the Count *Paul*, with 6000 *German Foot* drawn out of King & his Army, ruined the Country of *Tarentaise*, recovered *Chamberry*, which the Inhabitants of Valley had surprized; but *Bury*, whom the King made Governor beyond the Mountains instead of , was hemmed in with 1200 men by the Marquess ast, in *Casal* which he had surprized; *Humieres* nt to command in his room, with a Reinforce- of 10000 *German Foot*, of whom *Christopher* of *Wirtemburgh* was General.

hen the News of the Emperor's going to swallow *France*, came to *James King of Scotland*, he g to mind the antient Alliances between the two ns, after he was put back three several times, 6000 men at last arriv'd at *Dien* from whence



on him to set forth, that the Provinces belonging to the Crown were unalienable; that they could not give away the Sovereignty of *Flanders* and *Artois*; and that *Charles of Austria* (as they called him) being still a Vassal for those Countries and the County of *Charolois*, had committed Felony; therefore it was enacted, he should be summoned by a single peremptory Edict, at the nearest Place of safe access, to answer the Advocate General upon his Conclusions of the Forfeit, Reversion and Re-union of those three Countries; and in the mean time, the King declared all the Vassals in those Countries acquitted and discharged of their Oaths to him, from all Faith and Homage, and enjoined them to serve the King upon the Penalty of the Forfeiture of their Fiefs, and to be proclaimed Rebels, whereof Publication was to be made upon the Frontiers. *Charles* hereupon fuming with Rage, declared that since they recalled him into *France*, he would return with such powerful Justifications, as would make the Treaties of *Madrid* and *Cambray* to be duly observed, and in the mean time his Troops ranfacked the Frontiers of *Picardy*.

Francis his Attempt did not answer this grand Decree of his Parliament; he took only *Hesdin* and *St. Paul*, into which last they put 3000 men in Garrison; but as soon as the King was gone, the Imperialists took *Monstreucille* upon Articles. During the Siege of *Therouane*, a Conference was held at *Bormy*, at the Solicitations of *Eleonora of France* and *Mary of Hungary*, where a Cessation was agreed for three Months in the *Low Countries*, in order to a Peace: Some thought the King accepted of it with a Design to carry his Forces into *Italy*, in concert with *Solyman* and *Barbarossa*; but failing therein, *Solyman* returned angrily home: But the King being informed that his Affairs went very ill in *Piedmont*, that *Humieres* was besieged by *Dugast* in *Pignerol*, and the *French* like to be driven out of that Country, he resolved to prevent it, and in some measure to satisfy *Solyman* to go thither in Person; but falling sick at *Lyons*, the Dauphin and *Montmorancy* bravely forced the Pass at *Susa*, drove *Dugast* to *Quiers*, and gained several advantages which made the King hasten thither, in hopes of recovering the *Milanese*;

Truces
made.

Ge; his Army was above 40000 strong, yet did no memorable, so that they now agreed to a Truce those Countries beyond the Mountains, and proposed that with the *Low Countries* for the like time, which the unfortunate Duke of *Savoy* was still kept of his Dominions.

The King upon his return, made *Montmorancy* stable of *France*, and *Annebaut* and *Montejan* marshals; and there was a second Conference set on at *Locate* to treat of a final Peace: However they agreed to nothing but the Prolongation of the Truce for six Months; but the Pope fearing the War between these two Princes might obstruct the League which he, the Emperor and *Venetians* had concluded against the *Turks*, solicited them so earnestly, that both were resolved to meet at *Nice*, and accept of his Mediation: The Pope would have lodged in the Castle, *Francis* advised the Duke of *Savoy* underhand against it, at which and his Visit to the King, the Emperor took some umbrage; however the Pope being content to lodge in the Town, the Conference went on, the Princes saw not one another, from some Jealousy or other, and all that could be agreed on, was the Prolongation of the Truce for nine Years: But the Emperor promised to see the King at *Aigues-Mortes* in *August* before he returned into *Spain*, as he actually went and dined in his House the King doing

1538.

*Nine Years
Truce agreed at
Nice*

drawn up in *Latin* but in *French*, a matter we are sufficient in, in respect to some Proceedings of our and wants to be reformed.

Ghentois
revolt.

1539.

Emperor's
Passage
thro, and
Reception
in France.

1540.

The Emperor still caressed the King, perhaps cause he should not undertake the Protection of *Ghentois*, who now revolted because of some Letters laid upon them by Queen *Mary* of *Hungary* the vernal; but *Francis* was so far from accepting Offers, notwithstanding his late great Formations, confiscating *Flanders* and *Artois*, that by an extraordinary Generosity he gave the Emperor notice of it: But Rebellion for all this growing greater and greater, the Emperor desired leave to go thro *France* that suppress them; and the two Sons of *France* with the Constable *Montmorancy*, who opposed the Counting *Charles* to any previous Conditions, went as *Bayonne* to meet him, and offered to go into as Hostages, which he refused: The King himself indisposed, went as far as *Chastelnaud*, where embraced each other, and *Francis* caused him received in every City with the same Honour suffered to exercise the same Authority as himself he held the Chapter of his Order on *St. Andrew* at *Bordeaux*, granted Pardons, and cleared the fons in many Places. He made his Entry into *Paris* the first of *Jan.* when the Parliament went in body to complement him; the Sheriffs bore the ppy of State over his Head, the two Sons of being on either side of him, the Constable in before with his Sword drawn: He released all prisoners, and the City presented him with the Silver tue of *Hercules* as big as the Life. At his Depart King accompanied him to *St. Quintin*, and his Sons to *Valenciennes*; and *Francis* not only prom go and visit him in *Flanders*, but granted him Passage for a thousand of his *Italian* Forces to *Flanders*, and furnished them with Provisions.

The Emperor in some time having subdued *Ghentois*, and taken severe Revenge upon them, red that *Francis* should restore the Duke of *Savoy* all his Territories, to declare himself a Friend Friends, and an Enemy to his Enemies: Upon the King finding himself deceived in his Expect

1. 1. *The Reign of Francis I.*

suspicious of those about him; and there being Men only that had engrossed his Favour, viz. Constable, Cardinal of *Lonain*, and *Brion* the Ad-
; and this last by the means more particularly of *gradet*, and
ntchefs of *Eftampes*, having got the start of the *dies*.
two, they contrived to ruin him, got him impri-
at *Bois de Vincennes*, tried at *Melan*, and tho
ad very little against them, yet by the means of
hancellor *Poyet*, who managed the Trial; they
ndivested of his Offices, declared unworthy of
g any for the future, condemned to pay a Fine
100 Crowns, and shut up in the *Bastile*; however
Months after by the means of his Kinswoman
pes he had a review of the Cause, and was clear-
the Fine in 1542. but being a Man of a haughty
, the Affront stuck so close to him, that he died
icf the Year after.

e Chancellor not long after had his turn, and was
ced and ruined; so that he died at last in *Paris*,
ft with Poverty, Ignominy and old Age; hav-
ten succeeded in his Office by *Montolen*, Prefi-
in Parliament, a Man of rare Probity, a Virtue
itary in his Family. Neither did the Favour of
onstable last long after the loss of *Poyet*, the King
lding him the Court in 1542. and would never re-
in as long as he lived: Common Fame attributed
ause of his Removal to the Counsel he gave for

*Chancellor
and Constable
disgraced.*

towards the Reformation, courted both the King and the Emperor divers ways. The Emperor on his part had another Game to play, which was to receive the good Will of the Protestant Princes, and to make use of the French King, with making use of the Low Countries, under the Title of the Duke of *Belgica* to *Charles* Duke of *Orleans*, but believed nothing of it.

1541.

But here a new Cause of Rupture was offered between the King and *Charles*, which was, the Murder of his two Ambassadors, *Fregosa* and *Rincon*, by the *Spaniards*. The first was going to *Constantinople* to preserve Amity with *Solyman*; the other to *Venice* to endeavour to unlink that Republick from the Emperor's Interest, and enter into a League with *France*. The Fact was perpetrated, as they were going down the *Po* in a Bark, by the contrivance of *Du Guesne*, *Largey* Governour of *Piedmont* being informed thereof, the King had quickly an Account thereof, and demanded Reparation of the Emperor, but was answered by Recriminations. Farther, it being well known the *Spaniards* had murdered many of the King's Subjects and Messengers in divers Places, the King resolved to declare War against the Emperor; he did not give him satisfaction within a Month, tho' whilst he was yet on his Voyage to *Algiers*, he showed so much Generosity as to undertake nothing against him, but next year he sent him a Defiance in other Terms, with bloody Reproaches, having before commanded publick Prayers and a general Fast to be made to appease the Displeasure of God, and implore his Assistance.

French
Armies set
on foot a-
gainst the
Emperor.

1542.

After the Death of *Rincon*, *Isclain Bascou* was sent to sollicite *Solyman* against the Emperor, as also the Republick of *Venice*; while *Francis* gave audience of his Declaration of War, set five Armies on foot; one about *Luxemburgh*, commanded by his second Son, under the Conduct of the Duke of *Guise*; another at *Perpignan* by the Duke of *Angoulême* and others for his Council; the third to be sent under *Longueval* and *Morin* into *Brabant*; the fourth under the Duke of *Vendosme* to scour the frontiers of *Flanders*; and the fifth was to be in *Piedmont*.

r the Marechal de *Annebaut*, which having been there idle above two months, was ordered to join Dauphin in *Rouffillon*, which made them 45000 g. They had represented to the King the taking French *Perpignan* to be a very easy thing ; but the Emperor *attack* provided it so well, that it made a very good De- *Perpignan* ; and Discords in the mean time arising amongst *in vain*. Commanders, with a Flux in the Army, besides great Rains that fell, they were ordered to de-

it *Orleans* had better Success than his Brother, sig- nalized his first Campaign by the taking of *Milliers*, *Ivoy*, *Arlon*, *Montmedy*, and *Luxembourg* f: But, as if he had been gluttred with his good ne, he left the Army in *September*, and went to upon his Father at *Montpellier*, which gave the ny an opportunity to recover *Luxemburg* and *medy*, tho the Duke of *Guise* afterwards won last Place again from them.

ow the Inhabitants of *Rochel*, *Marennnes* and the *A Revolt* ds, having revolted upon the Government's *of the Ro-* avouring to settle the Gabel in those Parts, the *chellers*. ; went thither to suppress the Commotion, and *1543*. *Rochel* caused a great many of the Seditious to be ight in Chains before him, with a Design to put to Death ; but his Heart relented at the humble nest made to him by their Advocate, and their

The Success of the French in the Netherlands.

the Duke of *Gueldres* held the Emperor in prison for some Weeks about the Country of *Landrecy*; at last fixed upon the fortifying of *Landrecy*; had given the necessary Orders for it, he went from thence reposed himself at *Mardes*, and had caused the Ladies to *Rheims*, whither he had diverted him. In the mean time the Dauphin led part of the Army in taking the Castle of *Mauberge*, while *Orleans* entered *Luxembour* took the capital City of the Dutchy, which he ordered to be fortified.

On the other hand, the Emperor having pursued the way of *Italy* into *Germany*, first attacked the Duke of *Cleve* and took *Duren*, and so frightened the Prince that he submitted, and promised to renew his Alliance with the *French*, and Title of *Duke of Gueldres*: But *Solyman* to make his Promise good, besides his falling by Land upon *H* sent his Fleet under *Barbarossa* to the Coast of *Genoa*, where he was joined by the Count of *T* with 22 Gallies, and both of them conjointly laid Siege to *Nice*; the Town they quickly possessed themselves of, but the Castle making an obstinate Defence, and *Barb.rossa* not caring to stay for the *Doria*, retired to the Coast of *Provence* and wintered, not without committing many barbarities upon the very *French* themselves, whom he blamed for their Negligence and want of Care, but in the Approach of Spring he sailed away; and Englobing back his Land-Forces to this side the Duke of *Savoy* and *Du Gualt* employed their to take *Montdevis* and fortify *Carignan*; the which they took, and put the *Swiss* Garrison the Sword: Hereupon *Engbrien* was sent by the Emperor to command his Army on that side, instead of *Montdevis* who was recalled; and being just upon taking *Montdevis* and unwilling another should reap the fruit of his Conquest, he went to meet *Engbrien* with his whole Army, chusing rather, if we may so say, to let the Prey escape, than that another should have the Quarry.

The Emperor on the other hand, after he had brought the Duke of *Cleve* to submit, laid

La

Landrecy; and finding Force did not well prevail, *Francis*
 thought to have gained it by Famine: Indeed they *relieves*
 suffered much in a Siege of two Months, when the *Landrecy*.
 putting himself at the head of his Army, ap-
 peared within two Leagues of the Besiegers: The
 Emperor believing he would give him Battel, drew his
 forces from the further side of the *Sambre* to join
 with those on this side, which giving *Francis* an
 opportunity to put Relief into the Town, he retreat-
 ed very securely in the Night, and put his Army into
 Frontier Garisons, while the Emperor also in four
 five days after marched off also, but by Intelli- *Emperor*
 gence seized upon *Cambray*, and built a Citadel erected *takes Cam-*
 on the Burghers own Charge to bridle them. *bray.*

will pass over the Earl of *Furstemburg's* failing to
Luxemburg from the *French*, and the severe Frost
 happened this Year, which froze the very Wines
 in their Casks, so that they were fain to cut it with
 axes, and the Lumps were sold by the pound; and
 he sent the Country to *Piedmont*, where the brave
Henri having taken all the Posts about *Carignan*,
 began his Blockade on the 1st of *February*, while
Gustav on his part thought to have seized on *Car-*
negone to put in Supplies; but the Count getting
 notice of her before him, left him no possibility of saving
 Place, but by hazarding a Battel; so that they

Francis his
Death.

and to allow him in particular the Religion, and promised to send 100000 Father, and as much to the Landgraves such time as he could assist them with him in the *Interim* his Concern for the Death increasing his inveterate Distemper, lingring Fever that was upon him in one, of which he died at the Castle of the last of *March*, and made an End was Generous and Christian Prince. He recommended to his Son to diminish the Taxes had too much raised, not to recal *M* continue *De Tournon*, to whom he bequeathed Crowns, and *Annebaut* in the Administration him, That Children ought to imitate their Fathers, that the *French* being t

ous in War, the Father and Restorer of good
ure and the Liberal Arts.

was a Prince that hardly had his Equal in Libe-^{His Cha-}
Magnificence and Clemency ; and if he had ^{rafter.}
d such great Co-temporaries as *Charles, Solyma-*
lenry, none could have compared with him in
; Eloquence and useful Learning. He would
have been a great Prince in all things, had he
sometimes suffered himself to be prepossessed by the
ounsels of his Ministers, and a Passion towards
n. These, to fix their own Power, set up his
ity above the antient Laws of the Government,
o an Irregularity therein : The Women he
being vain and prodigal, changed his noble
of Fame to Fastuosity and Vanity, and made
en throw away that Money in idle Expences,
he had designed for some great Enterprize.
ft ten Years of his Life, the Anxiety of his
per made him a good Husband : For notwith-
g his Buildings and various Liberalities, at
th he left all his own Demesnes free from Incum-
; 400000 Crowns of Gold in his Coffers, and
er of a Years Revenue ready to be paid in. His
was a Salamander in the Fire, with this Motto,
o & *Extinguo*. And I may also note here, that
ted into Dutchies and Peerages, the County of

Peace be-
ween the
English &
French.

1550.

lish thought fit to enter into a Treaty of Peace with *France*, which was concluded on the 24th of *March* this Year; whereby they promised to give up *Bologna* upon the payment of 400000 Crowns in Gold, viz. one half in hand, and the other six Months after: *Scotland* was comprehended in this Treaty. And now the House of *Guise* began to grow mightily; of whom *Francis* Duke of *Anjou* had upon his Father's Decease assumed his Title, and his Brother *Charles*, called the Cardinal of *Guise*, became very great, not so much by his Merit, tho he had a great deal, as by his Complaisance to the King's Mistress; and his Interest prevailed so far, that he got the President of the Parliament of *Paris* turned out, not long after which *Diana* caused the Seals to be taken from the Chancellor *Olivier*, and given to *Bertrandi*.

1551.

The Abuses of the Banquiers and Datary of the Court of *Rome*, about the Resignation of Benefices, were come to that pass at this time, that all the *French* Clergy complained of it, and the King redressed it by an Edict: About which, and more especially the Duchy of *Parma*, he was at ill terms with the Pope; so that *Henry* judging it to be the highest piece of Folly to furnish the Enemy with that wherewith he might make a War, forbade all his Subjects upon severe Penalties, to carry either Gold or Silver to *Rome*, or any other Place under the Pope's Obedience; but at the same time he made a most grievous Edict on the 25th of *June*, for the discovering and punishing the Religionaries in his Kingdom, who observed from that very time, as they have in a manner experimented ever since upon the like occasions, that no time could be so bad to them, as when the *French* Court was imbroiled with that of *Rome*. A little before this the Pope sent his Nephew *Coma* to dissuade the King from protecting *Parma* and *Miranda*; but being able to effect nothing, *Gonsague* besieged *Parma*, and *De Monte* the Pope's Nephew *Miranda*, and so a War begun between the King and the Pope: The Enemy being strongest, the King's Forces durst not attack them; but they made such a terrible Havock about *Bologna*, that the Pope sent to his Army to hasten to his Subjects Assistance, and so the Siege was raised.

Henry at
War with
the Pope.

In

had failed of his Word in part, yet being still desirous to keep in with *France*, he would needs without being required, have the King comprehended therein, as if he had been absolutely a Party concerned: And here is observable, that in the Writings or Instruments of this Truce, *Solyman* styles *Charles V.* barely King of *Spain* and no more; whereas *Henry* was entituled King of *France*, the most Serene Emperor of *France*, his most dear Friend and Ally.

But to leave this Treaty, we are here to take notice, that before King *Henry* was crowned he had the News of the Emperor's having vanquished the Protestant Princes of the League of *Smalcalde*, and taken the Duke of *Saxony*, the chief Commander, and others Prisoners. By which Blow all *Germany* seeming to have been subjugated, the *French* were mightily concerned at it, and so were the Pope (who had ground of other Quarrels with the Emperor) and Republick of *Venice*; so that the King and the Pope were for entering into a defensive League, for fear the Emperor should fall upon them: And *Henry* with much eagerness endeavoured to preserve the Alliance of the *Turks*, and to break the Truce between *Charles* and *Solyman*, that the latter might renew the War in *Hungary*: In which case the *French* Ambassadors assured, that their King would not fail to do him the Office of

New Methods of
raising
Money.

Presideaux, and to erect the *Chambre de Monoyes* to a Sovereign Court : He also got Silver Plate of all such as lent him any, to convert it into Testons ; and levied a Tax of twenty Livres upon every Steeple, Jewels and Church-Fabricks, not excepting even the Mendicants ; the Dutcheſs of *Valentinois* was ſaid to have a good ſhare of this Collection.

Henry ſei-
zes Lorain.
1552.

At the ſame time the King and Confederate Princes made both their Manifeſto's and Arms to appear together ; and *Maurice* was like to have oppreſt and taken the Emperor himſelf at *Inſpruck*, while the King on his ſide being about to take the Field, left the Regency in the Queen ; and the firſt thing he did was to ſeize upon *Lorain*, and the young Duke *Charles* whom he bred up in *France*, and gave the Government of the Country to the Count of *Vaudemont* ; then he took *Metz*, *Toul* and *Verdun* by ſurprize, which Cities have ever ſince been under the French. The King's Deſign was alſo to have ſeized *Aſſatia*, but *Strasburg* was upon its Guard, and ſent him ſome Proviſions : But *Haguenau* and *Viſburg* opened their Gates to him. In the mean while *Maurice* having reſtored almoſt all the Cities and Princes to their Liberties, and fearing if he did not accept of terms, his Father-in-law's Head muſt pay for it ; he made a Peace with the Emperor, without the Intervention of King *Henry*, to whom he ſent an Envoy to excuſe it ; and at the ſame time the Electors of *Mentz*, and *Triers* with ſome other German Princes finding the King penetrate ſo far, they ſent to intreat him, that ſince he had no other Deſign but to be the Protector of the German Liberty, and that they had recovered it, not to advance any farther. He was a little ſurprized at the Complement, but diſſembling his Diſpleaſure, answered, *he was very well content, ſince they were ſo ;* wherefore at the ſame time, that he might not diſoblige them, and having alſo Information that *Mary* Queen of *Hungary* Governess of the *Low-Countries*, had ravaged the Frontiers of *Champagne*, he marched into *Luxembourg*, took *Rochemars*, *Damvilliers*, *Troy* and *Montmedy*, as the Mareſchal de la *Mark* did the Caſtle of *Bouillon*, which the Emperor had taken from his Grandfather one and thirty Years before. This

done,

cess to be formed against the whole City by the Master of the Requests, who by a Sentence on the 26th of Oct. declared it guilty of Rebellion, and so all their Privileges to be forfeited; he condemned them to maintain two Gallies for the Governor, to furnish the two Castles with Ammunition, and to pay a Fine of 200000 Livres: Besides he took away their Bells, suspended the Parliament, which continued so for a whole Year, ordered their Town-hall to be rased, and a Chappel built on the same Place where they should pray for the Soul of *Moneins*; That the Jurats with an hundred of the most eminent Citizens should dig up his Corps with their Nails, and carry him each with a Flambeau in his Hand to St. *Andrew's* Church, and stopping before the Constable's Door, cry out for Mercy: Besides all which there were above 100 of the most noted of them put to Death; so that this great Severity alienated the Affections of the People from him, and the *Lorain* Branch began to reign in their Hearts: However some time after the King, more benign and easy, moderated the Rigour of the Sentence in many particulars, and his Son *Charles IX.* conferred more ample Privileges upon them.

The remainder of the Year was mostly spent in Rejoicings and Divertisements; and the King upon his being crowned at *St. Dennis*, added Tiltings, running on the Ring, Balls, great Entertainments and all

*Bourde-
aux severe-
ly punished.*

1550. *He be-
ren the
GLISH &
ench.* *list* thought fit to enter into a Treaty of Peace with *France*, which was concluded on the 24th of *March* this Year; whereby they promised to give up *Bologna* upon the payment of 400000 Crowns in Gold, viz. one half in hand, and the other six Months after: *Scotland* was comprehended in this Treaty. And now the House of *Guise* began to grow mightily; of whom *Francis Duke of Anjou* had upon his Father's Decease assumed his Title, and his Brother *Charles*, called the Cardinal of *Guise*, became very great, not so much by his Merit, tho he had a great deal, as by his Complaisance to the King's Mistress; and his Interest prevailed so far, that he got the President of the Parliament of *Paris* turned out, not long after which *Dianot* caused the Seals to be taken from the Chancellor *Olivier*, and given to *Bertrandi*.

1551.

The Abuses of the *Banquiers* and *Datary* of Court of *Rome*, about the Resignation of *Benefices* were come to that pass at this time, that all the *French* Clergy complained of it, and the King redressed it by an Edict: About which, and more especially the City of *Parma*, he was at ill terms with the Pope: that *Henry* judging it to be the highest piece of *War* to furnish the Enemy with that wherewith he might make a War, forbade all his Subjects upon Penalties, to carry either Gold or Silver to *Rome*, or any other Place under the Pope's Obedience; but at the same time he made a most grievous Edict on the 25th of *June*, for the discovering and punishing *Religionaries* in his Kingdom, who observed from very time, as they have in a manner experimented since upon the like occasions, that no time could be so bad to them, as when the *French* Court was imbedded with that of *Rome*. A little before this the King sent his Nephew *Coma* to dissuade the King from retaking *Parma* and *Miranda*; but being able to effect nothing, *Gonsague* besieged *Parma*, and *De Monte* the King's Nephew *Miranda*, and so a War begun between the King and the Pope: The Enemy being strongest, the *French* Forces durst not attack them; but they made such a terrible Havock about *Bologna*, that the Pope sent to *Henry* to hasten to his Subjects Assistance, and so the *War* was raised.

Henry at
War with
the Pope.

the mean time *Aramon* the King's Ambassador, *At War with the Emperor.*
disposed *Solyman* to a Rupture with the Empe-
the *Turkish* Fleet put to Sea in the *Mediterranean*,
the King's Navy of forty Gallies under the Prior of
Nice and *Villa Franca*; but not agreeing among
selves, he was reinforced and got off: By this
the King finding the Emperor sufficiently embar-
d on all Hands, resolved on a War against him,
sent *Brissac* his Governor of *Piedmont* to begin the
ture on that side, while the Duke of *Nevers* should
e like in *Champagne*, and the Duke of *Vendosme*
enter *Artois* and *Hainault*. The Season was
vanced, so that the two last could do no more
commit some Ravages, and take a few small Forts.
Brissac took *Quiers* and *St. Damian*; at the noise
Rich Gonsague who had besieged *Parma* again,
but yet durst not fight *Brissac*; while at Sea,
the General of the *French* Gallies, took divers
from the Enemy.

on the *German* side, there was something else
ving of much more Importance: We have told
efore of the Emperor's defeating the Protestants;
which time forward the Landgrave of *Hess* by a
Zavil was detained Prisoner, while *Maurice* his
a-law, now the Emperor's General, was engaged
reducing of the other Protestants: but King

The Battel
of Renty.

slighting and spiteful Words, and I know not what kind of Songs had been made on either side : But Henry had ravaged *Brabant*, *Haynault*, the Count of *Cambray* and *Namur*, he entred into *Artois*, laid Siege to the Castle of *Renty*. The Emperor upon resolving to relieve it, would fain have seized on a Wood, the Situation whereof must have been of great advantage to him ; upon this followed a bloody Engagement, which was the 13th of *Aug.* where the Duke of *Guise* signalized himself very much ; the Emperor seeming to have the worst of it, sounded Retreat, leaving some Cannon and about 2000 slain in the Field : However the King for want of provisions raised the Siege, returned home, and left the Army with the Duke of *Vendosme* to cover Frontiers, but he could not hinder them from ravaging the Country as far as *St. Riquier*, from whence they went up along the *Autie*, and pretending to have an eye upon *Monstreuil*, fortified the Village of *Mesnil* on the *Canche*.

The War
of Sienna.

The same Night the Battel of *Renty* was fought, came News to the Camp of the Battel of *Mercen* in the Country of *Sienna*, which allayed the Emperor's Sorrow, and the Joy of the *French* ; but before we speak of this Event, we must observe somewhat was previous to it. At first the Duke of *Florence* was of mind *Sienna* should be a free State, the Pope would have it to be under the Power of the Emperor for some particular Interests : *Garcias de Toledo* commanded the Imperial Army now in *Tuscany*, and that of *France* : The Imperialists got most of the Cities, as well along the Seashoar as the Valley of *Ch...* But they met with nothing but Blows at *Monta...* but having notice the *Turkish* Fleet was at Sea, that *Brissac* had gained great Advantages in *Pied...* *Garcias* was obliged to send back the best part of his Forces into *Naples* and the *Milanese* : These Affairs, and *Dragut's* descent upon the Isle of *Elbe* had no great Success, with his retiring, as also *Terme...* the greatest part of the *French* Commanders, to *ca*, which last imagined there was no farther Distance in *Sienna*, hapned in 1553. but this Year the King sent *Peter Strozzi* to command the Army instead of

he put his Troops into Garison on the Frontiers-
ardy: But before he had left *Germany*, he had
ence that his Agents had made a Truce for two
with the Pope, which confirmed the possession
ma to the House of *Farnese*.

Emperor was so much concerned for the loss of *Emperor*
Toul and *Verdun*, that without considering the *besieges*
was so far spent, he laid Siege to *Metz*, with *Metz in*
o Men; and at the same time the Count of *Reux* *vain*
g *Picardy*, after he had burnt *Noyon*, *Roye*,
Chauny, and the Royal House of *Folembray*, he
ed and took *Hesdin* by Storm, tho it was reco-
the same Year by the Duke of *Vendosme*. How-
ie *Parisians* were so terrified lest *Reux* should
ear, that the King ordered their City to be
ed on that side, but at their own Charge. In the
ime *Metz*, tho ill fortified, was gallantly defen-
y the Duke of *Guise*; who did in short thereby
e a never dying Fame, insomuch that tho the Mar-
of *Brandenburgh* now openly declared for the
or, after he had surprized the Duke of *Aumale*,
ch were the Severities of Winter, so great were
tignes of the Imperialists, and so much Valour
newed by the Besieged, that the Emperor at last
first of *Jan.* after the loss of 30000 Men, drew
nd retired to *Thionville*, while the *French* to do
Justice instead of knocking his Soldiers on the

turns in their respective six Months: However necessity extorted from the Ministers for the People of *Guyenne* what Compassion could never obtain: For observing there was great Danger, and yet greater Expence in settling the Gabel in that Province; they took it off, and forced the People to pay 1200000 Crowns to exempt themselves from that Grievance.

1555.

Brissac was not idle all this while in *Piedmont*, he failed indeed to take *Valseniere*, they would not let him out of envy put his grand Project of attacking *Sienna* in execution; however he took *Verceil* and *Tvree*, and by Intelligence surprised *Casal*: After which the *Mareschal* attacked the Citadel, and in a few days forced it to capitulate. In the mean time the *English* mediated a Peace between the Princes, without Success; but neither Party being well prepared for War, the Summer passed on this side without any great Exploits; but beyond the *Alps* the Imperialists took *Porto Hercole*, while the *French* succeeded ill at the Siege of *Calvi* in *Corfica*: The *Mareschal* of *Brissac* took *Ulpian*, and tho but little assisted by the Court, bravely made Head against the Duke of *Alva*, who had 25000 Men under him, with which however he could not take *St. Ja.*

The Death
of the King
of Navarre
and Queen
Jane of
Spain.

Henry d' Albret dying on the 25th of *May*, the King had a Desire to seize the remainder of that petty Kingdom, and to give *Anthony d' Bourbon*, who had married the Heiress, some Lands in Exchange; but *Anthony* hastned to take possession, at which the King gave divers Instances of his Displeasure. To this we are to add the Death of another Illustrious Person, who was Queen *Jane*, the Widow of *Philip* the Fair, and Mother of the Emperor *Charles V.* aged 73 Years: She had been kept up as one distracted ever since the Death of her Husband, tho they still reserved to her the Title of Queen of *Spain*, which in all publick Instruments was joined with that of the Emperor her Son, who now being grown crazy in Body, and wearied with the Toils of Empire, resigned his Hereditary Dominions to his Son *Philip*, and a Year after the Empire to his Brother *Ferdinand*.

Charles re-
signs his
Dominions.

This Year having also proved fatal to *Julius III.* he was succeeded in the Papal Chair by *Peter Caraffa*, who

but, they brought it to capitulate; but as soon as the French General was gone, *Doria* recovered those Places before Winter, except *Boniface* and or three more.

will not enter upon any particulars here of the and Death of *Edward VI.* King of *England*; only to observe, that after his Sister *Mary* had weathered the point against the Lady *Jane Grey*, and was on the Throne, she was married to *Philip* Prince of *Spain* the Emperor's Son, which could not be a bad Match to the *French*; however all this Year, the Month of *June*, there had been a kind of tacit truce of Arms between the King and the Emperor, during which Cardinal *Pool* undertook to mediate Peace. The Emperor indeed would willingly have accepted of a Truce, since that would have been very advantageous to the *Low-Countries*, which they would have time to settle, and as it were solder themselves with *England*, but for the same reasons it was not so for *Henry*; and further, neither would his Honour nor Interest allow him to suffer the *Siennois* to be excluded, as the Emperor absolutely required: As he had Information, the Emperor was much exposed both in Body and Mind; wherefore he took resolution to carry on the War, and having raised an Army of 50000 Men, he divided them into three

Truce con-
cluded.

1556.

precaution to secure himself : And in the mean time the Duke of *Alva* being informed of this Treaty, after he had secured the *Milanese* and *Piedmont*, went for *Naples*, while King *Henry* was again engaging the *Turks* on his side. Now tho this League was concluded before the end of 1555, it did not hinder the Mediation of *Mary* Queen of *England*, to effect a Truce between the Emperor and King for five Years, and the same was signed in *February* this Year; the Emperor contributing very much to it, as being very well satisfied this Calm would consolidate the new begun Reign of his Son. When the Cardinal of *Caraffa* heard of it, he made great Complaints to *Henry*, and insisted he would at least put those Places he had left in *Sienna* into the Pope's Hands for security ; the King was for some time irresolute upon the matter, but at last *Valentinois* and others siding with the Cardinal, they hurried him to the Precipice, and made him resolve to declare War against the *Spaniards* : But first it was thought fit to send to the Emperor and King *Philip*, to require them to re-cal the Duke of *Alva* and his Forces out of the Ecclesiastical State, where they had already taken *Offia* and divers other Places. In the mean time, whilst the Army for *Italy* was making ready, *Strozzi* was ordered to assist the Pope, to whom they sent 3000 Men under the Command of *Montluc*, who made *Alva* retire out of the Neighbourhood of *Rome*.

1557.

French un-
successful
in Italy.

Moreover, all things being ready, the Duke of *Guise* with a gallant Train in the beginning of *January* arrived in *Italy*, and took *Valentia* ; about the same time that the Admiral *De Coligny* made an Attempt upon *Doway*, but failing of that he ravaged *Artois* and burnt *Lens*. *Valentia* being taken, *Brissac* would have attacked the *Milanese* then unprovided ; but the King's express Directions were otherwise, and so the Duke marched directly for *Rome*, where he was very honourably received, but found things in little readiness for the intended Enterprize upon *Naples* : However in *April* he entred that Kingdom upon the vain Promises of the *Caraffa's*, attacked and took *Campiglio*, and then a *Civittelle*, where the *French* Impetuosity run aground. In the *Interim* *Alva* was fallen upon the Ecclesiastical State,

who as he was a mortal Enemy to the *Medicis*, imagined he had made choice of him to renew Intrigues concerning the Liberty of the *Florentine*. The Cardinal of *Ferrara*, who was Intendant for the King of the Government of *Sienna*, gave some Umbrage at it, but there was no occasion, for he grew careless, and did little. In the mean time the Marquis of *Marignan* invested *Sienna* for *Cosmo*, ever the Duke of *Florence* had the disadvantage the three first Months; *la Corne* one of his Commanders thinking to surprize *Clusio*, lost 1200 men, and himself made a Prisoner; *Strozzi* defeated *Malatesta* near *Petia*, and slew 2000 of his Men, then he received a Reinforcement, recovered one of the Forts of *Sienna*, which *Malatesta* had surprized by treachery, and ravaged all the Duke's Country to the Gates of *Florence*. But the career of his Fortune quickly stopt, his Brother *Leo* was slain at *Montalieu*, and he himself was defeated near *Marcian* by *Marignan*; however he escaped to *Montalieu*, where he allied: But things now growing worse and worse, *Montalieu* at last capitulated for *Sienna* it self, which to enjoy its Liberty in the form of a Republick; the Emperor gave it his Son *Philip*, who in 1558 added it to the Dukè of *Florence*. But not altogether to keep to the Actions of the Field,

turns in their respective six Months: Howe extorted from the Ministers for the People what Compassion could never obtaining there was great Danger, and yet pence in settling the Gabel in that Province it off, and forced the People to pay 12000 to exempt themselves from that Grievance.

1555.

Brissac was not idle all this while in *France* indeed to take *Valseniere*, they w him out of envy put his grand Project o *Sienna* in execution; however he took *Yvree*, and by Intelligence surprised *Ca* which the *Mareschal* attacked the *Citade* few days forced it to capitulate. In the *English* mediated a Peace between the *Prince* Success; but neither Party being well p War, the Summer passed on this side v great Exploits; but beyond the *Alps* the took *Porto Hercole*, while the *French* succ the Siege of *Calvi* in *Corsica*: The *Marsch* took *Ulpian*, and tho but little assisted by bravely made Head against the Duke of had 25000 Men under him, with which could not take *St. Ja*.

The Death
of the King
of Navarre
and Queen
Jane of
Spain.

Henry d' Albret dying on the 25th of King had a Desire to seize the remainder of Kingdom, and to give *Anthony d' Bourbon* married the Heiress, some Lands in *Exc* *Anthony* hastned to take possession, at whi gave divers Instances of his Displeasure.

are to add the Death of another Illustri who was *Queen Jane*, the Widow of *Phil* and Mother of the Emperor *Charles V.* age She had been kept up as one distracted e Death of her Husband, tho they still rese the Title of *Queen of Spain*, which in Instruments was joined with that of the E Son, who now being grown crazy in Body, a with the Toils of Empire, resigned his Dominions to his Son *Philip*, and a Year aft pire to his Brother *Ferdinand*.

Charles re-
signs his
Dominions.

This Year having also proved fatal to *Ju* was succeeded in the *Papal Chair* by *Pe*

g quickly embroiled with the *Spaniards* had
 : against them, but in the *French*; and there-
 ng sent to require King *Henry's* Assistance,
 equital promised his for the conquering of
 dom of *Naples*, the wisest Counsellors were
 s giving ear to these Proposals; besides, they
 d *France* was drained of Money, that they
 k enough to defend themselves against *Spain*,
 and the Low Countries, with whom they
 on find *England* joined; that it would be a hard
 preserve *Piedmont*, and therefore they were
 condition to undertake a Foreign War upon
 it of a faithless and variable People, and the
 e of an old Man, who had one Foot in the
 and no other Weapons but the Spiritual Sword,
 little use and effect in a Temporal War.
 e the Cardinal of *Lorain* carried the King to
 rary opinion, that the Duke of *Guise* might
 e Command of the Army in *Italy*; at which
 stable was not dissatisfied, as expecting they
 embarrass themselves in an Affair that would
 good Success. Thus the Alliance was rough
 at *Paris*, and finished at *Rome*; the same being
 and defensive, not only between them, but
 Estates of *Italy*, excepting *Piedmont*: And the
 ce of it was, That towards the Expences of

Henry
 makes an
 Alliance
 with the
 Pope a-
 gainst
 Spain.

Forces out of the Ecclesiastical State,
already taken *Ostia* and divers other
mean time, whilst the Army for *Italy*
dy, *Strozzi* was ordered to assist the
they sent 3000 Men under the Comma
who made *Alva* retire out of the Ne
Rome.

1557. Moreover, all things being ready,
Guise with a gallant Train in the begin
arrived in *Italy*, and took *Valentia*;
time that the Admiral *De Coligny* m
upon *Doway*, but failing of that he

te, and invested *Rome* it self; so that the Pope's communications doing him no good, he called back the Duke of *Guise* into *Romagnia*, and there received the News of the unfortunate Battel of *St. Quintin*.

For the Truce being broken between the two Crowns, *Philip* raised an Army of 50000 Men, and knew so well how to manage the *English*, tho they had limited by many Restrictions, that they suffered themselves to be induced to espouse his Quarrel: Hereupon *Mary* declared War against the *French*, and sent some thousands of Men to join the *Spaniards*.

Duke of *Savoy*, who was Governor of the Low Countries, and *Philip's* Generals made a Feint of attacking several Towns, but on the 3^d of *August* late they came before *St. Quintin*, which was neither very well walled nor fortified, so that the great *Coligny* had no time to force his way to it thro the Enemies with 6 or 700 Horse and 200 Foot: The Reputation of so famous a Commander served for some time as a strong Bulwark to the Place, into which the *French* attempted to put Relief divers times. At last the Constable his Uncle drew near, and passed the river with the King's whole Army, designing to put the Men thro the Marshes into the Town; but this was done with so much precipitation, that hardly 500

Battel of

Spaniards
take St.
Quentin
by Storm.

severely paid for it by the loss of *Calais*. However we must not derogate at all from the Valour and Conduct of the Duke of *Savoy*, and the brave Exploits of the famous Count *Egmont*; while on the other hand this was the greatest Blow *France* had felt since the Battels of *Cressy* and *Poitiers*. *Philip* for some particular Reasons would not let the Duke of *Savoy* pursue the Game, whereby *France* must have been lost; and indeed *Charles V.* having received the news of this important Victory, asked the Courier, if his Son were in *Paris*; they went therefore on with the Siege of *St. Quentin*, and the Admiral delayed to capitulate so long, till he saw the Town stormed at five several Breaches, and was taken Prisoner with his Brother *Dandelot*, who got away the following Night; and the Spanish Army spent the rest of the Campaign in taking *Catelet*, *Han* and *Noyon*.

Paris was so frightened with these Disasters, that a thousand Horse on that side the *Oyse* would have made it a Desert; however they laboured hard to fortify it, the King raised more Forces, and the Duke of *Guise* with his Army had Orders to return home: He had also recourse to *Solyman*, to borrow some Money of him, and have his Fleet at Sea; the first he excused by alledging their Law forbid them to lend any to the Christians, but the other he promised. In the mean while the great Cities of *France* opened their Purse freely to the King (who yet persecuted the poor Protestants at this time) and he then really found true what his Father had told him upon his Death-bed, *That the French were the best People in the World*; and that it was both Hard-heartedness and ill Policy to vex them by extraordinary Taxes, since they would so freely bleed for the necessities of the State.

The Duke of *Guise* according to order leaving *Italy* and the Pope and Duke of *Ferrara* to make an Accommodation with the Spaniards, he seemed to have brought back with him the Courage of the King's drooping Council and flying Armies. They proposed to give him the Title of Vice-Roy, but that being too much he was constituted Lieutenant General of the King's Armies, within and without the Kingdom: And so he went into *Compeigne* to draw the Forces together.

Tha

There were two good Edicts made this Year, the one to retrench the Abuses of Clandestine Marriages, and the other to secure the Lives of poor Infants born out of Wedlock: And in the beginning of the next, the King who now wanted nothing but Money, assembled the States at *Paris* on the 6th of *January*; the same year since King *John's* time having served for little else but to increase the Subsidies: It was this time thought fit to divide them into four, they distinguishing the third Estate from the Officers of Justice, and the Treasury; they altogether granted him three Millions of Gold as he demanded, and the same was raised upon Things, and by Methods the least burdensome to the Subjects. At their first Meeting they participated of the publick Joy for the happy Success of the Duke of *Guise*; for in eight days time, commencing from the first of *January*, he had taken *Calais*, and in a few days more the Town of *Guisnes* which was raised, and that of *Han*; the Governor of *Calais* with fifty Persons of note were detained Prisoners, the rest were turned out both Soldiers and Inhabitants; *Edward III.* having done the very same to the French when he won that City from them 210 Years before. The Reason of the unhappy loss of this Place was the *English* Garrison's having been drawn out to

1558.

**Termes
defeated.**

whence were formed two contrary Factions in the Kingdom, as we shall hear hereafter. Whilst he was at *Luxemburg*, *Termes* took *Dunkirk* and *Bergues*, but was not only forced from the Siege of *Gravelin* over the *Aa* by the Approach of Count *Egmont*, but *Lamoral* getting before him forced him to a Battle near the Sea side, where by the multitudes of his Enemies, and an horrible Shower of Cannon-ball poured upon him from on board ten *English* Ships that lay upon the Coast, his whole Army was in a manner cut off, and himself taken Prisoner.

This Check did but heighten the Glory of the Duke of *Guise*, so that soon after the Queen of *Scots* his Niece was married to the Dauphin, to whom the *Scots* granted the Crown and the rest of the Regal Ornaments, which the *English* had denied to *Philip*.

Nothing of Action passed this Summer between the Armies, tho both Kings took the Field; but by the Intervention of the Pope's Nuncio and others, *Philip* was brought to give ear to a Peace. The Constable indeed had been set at liberty two Months before, and was most kindly received by the King, but before his enlargement had in a manner agreed upon all the Articles with the *Spaniards*: However that he might not bear the Reproach of so disadvantageous a Treaty, he got the Cardinal of *Lorain*, Marechal De *St. Andre*, the Bishop of *Orleans*, and *Aubespine* the Secretary of State, to be joined with him. The great Obstruction was the Restoration of *Calais*, but Queen *Mary* dying in that Juncture, *Philip* for some time carried on the Interests of Queen *Elizabeth*; but abandoning them at last, the Commissioners for the two Crowns agreed at *Chateau* in the Country of *Cambray* upon the Articles, towards the beginning of this Year: And the same in Substance were these; That the two Kings should mutually restore all they had taken from each other for eight Years past; That *Henry* should restore to the Duke of *Savoie* all his Territories, but still with a Reservation of his Rights, till examined into by Commissioners, and by way of security keep *Turin*, *Pignerol*, *Quiers*, *Chival* and *Villeneuve* of *Asti*: Further he quitted all the Places he held in *Tuscany* to the Duke of *Florence*, and those in *Corsica* to the

Peace be-
tween
France
and Spain.
1559.

Genoa

use, gave his Sister *Margaret* in Marriage to the
e of *Savoy* with 300000 Crowns in Gold, and his
ghter *Isabella* to King *Philip* with 400000 : So
in short, *France* lost by this Peace 198 strong
es, for three only which were given them ; and
were *Ham*, *Le Catelet* and *St. Quintin*. In the
time Queen *Elizabeth*, not to be wanting to her
would have something in lieu of *Calais*, or the
itself ; and therefore it was agreed, that Place
the re-conquered Country should be either re-
d, or 500000 Crowns paid her, neither of which
nk was ever performed.

This Year the Question was decided at *Venice* Precedency
erning the Precedency between the *French* and *disputed*.
iards ; *Vargas* had been there Ambassador for
les V. but being recalled upon his Resignation,
e however was given to the Republick, that he
ld quickly send him thither again, and in his ab-
e *Loyola* would take the Place of Ambassador for
Emperor ; but the *French* Ambassador opposed it,
so he did upon the Return of *Vargas*. The business
cavassed off and on for almost a Year, and then
ned the Battel of *St. Quintin* ; the *Venetians*
ended their doubts upon *Charles V.* being still Em-
or ; but when that Difficulty came to be removed
the Substitution of *Ferdinand*, they would fain
put the matter off from themselves to the

much of the Interest of *France* for his own; whatever it were, the Government now changed its Maxims in two Particulars, which was not to intermeddle any more with the Affairs of *Italy*, and to renounce their Correspondence and Alliance with the *Turks*, as a thing very prejudicial to *Christendom*, and scandalous to the *French Nation*.

Reformation
carried on and
persecuted.

In the mean time the Reformation went on a great pace in *France*, and found very considerable Favourers of it; but the King requiring the President of the Parliament and other Members to execute his Edict of *Chateau-Briand* with utmost severity against them, the matter came to be debated in that Court, where most Voices inclining to a mitigation of Punishment, the King having notice thereof, went into Parliament on the 10th of *June*, and made them debate it in his Presence, which yet did not daunt some of them from boldly delivering their Sentiments upon the principal Points of Religion, demanded a Council, and that in the mean time Executions should be suspended. The King having had the Patience to hear them to the very last Argument, ordered the President and divers others of them to be seized, being an Act whereby that August Assembly never received so shameful a Rebuke and Blemish, and appointed Commissioners to try them; but the Tragical End which intervened three Weeks after, put some stop to those violent Prosecutions.

For the Court being full of Mirth upon the Marriage of the King's Daughter, *June 27*, and Tournaments being appointed for the same, Death, as we may say, having placed himself in Ambush, amidst those Jollities gave a Blow, as fatal as unforeseen, which converted all those gawdy Dresses into mournful Weeds; for about the end of the third days Tilting, the King who had broke several Lances before would needs just again with his Beaver open against the Earl of *Montgomery*, which the other would have excused; but the King not admitting of it, the Earl having broken his Lance against his Breast-Plate, hit him also above the right Eyebrow with the Truncheon that remained in his Hand, wherewith he fell backward to the Ground, and never spake a Word more; however he

K. Henry's
Death.

he survived near eleven days, and breathed out his last till the 10th of July, he being then in the 4th Month of the 4th Year of his Life, and the 17th of his Reign.

This Prince was blamed for his over Indulgence, or rather Weakness towards his Mistresses and Favourites; but they applauded a generous Bounty in him towards his Domesticks, a great Moderation and Sweetness, an agreeable Conversation, and a wonderful Facility of expressing himself both in publick and private. He might also have been celebrated for his Love to Learning, if the dissoluteness of his Court, authorized by his own Example, had not perverted the best and choicest Wits to compose Romances full of extravagant Visions and lascivious Poems, to flatter those Vices and Impurities which had all the Rewards in keeping, and to furnish that Sex with vain Delights and Amusements, who still reign and govern by Poperies. Most of those Vices that ruin great States, reigned in his Court, as Gaming, Impudicity, Libertinage, Blasphemy, and a Curiosity as foolish as impious, to pry into the Secrets of Futurity, by the abhorred Illusions of Magick. But yet not to forget to say somewhat of this King's Person; He was of a noble Stature, serene and goodly Countenance, pleasant Aspect, and dextrous in all brave Exercises, tho his Agility and bodily Strength were not attended with that Firmness of Mind Application Dexterity

the Duke of *Montmorancy*, and *Henry* who was grand Prior of the Order of *Malta*, and Governor of *Provence*.

C H A P. III.

The Reign of FRANCIS II.

affairs in
the Govern-
ment.

UPON the Decease of *Henry II.* the Factions which were formed during his Reign, began to appear; to which if you add the different Parties in Religion, and other Malecontents of the Kingdom, it prefaged no good to this Country: On the one side were the Princes of the Blood and the Constable, on the other the House of *Guise*: The Queen Mother sometimes sided with one, and then with the other, and the young King was exposed as a Prize to the first Occupier: As for the *Guises*, they were five Brothers, the Duke, the Cardinal of *Lorain*, Duke of *Aumale*, the Cardinal of *Guise*, and the Marquess of *Elbeuf*; but the two first acted all. Then on the other hand, amongst the Princes of the Blood, were *Anthony* King of *Navarre*, *Lewis* Prince of *Conde*, the Duke of *Montpefer*, and the Prince of *la Roche-sur-yon*: *Anthony* was voluptuous and fearful, *Lewis* valiant, hardy, of great Courage but mean Fortune, and not supported by the King his Brother, which last to his very Death fluctuated between the Popish and Protestant Religion, but his Brother espoused the latter: The Mareschal de *S. Andre* was wholly of the *Guise's* Party, the Constable proved a great Temporizer, and at length adhered to the *Guisean* Faction, being persuaded by his Wife and second Son, that the Title he bore of the first Christian Baron would not allow him to fall in with the who impugned the Catholick Religion. *Montpefer* and *Roche-sur-yon*, tho both of the House of *Bourbon* were led by the same Motives, without respect to the proximity of Blood: Whereas the Admiral *Colig* and his Brother *Dandelot* favoured the Reformed Religion, and the Interest of the Prince of *Conde*,

had the Honour to be allied. Now the
ing in with the *Guises*, and the Constable
his Game near lost, he would have persua-
ing of *Navarre* to come to Court, and assume
and Authority his Birth justly entituled him
he young King ; but he declining, or at least
g, the *Guises* were left alone to play their
d they sent the Princes of *Conde* and *de la*
yon into *Spain*, the first to carry the Collar
Order to King *Philip*, and the other to get
confirmed : They also banished the Dutcheß
inois from Court, after they had first despoi-
the rich Jewels and other things the late
bestowed upon her. Chancellor *Olivier* was
gain to his Office ; the Queen persuated the
ischarge the Constable, because he had said,
King Henry's Children were like him, but a
daughter of his ; and would have the Cardinal
m recalled.

*The Guisi-
an Party
prevails.*

ing of *Navarre* came too late, but being
exhorted by his Friends to stand his ground,
quickly found pretences to remove him, and
cial Commission to carry the new Queen of
he Frontiers ; however he staid till the King's
on was over, the same having been performed
of Sept. at *Rheims* by the Cardinal of Lo-
n, proceeding on his Journey and having de-

master of the King's Household, the Duke of Guise took it, who with his Party after the Coronation carried the King to Bar, where he renounced to his Brother-in-law the Duke of Lorraine, the Sovereignty he had over that Country.

Reformed Now the Reformation of Religion prevailing, and
persecuted. the King believing that to execute his Father's Will was to extirpate such as opposed the Church of Rome, there was in each Parliament a particular Court erected, that took cognizance of nothing else, and these they named *Chambres Ardentes*, because they in a manner burnt all that were convicted without Mercy; there was no kind of base and wicked Calumnies foreborne to be used, in order to the rooting of the poor Reformed out, and the most profligate and perjured Villains were hearkened to upon this occasion: So that being now persecuted in every Place, they first made use of their Pens to defend themselves, and their Arguments here were chiefly such as tended to remove those from the Administration that were at the head of it; they wanted not Replies, and particularly *du Tillet*, one of the Registers in Parliament, made one that availed little.

In the mean time, the Ministers laboured in good earnest for the Execution of the Articles; about which time there were a great many military Men about the Court, that wanted either their Pay, or some Reward for their Services; and the Cardinal of Lorraine, who then managed the Treasury, being much pestered with their Importunities, and withal fearing some Conspiracy amidst the Multitude, he got an Edict to be published, whereby all that followed the Court with such Suits should withdraw upon pain of Death. Now the King had been afflicted with a quar-
King sick. ran Ague for some Months, which rendred him incapable of minding Business, besides he was naturally weak; and when he came to be cured, many Pusillanimities appeared on his livid Face, that indicated some internal Indisposition; wherefore he was carried to Blois for the change of Air, where some Persons were employed to get young Infants Blood to bath him in, which made many believe him to have been infected with *Namur's* Disease. All this while the Reformed were severely persecuted; *Anne du Bourg*, a Person of eminent Quality,

lity, rare Merit, and great Virtue, openly declared himself to profess a Belief contrary to that of the *Rish Church*; his Example made the Parliament ear to expose him to an infamous Execution; but accident hapned, which hastened his Ruin, for being in his Prosecution excepted against the President *St. Andre*, who yet would appear, he threaten'd God would compel him to keep away; wherefore President, as he was going from the Palace, hapning he was assassinated, tho the Murderer could never be discovered, yet this exasperated those that were at *Helm* so far, that *du Bourg* was condemned and at *Greve*: A Multitude of others were imprisoned, put to Death, or banished. But *Robert Stuart*, Scotch Gentleman, suspected to have murdered *St. Andre*, endured the greatest Torments of the Rack with utmost Constancy and without Confession, where he was cleared.

Now it was, that the ordinary People of their Heads set up Images in the Corners of the streets, and if any passed by without saluting of them were severely abused for it. About the same time, the Mother of the Queen of *Scots*, who governed that Kingdom for her Daughter, being very desirous to stifle the Reformation there also, they sent *French* under *la Brosse* to assist her in that pious design, after which they were to march for *England*.

The Reformed's Designs against the Guisards.

whom he was to chuse one : On the other hand Persecution of the Protestants was an Act as bad the same still increased upon them ; inso much that last after divers Consultations, and weighing the notions of several of their Divines, who affirmed might take up Arms in their own defence, and way for a free Access to the King to make the monstrances ; they elected for their private or public Chief the Prince of *Conde*, and *Renaudie* under and resolved that a certain number of unmarried should be chosen in every Province, who under Chiefs as they nominated, should go upon a Day prefixed to *Amboise*, there present their Petition to the King, and seize the Duke of *Guise* and the Cardinal of *Lorain*, that they might be tried before the States : The Design was kept exceeding private, but last *Renaudie* having vainly, upon the near approach the time, opened the whole Mystery of his Project to an Advocate of his own Religion, named *Avant*, he discovered the same at Court : Upon this the King took all manner of Precaution for their own Security, caused the Prince of *Conde* and the Admiral to be brought to Court, granted an Abolition of all that was done to the Reformed, except the Conspirators, and at the same time the Duke got the Title of Lieutenant General of the Kingdom confirmed to him, as well as that the King should be present as absent, and set his Horse Guard always to attend the King's Person. The Court went immediately to *Amboise*, the Prince of *Conde* was informed how things went as he was on his Journey to Court, which yet he pursued, but headstrong *Renaudie* did his Design ; some of his party were decoyed out of the Castle of *Noze*, an array to Faith imprisoned, while *Renaudie* in small Parties marching thitherward with a design to disengage them, were most of them either taken Prisoners, and he himself was killed in the rest of *Chateau-Renand* : The *Guises* were forced enough to have the Chiefs of them dispatched, *Motte*, one of their Captains, having attempted to surprize *Amboise*, an Order was exhibited to the King that had been in Arms either dead or alive, that they should be returning to their own Houses : The

Barbarous Executions of the Protestants.

ed near 1200 of them, and the Principal of them in the sight of the Queen Mother and the whole Court; not one of them confessing there was any Design against the King's Person, but only against the

There were indeed more than Presumptions that the Admiral and the Admiral were privy to the Design; never there being neither Men nor Arms found in the Prince's House, he would needs justify himself, and

the Lie to any that said he was guilty of it: out of a most profound Dissimulation, applauded Generosity, and told him, he was also ready to retain his Innocency; and the Danger being now, he wrote in the King's Name to all the Parliaments, Governors and great Cities, to give them an account of the Danger the King had escaped, and the great Service the Duke of *Guise* had done him; inso-much that the Parliament of *Paris* believing him, they gave him the Glorious Title of *the Conservator of his Country*. The Admiral was sent by the Queen to quiet the Commotions in *Normandy*: And now *P' Hospirall* made Chancellor, in the room of *Olivier* lately deceased, and the same brought about by the Queen's request.

Indeed they had hitherto in *France* called those that confessed the Reformed Religion *Lutherans*, tho they

Resolutions
of the
Grandeess.

ble Ear to the *Hugonots*, and even to read some Writings they addrest to her for their Justification. With the same prospect, or to dive into the Designs and Interests of the Grandeess, she summoned them all to *Fontainebleau* upon the 20th of *August*, under pretence of taking their Advice upon the present State of Affairs, according to the antient usage of the Kingdom: the Constable, Admiral and *Dandolot* went thither with a Train of 8 or 900 Gentlemen; the King and Queen on the first day of the Assembly briefly declared the occasion of their being called together, and that was to remedy the Differences about Religion: The Chancellor opened the matter more largely, after which the Admiral prostrating himself before the King, presented him with divers Petitions from *Normandy*, imploring him to put a stop to the Persecutions of the Reformed, and allow them the free Exercise of their Religion: Hereupon the Bishop of *Valence* spake very freely concerning the Abuses and Vices of the Clergy, and the Severity used towards the People which suffered, and thought the best way would be, to refer the Decision of those Controversies to a National Council: He was seconded by the Arch-Bishop of *Vienne*; they were opposed by the Cardinal of *Lorraine* and the Duke of *Guise*. At last the Result of all was an Edict of the 24th of *Aug.* to summon the States to meet at *Melun*, *Decemb.* 10. and to require the Bishops to attend the King on the 10th of *Jan.* to consult of a fit Time and Place for a National Council: they were much alarmed with this at *Rome*, and Pope *Pius IV.* finding other ways would not do, he ordered a General Council to be convoked.

The contrivances of the two Brothers *Anthony* and *Lewis de Bourbon* (who would not appear at the Assembly of *Melun*) to make themselves the stronger, and set aside the *Guises*, having been discovered and defeated, there appeared in the mean while divers Commotions in the Provinces, which intimated the whole Body of the *Hugonots* were upon the point of making a General Rising: They preached publicly in *Normandy*; the two Brothers *Anthony* and *Paul Richemont Morvans*, endeavoured to make themselves Masters of *Valence*, *Montelimard*, *Romans* in *Dauphine*, and of

Aix

and *Arles*, but they were prevented by *Maugeron*; *atbrun* also was routed in *Dauphine*, from whence fled to *Switzerland*, neither did *Maligny* succeed in his Project of seizing *Lyons*. The Princes all while promised unto themselves a much stronger Party in the States than the *Guises*, and prepared to fight well guarded and armed; but the *Guises* commanding all in the King's Name, besides other Instructions, ordered them to come to Court, attended with their own Domesticks, to justify themselves in such matters as should be laid to their Charge: They boded but ill, however they resolved to go; the Cardinal of *Bourbon* their Brother being first deceived, was an Instrument to deceive them; so that the King of *Navarre* relying upon the Dignity of their Person as an inviolable Safeguard, refused 700 Gentlemen of *Poitou*, who offered to attend him, and above 200 Soldiers in several Provinces that were ready for that purpose, as he did also the wise Counsel of the Archbishop of *Vienne*, who after he had done all he could to dissuade him from it, died of Grief, and of the Fear he had justly conceived, lest the *Guises*, whom he had already highly offended, should revenge themselves upon him.

The King with the Queen Mother, the Princes of *Montbeller* and *de la Roche-sur-von*. and the *Guises*. on

restore the Discipline of the Church, but came to no Result of any Importance. Some days after came about a dozen of the most famous Reformed Ministers, among whom were *Theodore Beza*, *Marlorat*, *Morel*, *Peter Martyr* and *Viret*; the King and the whole Court, Princes of the Blood, Cardinals, Prelates, Council of State, and the Grantees both of the one and the other Religion were present. The 4th of September was the day they opened; the Papists complained bitterly of the Learned *Beza*, for saying the Body of Christ was as far distant from the Eucharist, as the Earth is from Heaven, for which the Cardinal of *Tournon* called him a Blasphemer. At last they resolved to reduce the Dispute to two Heads; the one about the true Church, and the other about the Eucharist: In short, the *Romanists* own that *Beza* stood up stoutly for his Opinions, in opposition to the Real Presence and other Tenets of the Church of *Rome*, which they would by no means relinquish, especially that of the Bodily Presence; and *Laynes* a *Spaniard* treated the Reformed Ministers with the Epithets of Wolves, Monkies and Serpents; so that their Spirits being at last heated and exasperated, the Conference broke up on Nov. 25. and the *Hugonots* now opened their Meetings in every Province. At the same time the Queen, in retribution of the Services done her by the Admiral, pretended at least to give him a helping hand in many Occurrences, and even sent Orders to the King's Ambassadors at *Rome*, to be instant with the Pope to have the Communion administred in both Kinds, and a Liberty to pray to God in the *French* Tongue, which by no means could be obtained: However it were, the *Triumvirate* could not endure the Credit the Admiral was in, and retired from Court, making Religion the Pretence of their Discontent. The King of *Spain*, who affected the Title of Catholick, exprest a great deal of Resentment at their favouring the *Hugonots*, and particularly against the King of *Navarre*, that he might thereby have a *Salvo Conscientie*, not to do him right concerning his Kingdom, and a Pretence to intermeddle with the Affairs of *France*.

Soon after a Priest was taken going into *Spain* with a Petition to *Philip*, in the Name of the Catholicks, together

er to make a Funeral for that King at his Charge, thereby made appear to the World his Gratitude for the Favours he had received, exceeded the Fear of the Resentments of *Lewis XI.* a mortal Enemy to the King and Servants of his own Father. The Count, who had been sent for several times, but advanced by slow Journies, when he heard the News of the King's Death, doubled his Pace, and on the 18th of May arrived at *Orleans*, where making use of the Power belonging to his Office, he commanded the Guards that were at the Gates, and threatned them with hanging, if he found them any more as it were hindring the King in that manner in a time of Peace, in the very Heart of the Kingdom. As for the Prince *de Condé*, tho' he might go where he pleased, yet he was not to leave the Prison, till he knew his Prosecutors and Accusers: To which the *Guises* replied, all had been done by the King's Command, but they produced no Order for it. So that 13 Days after he came out, he went to *Ham* in *Picardy*, attended with Honour and Respect, by those very Men that had served as Tyrants upon him during his Confinement.

1561.

irresolute and inconstant Prince to confirm what he had promised her, during the Imprisonment of his Mother, which was the Regency. The next Session the States were on the 2d of Jan. wherein the Advocate *Boucheaux* spake for the third Estate; the Earl of *Chefmont* for the Nobility, and *Quintin* a Canon for the Clergy: The two first laid the Irregularities of the Government upon the Vices of the King, the other defended them, and reflected particularly upon the Admiral, who demanded Reparation, and before the Estates broke up; but before this, there were many private Interests carrying on, more particularly the King of *Navarre* put them upon calling the Treasurers to an account; and that the Particulars should be laid before them of all the Grants made by *Henry II.* offering himself to give up all that had been consumed upon him. The Constable and *St. Andre* were touched by this than the *Guises*, upon which the Estates closed with the former, and easily adjourned till May, and to the City of *Pontoise*, ordered that the same time there should come but two Deputies from each Government.

Conde declared innocent.

In Feb. *Conde* appearing in the Council, and asked the Chancellor whether there were any Proofs against him, he answered, No; and all the Princes and Nobles present having testified, they were satisfied of his Innocency, the King commanded him to take his Oath, and an Order was made to declare him wholly innocent, which was verified by the Parliament of Paris. It's most certain, Popery in *France* must now have had it not been for the *Guises*; but the Constable, the Queen's Intrigues, and some particular Interests of his own, being brought off from the Princes, by the Remonstrances made to him by the *Coligny*, his own Wife, Son, and others, entred into a Conspiracy with the Cardinal and the Duke of *Guise* his Brother, which by the *Hugonots* was then called the *Trial*. And then they crowned the King on the 15th of July at *Rheims*, where the Duke of *Guise* according to the Seniority of Peerage had the Precedency of the Duke of *Montpensier* a Prince of the Blood.

K. Charles crowned.

It had been agreed by the Treaty of the Peace, that the Rights of the King's Preter-

the Territories of *Savoy* should be decided in three Years; the King *Francis* his Commissioners the last Year willing to accomplish it, the Duke at last so wrought upon the King, that he commanded *Turin*, *Chivasso*, *Novara* and *Villa Nuova d' Asti*, should be given him in exchange for *Pignerol*, *Savillan* and *Perouse*, which, notwithstanding the Remonstrances of the King's Lieutenant beyond the *Alps*, was at last executed by the Duke of *Savoy's* making some farther Concessions of Money to the King and the *French* Garisons.

But to leave *Savoy*, the Conduct of the Queen *First Edit*
of *France* is now very remarkable, who besides in favour
her things put forth an Edict in favour of the Re- of the Re-
formed; whereby all Persons were enjoined not to mo- formed.
- them, the Imprisoned were released, and the Ex-
called home; whereas on the other side she excited

Constable to complain aloud of these things, prejudicial to the Church of *Rome*. In the mean
the Constable being not willing openly to join
himself with the Duke of *Guise*, endeavoured a Recon-
ciliation between him and the Prince of *Conde*, whom

King commanded to embrace one another, and
unite a sincere and cordial Friendship; for which an
Instrument was drawn up, and signed by the two Secre-
taries of State. The Parliament on the other side
complained aloud of the Queen's Edict in favour of

the Queen to come to her and disarm; but the Representations of the Admiral *De Coligny* and others to him, concerning his Engagements to the Party, brought him back to the Army again. Now the number of Cities which the *Hugonots* had seized being too many for their Forces, they soon lost most of them again, with a great many of their Men, such as *Blois*, *Angers*, *Mans* and *Tours*: The Duke of *Anmale* recovered all the Places about *Roan*, and *Estampes* Governor of *Bretagne* took *Valongne*, *St. Vire*, *Lo*, and *Bayeux*; and the greatest Cruelties were committed at *Vire*, because, they said, the *Hugonots* had been most cruel there.

Their Enemies prevail against the Hugonots.

Now the Prince his Party beginning to grow cool upon this matter, and many desiring leave to return home, he sent *Soubize* to *Lyons*, *Hangest-Yvoy* to *Bourges*, *Rochevoucaud* to *Angoulesme*, *Dandelot* into *Germany*, and *Brinquemault* to *England*; whereof the two last were to hasten the Supplies that had been promised him. The King's Army was increased to 25000 Foot and 5000 Horse, and were divided into two Bodies; one of them, with whom the King was in Person, commanded by the King of *Navarre* and *Guise*, went to besiege *Bourges*, the other under *St. Andre* invested *Poitiers*, both which were reduced. Upon this most of the Officers were for besieging *Orleans* and the Prince therein, whereby they might have cut off the the greatest Head of the Faction: But the Queen and Duke of *Guise* were for attacking *Roan*, where the Army arrived *September 20*, just in the nick to hinder the Progress the *Hugonots* might have made with the help of the *English*, who had confederated to assist them with 6000 Men, and Queen *Elizabeth* to have *Havre de Grace* put into her Hands, and not long after executed. The Fort of *St. Catherine* was taken by Storm, and even *Roan* it self after an obstinate Resistance was taken by Assault, and given up for eight days together to the Pillage of the Soldiers: *Montgomery* and the *English* escaped in his Galley, while the *Guisian* Faction hanged up divers considerable Persons in the City: But the Prince by way of Reprisal caused the Heads of divers Papists that were in his Hands, to be chopped off; yet at length both Parties began to come to a Temper, and to make good the

together with certain very dangerous Instructions; the Parliament durst not, because of the Quality of the Persons involved in this Affair, search too deep, but thought fit only to condemn him to acknowledg his Crime in a full Assembly, bare-foot and bare-headed, with a lighted Torch in his Hand, and to be shut up between four Walls in the Convent of the *Chartreux*. Again, a Batchelor of the *Sorbon* having asserted the Pope had an absolute Power over all Kings, he was also punished for the same.

We are come now to another Year, in the first Month of which the Regent who desired to support her self by the *Hugonots*, got an Edict in their favour; containing amongst other things, Liberty for them to preach in all parts of the Kingdom, except walled Cities, and particularly *Paris*: The same was authorized by an Assembly of Notables, and verified, tho' not without much difficulty, by the Parliament of *Paris*, with this Clause, *In consideration of the present Juncture of the times, but not approving of the new Religion in any manner, and till the King should otherwise appoint.* The other Parliament also prescribed divers Modifications.

When the *Triumvirate* had withdrawn from Court, the Admiral for a time appeared the most Potent; but at length declining in the Queen's Favour, tho' she still made use of him, and he and *Conde* observing

1562.
An Edict
in favour
of the Hugonots.

Things hereupon began to be in an extreme hurry and confusion; the Duke of *Guise* went to *Paris* attended with 1000 Horse, and his Enemies would have made it even Treason in him to march in by *St. Dennis's Gate*, thro which their Kings usually made their Entry, as also because the Magistrates went out to meet and harangue him. The Queen hereupon imagining the Duke would snatch the Government from her, had recourse to *Conde*, who was retired to his own House, and wrote divers Letters to recommend her Son to him, as also the Kingdom and her self, and that in so pressing and affectionate a manner, as gave him just cause to arm himself, tho he had not the least Inclination to it.

The *Parisians* having now their Arms restored unto them, *Conde* who was the weaker Party durst not challenge the upper hand of the *Triumvirs*; but to save these things, the Cardinal of *Bourbon* his Brother so accommodated matters, that the Chiefs of both Parties should leave the City at the same time; wherefore the Prince retired to his House near *Meaux*, and *Guise* to *Fontainebleau* where the King was, and had such a Retinue as made the Queen sensible his Forces were much more numerous than the Prince's. In this State the Queen, whose Inclination was to keep a balance, sent for the Prince of *Conde*, who having passed the *Seine* at *St. Cloud*, put the *Parisians* without any just Reason in Arms: Upon which the Confederate *Guisians* let the Queen know, it was convenient the King should be carried to *Paris*, lest he should fall into the *Hugonots* Hands, which she very unwillingly complied with.

*Conde
seizes Or-
leans.*

Upon this the Prince of *Conde*, partly out of spite for having been deluded by a Woman, for so he took it, and partly out of Anger to see his Enemies Masters of the King's Person, and many other Motives, posted with 2000 Horse to *Orleans*, on one of whose Gates *Dandelot* had cunningly seized the day before, to wit the 1st of *April*, which they made as it were the Place of their Arms.

Here the Prince took an Oath of all the Party, and wrote to the *German Princes*, setting forth the cause of his taking up Arms; then sent the Queen's original

Letter,

Letters, to persuade them to assist and redeem the King from the Captivity of their Enemies: At the same time he published his Manifesto, and sent after it the Copy of the League made between the Pope, Spain, and the *Guises*, to exterminate all the Sectaries of the new Religion. Soon after his Party seized upon many considerable Cities in the Kingdom, and with too much Zeal and Fury abolished the Exercise of the *Romish* Religion, overturned the Altars, beat the Images in pieces, burnt the Relicks, and tormented the Monks and Priests: The Prince himself having been able by no methods, nor even those of Punishment, to put a stop to their Fury. Now tho all the Kingdom was in a Flame, the good Chancellor did all he could to remedy the Evil; the Queen also would have *Conde* come to Court, assuring him, that whatever had been done against the Protestants was much against her Will, and that with his Assistance she would endeavour to redress it: The Prince was inclined to it, when he had the News of the *Hugonots* having been massacred as they came out of the Church at *Sens*, which put him quite off. However there passed still many Messages and Proposals between the Parties; and the Prince insisted that the Edict of *January* should be observed, that there should be Justice done for such as were massacred, and that the *Triumvirate* should leave the Court: Whereas the other side re-

*Massacre
of Sens.*

The Queen lived now somewhat more easy than before, but all she could do could not separate the Prince from the Admiral; but his Wife hapning to die, she endeavoured to chain him to the Court with the charms of a voluptuous Life, and the tempting Beauty of one of her Maids of Honour, who in about nine Months time produced the Fruit of their Dalliances, and was a common Discourse every where, as well as the Passion of Mareschal *St. Andre's* Widow for the Prince: The good Admiral did by no means like it, and therefore used such Remonstrances to him, that he got him married again to the Duke of *Longueville's* Sister.

English
lose Havre
de Grace.

On the other hand, Queen *Elizabeth* refusing to surrender *Havre de Grace*, *Brissac* formed the Siege of it, whither the Constable and his Son went in about fifteen days; the *Hugonots* were more forward than the Catholicks to recover it from their own Friends the *English*, who would keep it as a Recompence for *Calais*: The Noble *Ambrose* Earl of *Warwick* was Governor of the Place, wherein there was a Garison of about 4000 men; the Attacks were very brave, the Resistance much nobler; but a dreadful Plague having crept within the Town, forced *Warwick* fore against his Will to capitulate; and the Surrendry of the Place was so much the more mortifying to him, because next day there appeared a Reinforcement of 1800 men within sight of the Port, and a few days after a great Fleet under Admiral *Clinton*: The *English* hereupon did vast mischief by Sea to the *French* Merchants, but at last agreed to a Peace in 1564. whereby it was stipulated, that either of them should preserve their Rights and Pretensions, which respected the City of *Calais*, to which the *English* had a just Claim.

In the mean time, King *Charles* being entred into the 14th Year of his Age, was carried to *Roan*, and declared Major there; tho the same Edict was not registred in the Parliament of *Paris*, without much difficulty; But the King severely answering the Remonstrances of their Deputies, and saying, they should lay aside that obsolete and vulgar Error; that they were the Tutors or Guardians of their Kings, Defenders

usual Rules of War and Martial Laws. The King
Javarre was wounded at the Siege, but not mortally ;
being too assiduous in his Amours with *Madam du*
st, it heated his Blood too much, so that being im-
ment to be cured, and adventuring to go by Boat to
is, he was seized with a trembling Fit, and after *King of*
fell into a cold Sweat, the Symptoms of approach- *Navarre's*
Death, which hapned at *Andelis*, November 17. *Death.*
now as at all other times shewed himself irresolute
ther to die a Protestant or a Papist ; however be-
his Departure he sent to forewarn his Wife from
ing to Court, and to be upon her Guard.

o the Misfortune of *Roan*, 5000 Men raised for Con- *The Hu-*
inder *Duras* were cut in pieces by *Montluc* in *Guy-gonots*
But here to pass over many minute Actions that *decline.*
ied in most of the Provinces, we shall observe in
gross, that *Sommerine* for the Popish Party made
iere War in *Provence*, against the Protestants un-
his Father the Count of *Tendes* : In *Dauphine*,
ets for the *Hugonots* opposed *De Suse* for the
holicks, *Burgundy* escaped for a time, *Normandy*
red much, *Joyeuse* preserved one part of *Langue-*
for the *Romanists*, and *Montluc* in *Guyenne* exceed-
the bounds even of Severity it self against the *Hu-*
rs, whose Party had the disadvantage almost eve-
where, except *Languedoc*, where they held the best
es save *Tholouse*.

shall make no Interruption in this Place concern-

Battel of
Dreux.

Conde
taken Pri-
soner.

English, but was so closely followed by the *Triumphant*, that the Armies on the 20th of December came to a Battel near *Dreux*: The *Hugonots* at first had very considerable Advantage, but falling too soon upon the Baggage, the *Romanists* had their full Revenge on them; for the Duke of *Guise* standing upon an Ascent, and observing the Enemy scattered, he detached some Parties to charge their Foot, who were separate from the Horse, upon whom he fell himself and routed them. Here the brave *Conde*, who never gave ground, was taken Prisoner by *Dauville* the Constable's Son; the *German* Horse fled to a neighbouring Wood, the Admiral joined them with 400 more he had raised, with whom he was resolved, if the *German* would have ventured it, to have begun the Charge afresh the next day. They counted 8000 dead upon the Place, and as many almost of the one side as the other: the Admiral retreated to *Orleans*, *St. Andre* had been killed in the Battel. The Duke of *Guise* showed the Prince of *Conde* all manner of Respect, they supped together with such Demonstrations of Friendship, that one would have thought they intended for the future to live lovingly like Cousin Germans, as they were. When the main Body of the King's Army was at first defeated, some fled to *Paris*, and declared all was lost: Upon the first News whereof the Dutchess of *Guise*, who had a great Court about her, was abandoned in a Moment: But for the Queen she only said, *Well we must then pray to God in French*; and began highly to cherish the Friends of the Prince of *Conde*: But next day when the true News came, things appeared quite with another face; the Dutchess of *Guise* was crowded, and the Queen ordered Bonfires to be made, tho with some Reluctancy, and gave the Command of the Army (now *St. Andre* was dead, who was really the General in the late Action) to the Duke of *Guise*, on whom the Army had already conferred it.

1563.
Siege of
Orleans.

The Admiral on the other hand having left his Brother *Dauclio* with 2000 Men in *Orleans*, marched into *Berry*, and afterwards *Normandy*, where he received the Money from *England*, and mustered his Forces: Here he was forced to leave the Siege of *Caen*, upon the News of *Guise* having invested *Orleans* on the 6th

February; the Suburbs were quickly lost with 800 of
Besieged, and the Bridg Tower was gained; and
Hugonots were in very great Consternation, when
Paltror Mere, watching a convenient opportunity
the Duke went to meet his Wife, shot him in Guise
Shoulder, whereof he died: Mere being after slain.
Is taken Prisoner, was put to death for it; and
ing all along taken the Admiral for his Abettor,
other did all he could to purge himself to the
en; but whether he were guilty or no, as 'tis sup-
d he was not, yet that Duke's Children took the
bloody Revenge we read of in any History in
World.

He Duke before he died advised the Queen to make *A Treaty*
ace, and indeed while he was yet living she had *about a*
n to treat about it; first at *St. Mesnin* with the Prin- *Peace.*
of Conde, then with the Prince and Constable
Orleans, to which Place they were both brought
er a strong Guard; but not being able to agree,
Prince was allowed to go and confer with his
y at Orleans, who positively insisted he should
tain the Edict of January: But the Prince was
ent with a more moderate one, which restrained
Religion for the most part to their private Fa-
es, and excluded it from Cities, granted a general
esty, and discharged the Prince of all the Money
had taken belonging to the King. The Admiral

The Queen lived now somewhat more easy than before, but all she could do could not separate Prince from the Admiral; but his Wife happened, she endeavoured to chain him to the Court by the charms of a voluptuous Life, and the tempting Beauty of one of her Maids of Honour, who in nine Months time produced the Fruit of their Dances, and was a common Discourse every where well as the Passion of Marechal St. Andre's Wife for the Prince: The good Admiral did by no means like it, and therefore used such Remonstrances to him that he got him married again to the Duke of Longueville's Sister.

On the other hand, Queen Elizabeth refusing to render *Havre de Grace*, *Brissac* formed the Siege of it, whither the Constable and his Son went in about fifteen days; the *Hugonots* were more forward than the Catholics to recover it from their own Friends the *English*, who would keep it as a Recompence for *Calais*: The Noble *Ambrose* Earl of *Warwick* Governor of the Place, wherein there was a Garrison of about 4000 men; the Attacks were very brave, the Resistance much nobler; but a dreadful Plague having crept within the Town, forced *Warwick* to gainst his Will to capitulate; and the Surrender of the Place was so much the more mortifying to him, that next day there appeared a Reinforcement of 1800 men within sight of the Port, and a few days after a great Fleet under Admiral *Clinton*: The *English* hereupon did vast mischief by Sea to the French Merchants, but at last agreed to a Peace in 1562, whereby it was stipulated, that either of them should preserve their Rights and Pretensions, which respect to the City of *Calais*, to which the *English* had a Claim.

In the mean time, King *Charles* being entered the 14th Year of his Age, was carried to *Rouen*, declared Major there; tho the same Edict was registered in the Parliament of *Paris*, without much difficulty: But the King severely answering the Remonstrances of their Deputies, and saying, they should lay aside that obsolete and vulgar Error; that they were the Tutors or Guardians of their Kings, I

English
lose Havre
de Grace.

.4. *The Reign of Charles IX.*

565

f the Kingdom, and Keepers of the City of *Paris* returned, and the Edict at last was past by

here to pass over the Complaints of the Relati-
the late Duke of *Guise*, and Demands of Justice

Death, as also the Tumults and Mutinies of
ople of *Tholouse* against their Parliament, which
specious pretence to the Cardinal of *Armagnac*
hers to enter into a League for the defence of
Religion against the *Hugonots*; from the sad Exam-
iereof divers others did the same in several Provin-
ut of which that Grand one at last was framed in
eign of *Henry III.* We are to proceed to shew, *Edicts*
hancellor during the Calm of Peace contrived *made.*
Reglements for Policy and Justice: All Curates
reed from quartering Soldiers; Plaintiffs were
d to deposit so much Money, before they were
ted to plead; tho this Edict in time was abo-
by non-usage, rather than repealed; by another a
of Merchants was established. But now to close
mual Revolution, the last Day of it was rendred
that signal, by the Death of the Mareschal *de*
; one of the greatest Commanders of his Age.

w it was that the Year was ordered to com-
from the first of *Jan.* tho the Parliament did
gree to it till 1567. At the same time, tho the

1564.

*The Court
at Bayon-
ne, and
why.*

from one House to another, the every 1
with the Duke of *Alva*, and the Even
ed, it tended only to a secret Alliance b
Kings for the extirpation of the Prote
the *Spaniard* gained his much desired
was to maintain an irreconcilable Divil
and 'tis certain, that from henceforwar
stants lost all that little Credit and Confu
been between them. The Court at ti
from *Bayonne*, passed by *Nerac*, where
the Exercise of the Popish Religion,
Jane d' Albret had expelled from the
having visited divers Places. went and

in divers Particulars, and proposed several of redressing their Grievances : Hereupon brated Edict of *Moulins* was made, and dated is the 10th of *July*, which in the whole con- Heads ; some whereof were to confirm the Edict *Paris* two Years before, and that at *Roussillon* : The other to make some Regula- matters of Justice ; amongst others, that a tho he had not engaged his Person, might be Prisoner, if he made not Satisfaction within onths, after Judgment signified to him ; that no y Witnesses should hereafter be held valid for a above 100 Livres ; that all Substitutions made ie Ordonnance of *Orleans* should be restrained urther Degree ; that they should be published t, and registred in the next Registers Office ng to the King ; that Donations between Per- ng, should be insinuated within four Months Registries as were nearest to the Habitations Parties, upon pain of Nullity.

before the Court parted from *Moulins*, there Accommodation patched up between the *Gui-* the *Coligny's*, there being no Proof against the d concerning the Murder of the late Duke. In ie Place a Reconciliation was made between the al of *Lorain* and the *Marschal de Montmeran-*

War re-
newed.

ments. *Life and the like Complaints they ca*
twice or thrice to the Prince of Conde and Co
who dissuaded them all they could from another Ri
but when there was certain notice given them, the
Prince and the Admiral were to be seized, Da
resolved they should defend themselves by Arms:
first thing they did was to seize *Rosoy in Brie*;
had also a mind to surprize the Court that wa
Monceaux; but the Queen having Information o
retired to *Meaux*, whither they sent a Petition
Montmerancy. The Council were divided in thei
pinions, whether the King should tarry there or
but the worst Advice prevailing, he took his E
by Night towards *Paris* surrounded by his
Guards, who were next day attacked by the P
his Cavalry, without being able to break them: H
ever his Forces increasing every day, he seized upon
Avenues of *Paris*; so that for eight Days toge
there passed nothing but Messages to and fro,
Constable and the Chancellor doing all they were
to prevent a Civil War; but the *Romanists* stan
stiff, that the Edict of Pacification for the *H*
nots was but provisional, the latter at last seized
on the Bridges of *Poissy* and *Argentueil*, and ag
many small Castles on the other side of the *Seine*
that they commanded all the Roads to *Normandy*,
che, *Main*, and *Anjou*, and stopped Provisions f
coming into the City: Insomuch that the Peoples
patience and unjust Suspicions of the Constable, m
him resolve to drive them from thence, who were
above 3000 men in all, to the King's Army that v
about 20000 strong; wherefore he attacked them
the 10th of *Nov.* with great Fury; his Son the
reschal broke in upon them, and made a great Sla
ter, but the Body which the Constable comman
was routed, and he himself wounded in several
ces, the last of which was mortal. Night coming
put an end to this bloody Conflict, and *Dandelot*
Day after arriving from *Poissy*, the *Hugonots* by
Advice, to prevent ill Reports of their Defeat, drew
in Battalia, and with wonderful Resolution charged
Enemy to the very Walls of *Paris*; from the top
which, when the *Turkish* Ambassador observed them
of

Battel be-
tween the
Hugonots
and Catho-
licks.

on return to the Charge, he said, *If his Army had but
 thousand Horse equal to those white Coats, he would
 conquer all Europe.* The brave Constable died next
 , and 'tis said, that a *Cordelier* importuning him
 with tedious Exhortations, he desired he would let
 alone, saying, *He had not lived fourscore Years
 without learning to die a Quarter of an Hour.* The
 men, glad to be rid of him, made her young Son
 Duke of *Anjou* nominal General of the Army,
 filled not up the Office of Constable.

The fifth Day after the Battel, the *Hugonots* march-
 to *Montereau*, were joined by a Body of *Germans*
 or *John Casimir* the Elector *Palatin's* Son; and
 e they staid fifteen days to wait for the Troops
 were raising for them in several Provinces, and
 declared in their Favour; *la Nove* by the favour
 he Inhabitants recovered *Orleans*, and then they
 ed *Ponts sur-yonne*. The Admiral who had joined
 a with the Cavalry, would attempt *Sens*, but young
 e stoutly opposed him: Their Arms prevailed also
Anguedoc, and about *Avignon*, from whence they
 ched to *Orleans*, whereby they freed the Princess
Condé, and the Wives of the other chief Comman-
 , from the fears they were in of being taken by
 Enemy, because they had but a few Soldiers in the
 e. As for the Forces of *Auvergne*, *Tours* and

The *Lame*
Peace.

the contrary. The more quicksighted of the Hugonots were not at all for this Peace, as foreseeing the evil Consequence of it; and therefore they called it from *Biron* who was *Lame*, the *Lame Peace*, and *Mal-assise* from *Mesme* who was Lord of *Mal-assise*. However the Prince protested he was necessitated to it, and in consequence thereof the Siege of *Chartres* was raised, and divers Cities were given up, but *Roche* and some others refused to obey; *Casimir* retired home with his Troops, where he found *William* Prince of *Orange*, now fled from the Rage of *Alva* in the *Netherlands*.

Sea-Ad-
ventures.

In the time of Peace the Admiral applied himself to increase the Trade and Navigation of *France*; he had settled a Colony in *Florida*, which had been utterly starved, had not an *English* Vessel by chance supplied and brought them into *England*. The Admiral not knowing this, fitted out three Ships more to go thither, but they forcing their Commander to go to *New Spain* to seek for Provisions, and there taking a rich Ship from the *Spaniards*; this gave them a pretence to fall upon the *French* and destroy them. However *Gourgues* sailing sometime after from *France* to *Florida*, he recovered *Fort Charles* from the *Spaniards*, and took two others; and all the *Spaniards* he could catch, he hanged up with this Inscription, *Not as Spaniards, but as Pirates*; but upon his return into *France*, he was, upon the Prosecution of the *Spanish* Ambassador, like to have been hanged himself for it. *Montluc* was less successful in his Designs of making Settlements upon the *African Coast*, wherein he was opposed by the *Portuguese*; and upon his return home, he and his men by the Complaints of the *Portugal* Ambassadors were like to suffer as *Pirates*, and therefore forced to keep out of the way.

But to return again to the great contending Power of the Kingdom, the Intention of those that made the Peace of *Chartres* was not to keep it, but to make their advantage better than they had done before; so that it could not last long. The Hugonots still retained *Sancerre*, *Pezelay*, *Montauban*, *Castres*, *Montbrun* and *Roche*, which they fortified: They kept Correspondence with Queen *Elizabeth* and the Prince of *Germany*; and the Admiral had a particular Intel-

ce with the Prince of *Orange*. On the other hand, Hugonot *illuded*:
Romanists would not let the *Hugonots* enjoy either
 ce or Liberty of Conscience; in three Months
 : above 2000 of them were killed in divers Places,
 Massacres, popular Tumults, and other wicked ways;
 nothing seemed more cruel than what the People
 at *Ligny in Barrois*, where a *Hugonot* upon a Holy day
 ng refused to comply with some paltry Ceremony;
 haled out of his House by the Mob before the
 gistrate, and burnt upon a Pile of Wood, which
 fetched from his own Dwelling.

he Prince of *Conde* was then at *Noyers in Burgun- Designs to*
 whither the Queen sent those Forces designed for surprize
 siege of *Rochel*, to take him by Force, since they *Conde*:
 d not catch him by Craft; and at the same time
 endeavoured all they could to unlink the Party,
 th the Prince on the contrary struggled to keep to-
 er: However he sent *Teligny*, and then *de Rohan* his
 e's Mother, to intreat the Queen to maintain the
 e and the Edicts, which signified nothing; nay,
 ly had his Mother-in-law left the Court, where
 villier Bishop of *Orleans* was now made Chancel-
 and the Pacifick *l' Hospitall* turned out, but he
 News that some Forces by secret Orders were
 in about *Noyers* to surround him, and that if he
 four or five days longer, he would have no way
 scape. *Celine* penetrating into the Designs that

The Reign of Charles IX. Book VIII

from Dauphine, marched into France: *Anmale* followed them for a time in the Rear, but having passed the *Saone* at *Monter*, he left them that he might wait their Passage over the *Loire*, where he was to join *Anjou* who lay at *Gen*; but *Deux-Ponts* passed it near *Pouilly*, and took *La Charite*; the Admiral advanced to meet him, while *Anjou* marched to *Limoges*, and placed Guards upon all the Passages of *Vienne*; but the Forlorn of *Deux-Ponts* marched over the Bellies of them. *Deux-Ponts* not long after died near *Limoges*, and by his Will left the Command of his Forces to *Volrad Mansfield*, who presently after joined with the Admiral. A very sharp skirmish passed between them and the Enemy, besides which there hapned nothing remarkable but the Sieges of *Nort* and *La Charite*, neither of which could be taken by the Royalists; however *Teligny* seized *Chastelrand*.

In the mean time *Montgomery* was sent into *Beau*, which he recovered from the Queen of *Navarre*; then having drawn some Troops together in *Languedoc*, he surprized *Tarbes* in *Bigorre*, and frightned *Terride* from the Siege of *Navarrins*; upon which he besieged him in *Orrez*, and took it. On the other hand, *Montluc*, that he might not be idle, having borrowed some Forces of *Darville*, in conjunction with the Men raised by *LaVallette*, forced the City of *Mont de Marsan*, and put all the Garison in the Castle to the Sword. Again, when the *Hugonots* had taken *Luzignan*, *St. Maxian* and *Mireham*, the Admiral had thoughts of seizing *Saumur*, but he unluckily altered his Design, and besieged *Poitiers*; but the Place was so gallantly defended by the young Duke of *Guise*, that the Admiral took the Pretence of *Chastelrand's* being besieged by *Montluc*, as a fair occasion to leave it, and go and relieve the other; which when he had well effected, he endeavoured to attack the Enemies Army on the other side of the *Creuse*, but they were so well incamped that he did not think it proper to fall upon them.

Both Armies soon after decamped, and the Admiral having posted his Troops between the River *Dise* and *La Thoue*, the Duke of *Anjou* incamped over against him. It's remarkable, that the Ground on which the *Romanists* were, was called *Champ Papau*, and

Admiral
besieges
Poitiers
in vain.

The Battel
of Mon-
contour.

and the other of the *Hugonots* *Champ Piedgris*. The Battel began at 8 in the Morning, and lasted two Hours, when the *Romanists* at last prevailed, and gained a compleat Victory: The *Hugonots* losing here 300 Horse, besides 4000 German Foot, and 5000 of their French Infantry, all their Cannon, and most of their Baggage; *La Noue* and *Dacier* were taken Prisoners. The other side lost but a very few Men; however the Admiral's German Horse under the Counts of *Nassau* and *Mansfield* retreating in excellent order, stopt the Pursuit, and got to *Parthenay*, from whence they marched next day to *Niort*.

Now the brave Admiral, tho' condemned to Death by the Parliament of *Paris*, by whom there was a great Reward set to bring him in dead or alive, bore up gallantly under his adverse Fortune; and the very same Night the Battel was lost, having held a Council with his Officers, he sent to the Princes of *Germany*, Queen of *England*, and the *Swiss*, to give them an Account of what had passed, and crave their Assistance, and then retired towards *Niort*. However the King's Affairs did not wholly proceed as they had projected; *Lusignan* was indeed surrendered upon Articles, *Parthenay* abandoned, and *Niort* also not long after; from whence the Admiral was gone to the Countries of *Aunis* and *Gascoign*: While on the other hand the Protestant Forces commanded all the Roads of *Languedoc*.

wife more tired than they of this two Months Siege and having lost one way or another above ten thousand Men, they renewed the Treaty, by which they were to march out with all Ensigns of Honour; as there were no more remaining of this brave Garsie than 800 Foot and 100 Horse, who were basely plundered by the Duke of Aumale's Forces: Upon which Piles who had promised in the Capitulation to bear Arms against the King in four Months time put himself into Angoulesme, which was all the garrisons had left in Poictou and Angoulesme besides La Rochel.

The Admiral in the mean time did all he could recruit himself, and having received fresh Reinforcements from Germany under the Prince of Orange towards the end of November they made themselves Masters of the Passage over the Garonne by taking Aiguillon; but Montluc broke their Design of going upon Guyenne, by breaking their Bridge at Aiguillon, yet having made a new one, and being joined by garrisons from Gascon and Bearn, they went up the Garonne, and incamped in the Neighbourhood of Montluc, and committed great Devastations by the Sword. From thence they marched farther into the Guedoc, drew near the foot of the Pyrenees, and re-inforced from time to time repassed the Andorre, they staid till the end of January, and then they marched and laid Siege to Lunel, but being driven from thence, they took up both Money and Reinforcements at Nismes, then marched to Aubenai, passing under the favour of a Flood, by Montbrun on the opposite Shoar; then along that River, they attacked Montelimar, but surprized St. Stephen in the Country of Languedoc. Here the Admiral after his Recovery from a distemper seized St. Rambert upon the Loire; and re-inforced with some Horse and Foot from La Rochelle they marched into Burgundy, alarmed Chaalons surprized Arnay le Duc, by a long March they spent one day for that purpose. The King's Council never have believed they would have marched through many Countries, and do so much, and meet with little Interruption, and were surprized to find them

1570.

various
traverses
of War.

ly on their March for *Paris*: Wherefore the *De Cossé* had Orders to draw the King's together, and march to meet them; he passed at *Deffise*; and being satisfied of the Prince's being in a tattered Condition, he thought him beating them, but a great Skirmish that happened convinced him it was not so easily; therefore he let them go quietly towards

these times there were divers other Exploits in other Parts, but more particularly about here some of the King's Troops having been defeated, they were drove from thence by *La Mole*; he was soon after forced to take shelter in *Salliard* took all the Forts the *Hugonots* had, after the Surprizal of *Marans*; and built a *vauban*, which *La Noue* besieged, and so they a Battel, wherein the latter prevailed; and his Blow, took *Fontenay* upon Articles, re-
Oleron, *Mantennes*, *Soubize* and *Bronage*, was a Place of great Consequence; so that *Manists* in those Parts were forced to retire to *d'Angely*. But to stop the further Progress of the *Hugonots*, the Duke of *Montpefier's* Son was ordered into those Parts, tho the News of a Peace put to his Expedition,

Prince's Army still advancing towards *Paris*, Peace concluded. after many Negotiations a Peace was agreed to

not more tired than they of this two Months Siege, and having lost one way or another above ten thousand Men, they renewed the Treaty, by which they were to march out with all Ensigns of Honour; and there were no more remaining of this brave Garison than 800 Foot and 100 Horse, who were basely plundered by the Duke of *Aumale's* Forces: Upon which *Piles* who had promised in the Capitulation not to bear Arms against the King in four Months time, put himself into *Angoulesme*, which was all the *Hugonots* had left in *Poitou* and *Angoulesme* besides *Rochel*.

1570.

Various
Traverses
of War.

The Admiral in the mean time did all he could to recruit himself, and having received fresh Re-inforcements from *Germany* under the Prince of *Orange*, towards the end of *November* they made themselves Masters of the Passage over the *Garonne* by taking of *Aiguillon*; but *Montluc* broke their Design of seizing upon *Guyenne*, by breaking their Bridg at *Aiguillon*; yet having made a new one, and being joined by *Montgomery* from *Gascogn* and *Bearn*, they went up the *Garonne*, and incamped in the Neighbourhood of *Thoulouse*, and committed great Devastations by Fire and Sword. From thence they marched farther into *Languedoc*, drew near the foot of the *Pyrenees*, and being re-inforced from time to time repassed the *Aude*, where they staid till the end of *January*, and then they marched and laid Siege to *Lunel*, but being repulsed from thence, they took up both Money and Refreshments at *Nismes*, marched to *Aubenai*, passed the *Rhosne* by *Poussin*, under the favour of a Fort built by *Montbrun* on the opposite Shoar; then coasting along that River, they attacked *Montelimar* in vain, but surprized *St. Stephen* in the Country of *Fores*. Here the Admiral after his Recovery from a dangerous Fever seized *St. Rambert* upon the *Loire*; and being re-inforced with some Horse and Foot from *La Charite*, they marched into *Burgundy*, alarmed *Chaalons*, and surprized *Arnay le Duc*, by a long March they made in one day for that purpose. The King's Council could never have believed they would have marched thro so many Countries, and do so much, and meet with so little Interruption, and were surprized to find them so nigh,

and

Directly on their March for *Paris*: Wherefore the Marshal *De Cossé* had Orders to draw the King's arms together, and march to meet them; he passed *Loire* at *Dezise*, and being satisfied of the Prince's being in a tattered Condition, he thought him- self of beating them, but a great Skirmish that hap- pened near *Arnay* convinced him it was not so easily; and therefore he let them go quietly towards *Paris*.

During these times there were divers other Exploits performed in other Parts, but more particularly about *Normandy*, where some of the King's Troops having be- sieged *Rochfort*, they were drove from thence by *La Roche*, tho he was soon after forced to take shelter in *Caudebec*. *Galliard* took all the Forts the *Hugonots* had in *Normandy*, after the Surprizal of *Marans*; and built a Fort at *Lucon*, which *La Noue* besieged, and so they came to a Battel, wherein the latter prevailed; and winging his Blow, took *Fontenay* upon Articles, re- turned *Oleron*, *Mantennes*, *Soubize* and *Bronage*, the last was a Place of great Consequence; so that the *Romanists* in those Parts were forced to retire to *John d' Angely*. But to stop the further Progress of the *Hugonots*, the Duke of *Montpesier's* Son was ordered to go into those Parts, tho the News of a Peace had stop to his Expedition,

the Prince's Army still advancing towards *Paris*. Peace con-

Judges in these Causes : To remove all manner of Suspicion, Doubt or Jealousy, they should keep as Pledges for their own security, *Rochel, Montauban, Cognac, and La Charite*, upon condition the two Princes and 20 Gentlemen with them should jointly oblige themselves, and swear to give them up in the same condition at the end of two Years. It was likewise stipulated, that they should restore to the Prince of *Orange* and his Brother *Lodowick* the Principality of *Orange*, and all other Lands belonging to them in *France*, together with all their Titles and Writings that had been taken from them.

There were many Reasons to induce both Parties to make this Peace ; and the Queen besides other Motives might be inclined to it, that she might the better pursue her Pleasures and Gallantries, to which she was much inclined : Tho others will have her Designs herein to tend to the disarming of the *Hugonots*, that they might afterwards have been more easily ruined, which is very likely. She had had two excellent Lures to deceive the Queen of *Navarre* and the Admiral, and those were a War against the *Spaniards* in the *Netherlands*, and the Marriage of *Margaret* the King's Sister with *Henry* Prince of *Navarre*. The Duke of *Guise* had an extreme Passion for that Princess, at which the Cholerick King was so angry, that he commanded his Bastard Brother to kill him, which the Duke prevented as soon as he could by marrying *Catherine* of *Cleve*. It was high time also to get the King married, who was now in his 21st Year ; the Queen first attempted to get the Queen of *Scots*, his Brother's Widow, for him ; then *Elizabeth* Queen of *England* ; who after near two Years Negotiation having answered, *That the King was too Great and too Little*, i. e. too great a King to come and live in *England*, and too young for her who was 38 Years old ; she at last got him married to *Elizabeth* the Daughter of the Emperor *Maximilian II.* and the Nuptials were on the 26th of *November* celebrated at *Mezières*.

K. Charles
married.

The Queen Mother had an Alliance with *England* much in her Head, or at least feigned so, the better to blind the *Hugonots*, and hinder *Elizabeth* from giving them any Assistance ; wherefore she made a fresh overture

1571.

of Marriage between that Princess and her second the Duke of *Anjou*, and the matter at last proceeded so far as to treat about the Terms; and there but one thing they could not agree upon, which the Duke's having liberty to exercise his own Religion, at least in his Chamber, which put the Affair stand till the Massacre on St. *Bartholomew's* day, which broke the Treaty quite off.

to pass over many memorable things abroad, the War of *Cyprus*, the famous Battel of *Lepanto*, but to mention the great Frost that hapned from the end of *November* 1530, to the end of the *February* following: We are to shew that notwithstanding the pretence of Pacification, new occasions of Quarrel arose every day between the *Romanists* and the Reformed; and for colour of remedying the same, the King sent the Duke to *Rochel*, to confer with the Heads of the *Huguenots*, whose Deputies followed *De Crosse* to Court, received all seeming Satisfaction, tho at that time the King's Council were forming a most terrible Design of drawing them into a Trap: Nay the King, to give all colour of sincerity, interceded with the Duke to restore those Lands belonging to the Count of *Entremont*, which he had seized, because she was married the Admiral contrary to his Commands. Many Favours indeed startled the Admiral, so that

the Count *Ledemich* of *Nassau* to pry into the

Clergy tremble, and the People to cry out, The King was in the high Road to *Hugonotism*; and the *Guises* themselves, tho they had a Hand in the Design, apprehended lest the King should turn all this Dissimulation into a Storm, that might at last fall on their Heads, whom he did not much affect. There was now none but the Duke of *Anjou* whom the *Hugonots* were afraid of; and to remove all Jealousies, the Queen Mother began her Practises, to obtain the Crown of *Poland* for him, tho King *Sigismund* was not yet dead. This contented them all, insomuch that the Queen of *Navarre* herself went to Court to make up the Match for her Son: Pope *Pius* to prevent it put the King of *Portugal* upon demanding that Princess in Marriage: King *Charles* answered, *He was engaged elsewhere*; then excusing himself to the Pope's Legate with many fine Words added, *O that I might be permitted to explain my self further!*

1572.

Strange were the Amusements made use of in respect to the War in the *Low-Countries*, and other matters, the better to cover the damnable Conspiracy that was a hatching: The Prince of *Navarre's* Marriage was agreed to be at *Paris*, for which Pope *Gregory XIII.* now in the Chair, easily granted a Dispensation: However the assigned Day was put off under some Pretences, and the Admiral seemed unwilling to expose himself in *Paris*; but to try the last bait, Count *Lodowick* had a good Sum of Money given him, and *La Nove* and *Genlis*, two Officers in great Credit with the Admiral, were joined to him, that they might try to secure some Places in the *Netherlands*. In short *Lodowick* surprized *Mons, La Nove Valenciennes*, whilst many other Places in *Holland* and *Zealand* stood up for the Prince of *Orange*; so that the Admiral now believing the War, which he so much desired, certain, he went to *Paris*, and his Example drew all the other Lords of that Party to Court, the Princes of *Navarre* and *Conde* were highly caressed. The *Rochellers* did all they could to perswade the Admiral to withdraw, which by no means he could be brought to: But the *Marschal Montmorancy* more clear-sighted than he, feigning himself out of order with his Voyage from *England*, got leave to retire to *Chamilly*. The King

Lavarre was married on the 18th of *August*: But
 at all the Feasts and Rejoicings upon this occasion, *Consults*
 Heads were at work how to execute their bloody *about the*
 'acre: The Persons concerned were the King, *Massacre.*
 his Mother, Duke of *Anjou*, *Rais* and *Briagne*.
 He thought the first Resolution was taken at the In-
 ne of the Duke of *Guise* at *Blois*, in that very Cham-
 where he himself was massacred: And that
 difficulties afterwards arising, another Coun-
 was held at *St. Cloud*, where the Duke of *Anjou*
 ded, and was afterwards murdered himself in the
 place, and as some affirm upon the very same

What different ends soever the Queen Mother, and
 King had in this barbarous Design, *Morevel* who
 re had assassinated the Lord of *Mont* was employ'd
 take away with the brave Admiral; and therefore
 he 22^d of *August*, as he was going home from the *Admiral*
 ure on foot, and walking slowly, because he was *assassina-*
 ing some Papers, he shot him with a Blunderbus, *ted.*
 he one of his Right Hand Fingers, and wounded
 grievously in the Arm. The King was then play-
 ing Tennis with the Duke of *Guise*, which he left
 in a great Rage when he heard of the Adventure.
 Admiral shewed no great Concern at it, no body
 to Arms; only the King of *Navarre* and the

Paris still horrid enough: It's computed t
Massacre. 5000 Persons of all sorts perished,
them by more, as I may say, than one
Age nor Sex, nor even Women with
ed: 7 or 800 Persons thrust themselve
as thinking to be protected under the V
but they were quickly haled out mo
the Vally of Misery, and had their
out with a Pole-Ax. A Butcher boasted
self on the Tuesday, that he had dispat
the Night before; and another shewin
he had killed 400 for his share. A
nent Persons perished by these Barbar
'tis strangely remarkable, that of
Men there was none died with his Sw
but *Gueneba*: and of 6 or 700 *Honf*

into *Normandy*. Those that were lodged in the
 were it self were not spared, but being hunted out of
 Chambers, their Throats were cut one after ano-
 , and their Bodies exposed naked at the Gate ; and
 Queen Mother being at a Window, feasted her
 Eyes with that horrible Spectacle ; yea, divers
 the *Romanists* themselves were sacrificed upon this
 sion, either for their Money, or for some Revenge
 ther.

When the Admiral was slain, they threw his Body *King's De-*
 the Court, and the Duke of *Guise* wiped the *meanor af-*
 off his Face to know if it were he ; after which *ter the*
 Head was cut off, and his Body hung up by the Feet *Massacre.*
 he Common Gallows. But to say no more of this
 barous Massacre, the King and Queen's Cabinet
 uncil had at first resolved to throw the *Odium* of
 upon the *Guises*, and the King writ Letters to the
 vinces, commanding the Governors to assure the
 ple, he would not break the Edict of Pacification ;
 in one of them he expresly said, *He was joined*
to the King of Navarre, and the Prince of Conde, to
venge the Death of the Admiral his Cousin ; but find-
 this would not do, he changed his Note and sent
 ord every where, that what had been done was by
 Order, to prevent the effects of that detestable
 conspiracy the Admiral and his Friends had plotted to

the Prince of Orange for the Conquest
Lands, endeavoured to soothe Queen
began a third time to propose a Match
and the Duke of *Alençon*, which came to

I shall but just mention in this Place,
mena that appeared in the Heavens, w
be a Star fixed to one certain Place, in
Lozenge; and that as soon as it began to
Disease brake out in *France* which wa
since at every tenth Year it still doubl
causing most horrible Contorsions and
every Joint, till 1606. when it began to
called the bilious Evil or Cholick of *Poi*
reigned chiefly in that Country. Wheref

*Cholick of
Poistou.*

*Civil Wars
renewed.*

1672.

the King's three Armies did little: *La*
no means take *Sancerre*; *Danville* cou
nothing. but ruin his Army before *Sons*

ockade, and during that time sustained 25000 *Siege of*
 n-shot, nine Grand Assaults, besides others, *Rochel.*
 Mines, and frequent Conspiracies. But the
 People in defence of their Religion and Liberty,
 every Women did all that was gallant and
 to save the Place; their Courage failed them
 to the Assistance from *England*, which *Montgo-*
me as to have brought, appeared to be but very
 , and with them he could not get into the Har-
 because of the King's Ships that obstructed him.
 all the Siege the People enjoyed a perfect
 they having established a very good Order for
 tribution of their Provisions, so that they had
 for two Months longer, when the Place was re-
 nay, the very Sea shewing it self charitable
 mpassionate towards the good Town of *Rochel*,
 upon the Coast vast Quantities of Shell-Fish,
 Subsistence of the Poor. Whereas the bloody
 rs lay under all manner of Inconveniences, and
 ere such Divisions amongst them, that like *Cad-*
 Soldiers, they were like to cut one another's
 s: There were three sorts of them, *viz.* the
 nents, who were dissatisfied with the Queen's *Divisions*
 ment; the *Faithful*, who were *Hugonots*, who in the *Ar-*
 d the ruin of their Families, had followed *Mon-*
 my.
 and the *New Ones*, whom the fear of being
 ed had forced to go to *Mass*: Out of these
 a Club arose, called the *Politiques*, who

Sancerre, whose Surrendry was hourly expected. the Edict of Pacification was more restrictive than former, and allowed only Liberty of Conscience, no publick Worship, except to *Rochel*, *Nismes*, *Montauban*; they might have obtained the same at *Sancerre*, where they made such obstinate resistance, and were reduced to that Extremity, that they not only fed upon the most unclean Creatures, but even Parents were surprized feeding upon their own Children that had been starved to Death. At length *Polish* Ambassadors articted for them, and so they were delivered. The King lost at the famous Siege of *Rochel* 12000 men, and among them the Duke of *Angoulême*. But to say no more of this Siege, the Duke of *Angoulême* returning from hence to *Paris*, was there received by the King of *Poland* in a publick Entry; but it was thought an ill Omen, that his Heralds mistook their blazon for the Arms of his new Kingdom.

The King, now impatient to be rid of his Brother, would reign alone; yet the other was as backward to be gone, not from any reasons of State, but that he had to the Princess of *Conde*, tho he could not obtain his Ends. Wherefore the King attributing the King of *Poland's* Delay to the Queen, told her an Oath, That one of the two must leave the Kingdom; and one Day he caused his Closet-Door to be run shut against her. At last the King would conduct his Brother to the Frontiers, but was forced to stop at *Vitry*; for a few Days after he had menaced his Brother, he was seized with a lingering but malignant fever, which made him very giddy and sick at Heart most every Moment. In the mean while the Queen parting with her Son the King of *Poland*, imprudently let fall these Words: Farewel, my Son, you will not stay here long; which being overheard and divulged, made People think only of the King's illness. King *Henry* was magnificently entertained by the Princes of *Germany* where he came; only *Fredrick* Count *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and the gravest Person of his time, being desirous to make the young King and his bloody Council know the Injustice of Massacres, received him not very obligingly, but with the Satisfaction to put him into some Apprehensions of a most terrible Revenge.

The King
sick.

there was some likelihood, that *Anjou's* Departure
 ld contribute much towards calming the Affairs of
 ce, but it did not prove so; for the Protestants
 uraged in their Assemblies of *Milland*, *Montau*
 and *Nismes*, made greater Demands than before,
 e *Alençon* and the *Politiques* thought it was their
 to govern all. Therefore the Duke forged with
 elf to undertake the Lieutenantcy of the War
 e *Low-Countries* against the *Spaniards*, and the
 would have been glad of it; and he also would
 re the general Lieutenantcy as the Duke of *Anjou*
 it: *Montemercy* would have him stick to the last,
 brought the King to grant it him; but the Queen,
 expected no good to herself from this Son, desi-
 hat Office might be conferred upon the Duke of
 in, who had married her fondling Daughter, and
 it prevailed in it. In the mean time, *Alençon* had
 racted a most particular Union with the *Hugonots*,
 promised to take them under his Protection, into
 h League were entred the King of *Navarre*, *Conde*
 the *Politique* Romanists. *Toré* and *Turenne* ma-
 d the Intrigues, and they altogether demanded an
 nblv of the States: The Queen to amuse 'em assign-
 Assembly of Notables at *Compeign*, to deliberate
 her it would be convenient to call 'em; but when
 saw they could not make their Party strong enough
 out, they resolved to retire to *Sedan*, where the

1574.

Assembly of
Notables.

disappointed, *Mantignon*, *Montpelier*, and the Prince *Ducfin* his Son, marched each with an Army against them : *Mantignon* besieged and took *Montgomery* in *Donfront*, which hapned four or five Days before the King's Death ; from whence he returned to the Siege of *St. Lo*, where the brave *Coulombiers* died valiantly upon the Breach with his Sword in hand, for the defence, as he himself exprest it, of the Gospel, but his two young Sons were saved. After which *Guitry* gave up *Carenton* : As to *Languedoc*, *Damville*, whom the Queen-Mother was more intent to destroy than the *Hugonots*, seized upon *Montpelier*, *Lunel*, *Beaucair* and *Perzenas*.

The King's Distemper that lay asleep in the Winter, awakened in the Spring, and the Queen-Mother was never wanting to seize all that might disturb her Regency ; she cut off *la Mole* and *Cocenas*, as if they intended to bewitch the King ; another was broke upon the Wheel, and *Rugier* sent to the Gallies : *Montmerancy* and *Coffe*, tho' highly accused by these upon the Rack, upon a Presumption of their own Innocency, repaired to Court, for which they were committed to the *Bastile* ; there was also an Order given to seize *Conde* at *Amiens*, but he made his Escape to *Strasbourg*, and openly abjured Popery.

On the other hand, the King after the Siege of *Rochel*, was very desirous to ease the People of their Taxes, and actually discharged some of 'em ; he would have made many other Regulations, but all signified little, he consumed by a slow Fire, and visibly wasted away every Moment ; so that he was forced on the 8th of *May* to take his Bed at *Bois de Vincennes*, when the Queen-Mother laboured to have the Regency, and so effectually managed her Business, that the Parliament and Magistrates of *Paris* sent their Deputies to intreat her to accept of it. In the mean while, Nature struggled with the King, so as that Blood issued out of every Pore and Channel of his Body ; and at last he died on the 13th of the said Month, when he had lived 25 Years, wanting 31 Days, and reigned 13 and a half within five Days. He was of a goodly Stature, only stooped a little, and carried his Head somewhat awry ; he had a piercing look, was high-nosed, pale and

*K. Charles
his Death.*

His Character.

vid, black Hair; somewhat long-necked, round
d, his whole Body well shaped, only his Legs
of the biggest. He valued himself upon his Dis-
tation, and Skill in Physiognomies : His Courage
great, Spirit lively and clear sighted, penetrative
ible; his Memory ready, he had an incredible Acti-
and a happy and energetic Expression. He had
ed the base Custom of Swearing, and to taunt
approve the Great Ones : He was by custom made
ve with Hunting, Music and Poetry ; and his
rnors endeavoured to allure him to Wine and
en. He made Poems that were well enough for
times ; and he composed a Book of Hunting or
ry, which he dictated to *Villeroy*. To pass over
uxury, Impiety, and magical Abominations that
phed in his Reign, Disorders, Treacheries, Poi-
gs and Assassinations were so common, that it be-
a sport to take away a Man's Life; nay, this
e himself authorized the foulest Act, I mean the
ian Massacre, that ever was perpetrated in any
or Country, and will remain an Eternal Mark of
ny upon his Reign and Memory.
ie wantonness of the Female Sex was now also
n to a great height. But to dwell no more upon
things ; *Charles* left no Children by his Queen,
Isabell of *Austria* ; but he had a natural Son by
Jean Touchet, born in 1572. that bore his own Name,

went with so serene a Countenance and Tranquillity of Mind, as deserved much Commendation.

This done, the Queen would willingly have destroyed the *Hugonots* in the Kingdom; but not daring to attack them towards *Poitou* or *Guyenne*, she concluded a Truce with them for *July* and *Aug.* and during that time they had leave to hold a General Assembly of the Provinces of *Guyenne*, *Dauphine* and *Languedoc*, at *Milland*, to consult of some Expedients for the treating of a General Peace. *Gramont*, who had been sent to *Bearn* to reduce it to the Popish Religion, was surprized there by the young Baron of *Arcois* in the boldest manner that can be imagined; for at the Instigation of his blind and aged Father, he entred the Castle with some resolute Fellows, and when he saw his Opportunity, fell on, and quickly dispersed the amazed Crowd, and carried *Gramont* off Prisoner. The Prince Dauphin met with but indifferent Success in *Dauphine*; and two Manifesto's coming out at this time, one from *Danville* who resolved, to defend himself against the Queen, to fall in with the *Hugonots*; and another from *Conde* at *Heidelberg*, where he was getting some Troops for their Support; they were mightily encouraged, and at *Milland* chose him for their General. On the other hand, *Montpesier* had like to have overwhelmed the *Rockellers*; for having taken, besides many other small Places, *Fontenay*, it surprized them to a high degree: But in other Provinces they made a better Defence; they surprized *Castres*, bravely defended *Clairac* and *Monflanquin*, and increased in Courage, as the Divisions of *Cosse* and *La Valette* did weaken the Romanists, between whom the Queen had shared the Government.

In the mean time, the King of *Poland* having set all things in order, secretly stole away in the Night between the 18th and 19th of *June*, at which the *Poles* were outrageous. He was magnificently entertained at *Vienna* by the Emperor, who advised him to let Peace enter with him into his Dominions, whereby the horrid Ideas of the Massacres that had been perpetrated, would be obliterated: He was conducted to the Frontiers of *Friuli*, by the Emperor's Sons *Rodolph* and *Ernest*, he not caring to go by the way of the *Electoral Palatine*

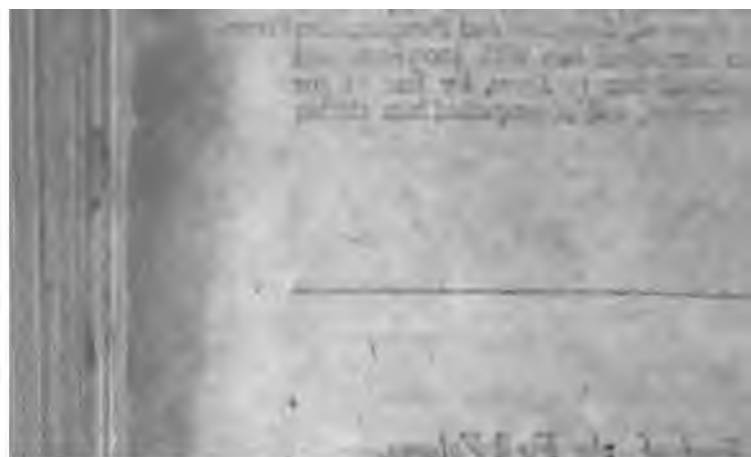
K. Henry
all steals
away from
Poland.

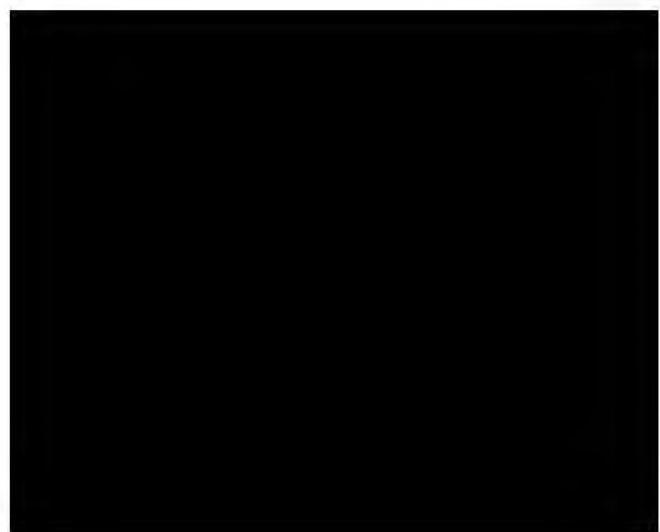
time, and bear the reproaching Sights of the other
 instant Princes. The *Venetians* entertained him
 all the Respect and Grandeur imaginable; he
 nine Days in their City, and was accompanied
 y where by the Dukes of *Savoy*, *Ferrara* and *Man-*
 who came thither to honour him; the Senate de-
 ed his Charge, he went to see their Method of Bal-
 ng; he was placed above the Duke, and perfor-
 all Acts of Sovereignty: Then he saw the Arse-
 but the Ladies with more Pleasure, of whom
 was so prodigal of her Favours to him, that he re-
 ed of it as long as he lived. From hence he went
 he way of *Ferrara* and *Mantua* to *Turin*; where
 ad the same Advice given him by his Aunt the
 thefs *Margaret*, as the Emperor had done; and
 ville was received into his Favour: But the Queen
 her quickly broke his Measures, and he had been
 d at *Turin*, had not the Dutchess sent him away
 nes to *Nice*, from whence he was carried by Sea
 anguedoc. However the Duke and the Dutchess
 socarels and influence the King, that he promised *Arrives in*
 ve them up *Pignerol*, *Savigliani* and *Perugia*; after *France*.
 ch the Duke furnished him with 4000 Foot, and
 5 Horse to attend him to *Lyons*, for fear of the
 onots of *Dauphine*, and accompanied him thither
 erson.

1870

1871

1872





The first of these is the fact that the
 government has been unable to
 maintain a stable currency. This
 has led to a loss of confidence
 in the government and a
 consequent loss of support
 from the people. The second
 is the fact that the government
 has been unable to maintain
 a stable economy. This has
 led to a loss of confidence
 in the government and a
 consequent loss of support
 from the people. The third
 is the fact that the government
 has been unable to maintain
 a stable society. This has
 led to a loss of confidence
 in the government and a
 consequent loss of support
 from the people.